H
615

von Halder
N. 3396

Stadtbibliothek
Augsburg

A NEW COLLECTION OF SELECT PIECES IN ENGLISH PROSE.

Vermiſchte
Auffätze
in
engliſcher Proſe
hauptſächlich zum Beſten derer
welche dieſe Sprache
in
Rückſicht auf bürgerliche Geſchäfte
lernen wollen,

EIGENTHUM DER STADT AUGSBURG

geſamlet
von
C. D. Ebeling
Profeſſor am Gymnaſium und Mitvorſteher der Handlungs-Akademie in Hamburg.

Fünfte verbeſſerte Auflage.

Hamburg
bei den Gebrüdern Herold.
1789.

Vorrede.

Die erste Veranlassung, gegenwärtige Samlung drucken zu lassen, gab mir unsre Handlungsakademie. Ich hatte schon lange bemerkt, daſs es an einem Buche fehle, woraus man das Englische zum Gebrauche des gemeinen Lebens, zum Sprechen und zu bürgerlichen Geschäften lernen könte; sonderlich war für Kaufleute in diesem Stücke gar nicht gesorgt worden. Tomsons *Miscellanies*, Schulzens *Originals*, u. a. musten bei dem Unterrichte gebraucht werden, und ob sie gleich einige schöne Auffätze enthielten, so waren doch die meisten für Ungelehrte gar nicht brauchbar, sonderlich Tomsons Samlung. Wer wird aus Abhandlungen von alten Münzen, aus metaphysischen Auffätzen, aus Predigten, wären sie auch von dem gröſsten

Kan-

Kanzelredner, u. ſ. w. mit Vergnügen eine Sprache lernen? Und welche Sprache lernt man auch am Ende daraus? Nicht die des Umgangs, nicht die der Geſchäfte, ſondern die redneriſche, gelehrte Bücherſprache.

Meine Abſicht iſt alſo, eine gemeinnützigere Samlung zu liefern. Die Stücke, welche ich gewählt habe, ſind theils beluſtigend, theils ernſthaft. Jene ſollen das Beſchwerliche und Unangenehme, welches bei Erlernung einer Sprache iſt, erleichtern und verſüſſen; dieſe aber den Lehrling, deſſen Neugierde ſie reizen können, näher zu Geſchäften, vornehmlich der Handlung, führen. Die Fabeln, witzigen Einfälle, Todtengeſpräche, die Auſſätze aus dem Grandiſon, Tom Jones, Triſtram Shandy, aus Klinkers und Gullivers Reiſen, und vornehmlich die Scenen aus neuen Luſtſpielen, mögen zum Engliſch-Sprechen Anlaſs geben; zum Theil können ſie auch, nebſt den eingerückten Briefen von POPEN, u. a. den Briefſtil bilden helfen. In Anſehung der leztern hätte ich gewünſcht, eigentliche

liche Geſchäfts- und ſonderlich Handlungsbriefe, die Muſter dieſer Schreibart wären, liefern zu können: aber ſo gut iſts mir nicht geworden, dergleichen zu finden; denn ich muſs geſtehen, Popens Briefe, ſo viel ich auch daraus weggelaſſen habe, ſind nicht allerdings leicht uud natürlich genug geſchrieben. *) Die übrigen Aufſätze über England, deſſen Kolonien und Handel, können eine gute Vorbereitung zur Leſung der vielen vortreflichen Werke ſeyn, welche über dieſe Materien in engliſcher Sprache geſchrieben ſind.

Wer ſchon zu einer ernſthaften Lektur gewohnt iſt, dem preiſe ich folgende Samlungen an: The moral Miſcellany, welche zu Leipzig 1764. 8. nachgedruckt iſt; und noch mehr The Beauties of the Engliſh Proſe. London 1772. 4 Octav-Bände. Hat man dann noch

*) Lord Cheſterfields Briefe an ſeinen Sohn, (Letters written by the late Earl of Cheſterfield to his Son. Lond. 1774. 4 Vol. 8.) waren noch nicht heraus, als die erſte Ausgabe dieſes Buchs erſchien, ſonſt würde ich gewiſs davon Gebrauch gemacht haben.

noch RICHARDSONS und FIELDINGS Romane, STERNENS in Altenburg ſchön nachgedruckte Werke, den ADVENTURER, CONNOISSEVR, RAMBLER, SPECTATOR, die WORLD und dergleichen geleſen, und will zur Poeſie übergehen, ſo kann der zweite Theil von Tomſons Miſcellanies ſo lange zur Vorbereitung dienen, bis man eine mannigfaltigere, beſſere Samlung hat. *) Die engliſchen Dichter, die man leſen ſoll, brauche ich nicht zu nennen: Wer kent nicht GAY, DRYDEN, PRIOR, POPE, THOMSON, GLOVER, YOUNG, MILTON, SHA-

KE-

*) Dieſe hat man jezt an *O. Goldſmith's* Beauties of the engliſh Poeſy collected. Lond. 1767. 2 B. 8v.; des ſel. *Duſch* Students Miſcellany, Flensburg 1779. 2 Vol. gr. 8.; den Claſſical Extracts or uſeful and entertaining Pieces of poetry. Lond. 1788. gr. 8.; an *J. Retzers* Choice of the beſt poetical pieces. Vienna 1784. ff. 6 B. 8. nebſt der Samlung des H. Bibliothekar *Benzlers* Poetical Library. Leipzig, 1788. 2 B. 8.

Andre klaſſiſche Schriften, hiſtoriſchen und philoſophiſchen Inhalts, von Robertſon, Gibbon, Ferguſon u. a. m. liefert jezt *Thurneiſen* in Baſel, in ſchönen wohlfeilen und richtigen Ausgaben.

KESPEARE, BUTTLER, DODSLEYS SAMLUNG, u. ſ. w.

Auf die Korrektur des Drucks iſt aller mögliche Fleiſs von mir und andern gewandt worden. Die Orthographie eines jeden Schriftſtellers habe ich unverändert beibehalten. Das Verzeichniſs der ſchwereſten Wörter hätte ich, in Betracht, daſs unſre engliſchen Wörterbücher alle ſo fehlerhaft und oft undeutſch, und daſs viele engliſche Sprachmeiſter ſo wenig ihres Deutſchen mächtig ſind, gerne weitläuftiger gemacht; aber ich habe keine Zeit gewinnen können, ein übriges zu thun. *)

Die-

*) Jezt iſt dem Mangel durch das engliſch-deutſche Wörterbuch, (1 Th. Leipz. 1783. gr. 8.) welches H. Adelung herausgegeben hat, einigermaſsen abgeholfen. Es fehlen darin aber nur allzuviele techniſche und kaufmänniſche Wörter, ſo wie nicht wenige Ausdrücke und Redensarten der neuern Umgangsſprache; auch iſt der 2te Band noch nicht heraus.

Dieſe fünfte Auflage iſt durch die gütige Aufnahme dieſer Samlung früher, als ich hoffen konte, veranlaſst worden. Ich habe die eingeſchlichenen Druckfehler verbeſſert, und in dem angehängten Wörterverzeichniſse einiges berichtiget. Die Aufſätze ſelbſt habe ich nicht verändern dürfen, weil dies Buch das Glück hat, in Schulen gebraucht zu werden.

IN-

INHALT.

1) Fables. S. 1
2) Jeſts and bons mots. 7
3) An Abridgement of *Anderſon's* Commercial-Geography of Great-Britain and Ireland. 17
4) *Lord Littleton's* Dialogues of the Death. 33
5) *Baretti's* Account of the preſent King of Spain. 53
6) Narrative of the Death of Calas. 59
7) *Anſon's* Voyage to Aſia. 67
8) *Richardſon's* Account of Sir Charles Grandiſon's reſecuing Miſs Byron. 73
9) *Voltaire's* Account of a tragical Incident in France. 126
10) *Buffon's* Deſcription of a Dwarf. 127
11) *Hutchinſon's* Remarks on the preſent ſtate of the Trade of Maſſachuſefsbay &c. 129
12) *Shaw's* Account of Algier. 135
13) Account of the Death of Patkul. 142
14) *Sterne's* Story of le Fever. 149
15) *Robertſon's* Account of the Cardinal Ximenes. 157
16) Account of the Battle of Pavia by *the ſame.* 159
17) Character of the Emperor Charles V. by *the ſame.* 163
18) *Smollet's* Satirical Deſcription of London and Bath. 165
19) View of the Climate, Trade and Soil of Barbados. 172

20) The

20) The Brothers a Comedy. 174
21) *Hawkesworth's* new Memorandum-Book for Ladies. 181
22) Character of a Gamester *by the same.* 185
23) *Bancroft's* Description of Berbice, Demerary and Essequebo. 189
24) Lettres by *Pope*, *Steele*, *Addison*, Lord *Littleton* and others. 199
25) Description of some Quadrupeds by *Bancroft* and *Brockes.* 217
26) Some Chapters out of *Fielding's* History of Tom Jones. 226
27) Observations on the present State of the East-India Company. 236
28) *Lady Montague's* Description of Adrianople and Constantinople. 242
29) Description of Jamaica. 249
30) Scenes out of *Colman's* Comedy of the jealous Wife. 255
31) *Hume's* History of the invincible Armada. 261
32. 33) *Gulliver's* Voyage to Liliput and Brobdignac. 271
34) *Anderson's* account of England's Trade and Colonies. 282
35) Scenes out of *Colman's* Comedy of the English Merchant. 305

FABLES. *)

A COCK and a PRECIOUS STONE.

As a Cock was ſcratching upon a Dunghill, he turned up a precious Stone. Well, ſays he, this ſparkling Foolery to a Jeweler would have been ſomething; but to me, a Barley-Corn is worth an hundred Diamonds.

MORAL.

A wiſe Man will always prefer Things neceſſary before Matters of Curioſity, Ornament, or Pleaſure.

A FROG, MOUSE, and KITE.

There happened once a terrible Quarrel betwixt the Frogs and the Mice, about the Sovereignty of the Fens; and whilſt two of their Champions were diſputing it with their utmoſt Might, down comes a Kite powdering upon them, and gobbles up both together.

A LION, BEAR, and FOX.

A Lion and Bear had ſo long fought over a Fawn which they killed, that they were glad to lie down and take Breath. In which Inſtant, a Fox paſſed that Way; and finding how the Caſe ſtood with the two Combattants, he ſeized upon the dead Fawn, and ſcampered quite away with him. The Lion and the Bear, not being in Condition to riſe

*) Aeſop's Fables, with inſtructive Morals and Reflexions. By Mr. Richardſon. Lond. 8. with cuts.

riſe and hinder it, paſs'd this Reflection upon the Matter: Here we have been worrying one another who ſhould have the Booty, till this treacherous Fox has bobb'd us both.

MORAL of the two Fables.

When Fools go together by the Ears, Knaves generally run away with the Stakes.

A WOLF and a CRANE.

A Wolf had got a Bone in his Throat, and promiſed a Crane a very conſiderable Reward to help him out with it. The Crane did him the good Office, and then claim'd his promiſe. Why, how now, Impudence! ſays the other, do you put your Head into the Mouth of a Wolf, and then, when you've brought it out again ſafe and ſound, do you talk of a Reward? Why, Sirrah, you have your Head again; and is not that a ſufficient Recompence?

MORAL.

He that has to do with wild Beaſts (as ſome Men are no better) and eſcapes with a whole Skin, let him think himſelf well off.

A LION and an ASS.

An Aſs was ſo hardy once, as to fall a mocking and braying at a Lion. The Lion began at firſt to ſhew his Teeth, and to ſtomach the Affront; but upon ſecond Thoughts, Well, ſays he, jeer on, and be an Aſs ſtill; take notice only by the way, that it is the Baſeneſs of your Character that has ſaved your Carcaſe.

MORAL.

It is below the Dignity of a great Mind to hold Conteſts with People that have neither Quality nor Courage; to ſay nothing of the Folly of contending with a miſerable Wretch, where the very Competition is a Scandal.

A LION and a MOUSE.

A generous Lion, having got into his Clutches a poor Mouſe, at her earneſt Supplication let her go. A few Days after, the Lion, being hampered in a Net, found the Benefit of his former Mercy; for this very Mouſe, in his Diſtreſs,

Diſtreſs, remembring the Favour done her, ſet herſelf to work upon the Couplings of the Net, gnawed the Threads to Pieces, and ſo delivered her Preſerver.

MORAL.

It holds through the whole Scale of the Creation, that the Great and Little have need of one another.

The KITE, HAWK, and PIGEONS.

The Pigeons, finding themſelves perſecuted by the Kite, made choice of the Hawk for their Guardian. The Hawk ſets up for their Protector; but, under the Countenance of that Authority, inſtead of carrying on a War with the Kite, makes more Havock in the Dovehouſe in two Days, than the Kite could have done in as many Months.

MORAL.

It is a dangerous thing for People to call in a powerful and ambitious Man for their Protector.

A DOG and a THIEF.

As a Gang of Thieves were at work to rob a Houſe, a Maſtiff took the Alarm, and fell a barking: One of the Company ſpoke him fair, and would have ſtopt his Mouth with a Cruſt. No, ſays the Dog, this will not do, for I'll take no Bribes to betray my Maſter; nor will I, for a Piece of Bread in Hand, forfeit the Eaſe, Satisfaction, and Liberty of my whole Life.

MORAL.

Fair Words, Preſents, and Flatteries, are always to be ſuſpected to cover a baſe and wicked Intent.

A MOUNTAIN in Labour.

A Rumour went that the Mountain was in Labour, and all the Neighbourhood got together to ſee what a monſtrous Iſſue ſo great a Mother would bring forth; when, behold! of a ſudden, out run a ridiculous Mouſe.

MORAL.

Nothing ſo much exposes Man to Ridicule, as when, by vain Bluſters, he raiſes the Expectation of all around him, and falls ſhort in his Performances.

An ASS, an APE, and a MOLE.

An Aſs and an Ape were conferring on Grievances. The Aſs complain'd mightily for want of Horns, and the Ape was as much troubled for want of a Tail. Hold your Tongues, both of ye, ſays the Mole and be thankful for what you have; for the poor blind Moles are in a worſe Condition than either of ye.

The HARES and the FROGS.

Once upon a Time the Hares found themſelves mightily unſatisfied with the miſerable Condition they lived in. Here we live, ſays one of them, at the Mercy of Men, Dogs, Eagles, and I know not how many other Creatures, which prey upon us at Pleaſure; perpetually in Frights, perpetually in Danger; and therefore I am abſolutely of Opinion, that we had better die, once for all, than live at this Rate in a continual Dread that's worſe than Death itſelf. The Motion was ſeconded and debated, and a Reſolution immediately taken, One and All, to drown themſelves. The Vote was no ſooner paſs'd, but away they ſcudded with that Determination to the next Lake. Upon this Hurry there leapt a whole Shoal of Frogs from the Bank into the Water, for fear of the Hares. Nay then, my Maſters, ſays one of the graveſt of the Company, pray let's have a little Patience. Our Condition, I find, is not altogether ſo bad as we fancy'd it; for there are thoſe, you ſee, that are as much afraid of us as we are of others.

Moral of the two Fables.

There is no contending with the Orders and Decrees of Providence. He that made us, knows what is fitteſt for us; and every Man's own Lot (well underſtood and managed) is undoubtedly the beſt.

A DAW and BORROW'D FEATHERS.

A Daw that had a Mind to be ſparkiſh, trick'd himſelf up with all the gay Feathers he could muſter together; and valued himſelf upon them above all the Birds in the Air. This got him the Envy of all his Companions, who, upon a Diſcovery of the Truth, fell to pluming of him by Conſent; and when every Bird had taken his own Feather, the ſilly Daw was reduced to his primitive State, and found a laſting Contempt added to his former Poverty.

MORAL.

Where Pride and Beggary meet, People are ſure to be made ridiculous in the Concluſion.

A FROG and an OX.

As a huge Ox was grazing in a Meadow, an old envious Frog that ſtood gaping at him hard by, called out to her little ones, to take Notice of the Bulk of that monſtrous Beaſt; and ſee, ſays ſhe, if I don't now make myſelf the bigger of the Two: So ſhe ſtrain'd once, and twice, and went ſtill ſwelling on, till in the Concluſion ſhe over-ſtrained herſelf, and burſt.

MORAL.

Weak Minds frequently fancy themſelves to be bigger or worthier than they are, and other People to be leſs or more unworthy; and the Conſequence of this wretched Pride is often fatal to the Poſſeſſors of it, or at leaſt ſerves to render them contemptible in the Eyes of thoſe, whoſe good Opinion they are fondeſt to engage.

The BELLY and MEMBERS.

The Hands and the Feet on a Time were in a deſperate Mutiny againſt the Belly. They knew no Reaſon, they ſaid, why the one ſhould pamper itſelf with the Fruit of the other's Labour; and if the Belly would not work for Company, they'd be no longer at the Charge of maintaining it. Upon this Mutiny, they kept the Body ſo long without Nouriſhment, that all the Parts ſuffer'd for it: inſomuch that the Hands and Feet came in the Concluſion to find their Miſtake, and would have been willing then to have done their Office; but it was now too late, for the Body was ſo pin'd with overfaſting, that it was wholly out of Condition to receive the Benefit of a Relief: and ſo they all periſh'd together.

MORAL.

The Publick is but one Body, and the Fable cautions the particular Members of it, how they withdraw themſelves from their Duties, till it ſhall be too late for their Superiors to make uſe of them for their mutual Advantage.

A LADEN ASS and a HORSE.

As an Horſe and an Aſs were upon the Way together, the Aſs cry'd out to his Companion to eaſe him of his Burden,

 though

though never ſo little; he ſhould fall down dead elſe. The Horſe would not; and ſo his Fellow Servant ſunk under his Load. The Maſter, upon this, had the Aſs flayed, and laid his whole Pack, Skin and all, upon the Horſe: Well ſays he, this Judgment is befallen me for my ill Nature, in refuſing to help my Brother in the Depth of his Diſtreſs.

MORAL.

It is a chriſtian, a natural, a reaſonable, and a political Duty, for all Members of the ſame Body to aſſiſt one another.

A COLLIER and FULLER.

A Fuller had a very kind Invitation from a Collier to come and live in the Houſe with him. He gave him a thouſand Thanks for his Civility, but told him, that it would not ſtand with his Convenience; for, ſays he, as faſt as I make any Thing clean, you'll be ſmutting it again.

MORAL.

It is a neceſſary Rule in Alliances, Matches, Societies, Fraternities, Friendſhips, Partnerſhips, Commerce, and all manner of civil Dealings and Contracts, to have a ſtrict Regard to the Humour, the Nature, and the Diſpoſition of thoſe we have to do withal.

A BOY and FALSE ALARMS.

A Sheperd's Boy had gotten a roguiſh Trick of crying, A Wolf! a Wolf! when there was no ſuch Matter, and fooling the Country-people with falſe Alarms. He had been at this Sport ſo many Times in Jeſt, that they would not believe him at laſt, when he was in Earneſt; and ſo the Wolves broke in upon the Flock, and worry'd the Sheep without Reſiſtance.

MORAL.

This Fable ſhews us the dangerous Conſequences of an improper and unſeaſonable Fooling. The old Moral obſerves, That a common Lyar ſhall not be believ'd, even when he ſpeaks true.

A SHEEP and a CROW.

A Crow ſat chattering upon the Back of a Sheep: Well? Sirrah, ſays the Sheep you durſt not have done this to a Dog.

a Dog. Why, I know that, ſays the Crow as well as you can tell me; for I can be as quiet as any body with thoſe that are quarrelſome; and I can be as troubleſome as another too, when I meet with thoſe that will take it.

MORAL.

It is the Nature and Practice of mean and low Spirits, to be inſolent towards thoſe that will bear it, and as ſlaviſh to others that are more than their Match.

A FOX and HUNTSMEN.

A Fox that was hard purſu'd, begg'd of a Countryman to help him to ſome Hiding-place. The Man directed him to his Cottage, and thither he went. The Huntsmen were preſently at his Heels, and aſked the Cottager, if he did not ſee a Fox that Way? No, truly, ſays he, I ſaw none; but pointed at the ſame time with his Finger to the Place where he lay. The Huntsmen did not take the Hint, it ſeems; but the Fox ſpy'd him, however, through a Peeping-Hole he had found out: So the Hunters went their Way, and then out ſteals the Fox, and departs without one Word ſpeaking. Why, how now, ſays the Man, han't you the Manners to thank me before you go? Yes, yes, ſays the Fox, if you had been as honeſt with your Fingers as you were with your Tongue, I ſhould not have gone without acknowledging the Favour.

MORAL.

A Man may tell a Lye by Signs, as well as in Words at Length; and his Conſcience in this Caſe is as anſwerable for his Fingers as for his Tongue.

A SWALLOW and a CROW.

A Crow diſputing with a Swallow for the prize of Beauty, ſaid, Yours, at beſt is only a Spring Beauty; mine laſts all the Year round.

MORAL.

A durable Good is infinitely to be preferred to a tranſitory one.

JESTS AND BON MOTS.

1. Upon the Death of the famous Moliere, a poet waiting with his epitaph upon the Prince of Condé, the Prince told him, *he should have been much better pleased, if Moliere had brought him his.*

2. A brave *Dutch* Captain being commanded by his Colonel to go on a dangerous Exploit against the *French*, with Forces that were unlikely to atchieve the Enterprize, the Captain advis'd his Colonel to send but half so many Men: Why so, said the Colonel, to send but half so many Men? *Because*, replied the Captain, *they are enough to be knock'd on the Head.*

3. The famous Mr. *Amner* going through a Street in *Windsor*, two Boys looked out of a One-Pair-of-Stairs Window, and cry'd: There goes Mr. *Amner* that makes so many Bulls. He hearing them, look'd up, saying, *You Rascals, I know you well enough, and if I had you here, I'd kick you down Stairs.*

4. A Fellow hearing the Drums beat up for Volunteers for *France*, in the Expedition against the *Dutch*, imagin'd himself valiant enough, and thereupon listed himself; returning again, he was ask'd by his Friends, What Exploits he had done there? He said? *That he had cut off one of the Enemy's Legs;* and being told that it had been more honourable and manly to have cut of his Head: *Oh*, said he, *you must know his Head was cut off before.*

5. A rich Farmer's Son, who had been bred at the University, coming home to visit his Father and Mother, they being one Night at Supper on a Couple of Fowls, he told them, that by *Logic* and *Arithmetic*, he could prove those two Fowls to be three. Well, let us hear, said the old Man. Why this, cry'd the Scholar, *is one*, and this, continued he, *is two, two and one, you know, make three. Since you have made it out so well*, answer'd the old Man, *your Mother shall have the First Fowl, I will have the Second, and the Third you may keep yourself for your great Learning.*

6. Somebody asked my Lord *Bacon* what he thought of Poets? *Why*, said he, *I think them the very best Writers next to those who write in Prose.*

7. A Gentleman, who had been a great Traveller, would oftentimes talk so extravagantly of the wonderful Things he had seen abroad, that a Friend of his took Notice to him of his exposing himself as he did to all Companies, and ask'd him

him the Meaning of it? Why ſays the Traveller, I have got ſuch a Habit of Lying ſince I have been abroad, that I really hardly know when I lie, and when I ſpeak Truth; and ſhould be very much oblig'd to you, if you would tread upon my Toe at any Time, when I am likely to give myſelf too much Liberty that Way. His Friend promis'd he would; and accordingly, not long after, being at a Tavern with him and other Company, when the Traveller was, amongſt other ſtrange Things, giving an Account of a Church he had ſeen in *Italy*, that was above two Miles long, he trod on his Toe, juſt as one of the Company had aſk'd, How broad that ſame Church might be? Oh, ſaid he, not above two Feet. Upon which, the Company burſting into a loud Laugh; *Zounds*, ſaid he, *if you had not trod upon my Toe, I ſhould have made it as* broad *as it was* long.

8. A Countryman ſowing his Ground, two ſmart Fellows riding that Way, one of them called to him with an inſolent Air: Well, honeſt Fellow, ſaid he, 'tis your Buſineſs to ſow, but we reap the Fruits of your Labour. To which the Countryman replied, '*Tis very likely you may, truly; for I am ſowing Hemp.*

9. A certain great Lord having, by his extravagancies, run himſelf over head and ears in debt, and ſeeming very little concerned about it, one of his friends told him one day, That he wondered how he could ſleep quietly in his bed, whilſt he was ſo much in debt. *For my part,* ſaid my lord, *I ſleep very well; but I wonder how my creditors can.*

10. King William III. being upon a march for ſome ſecret expedition, was intreated by a General to tell him what his deſign was: The King, inſtead of anſwering him, aſk'd him, whether, in caſe he ſhould tell him, he could keep it a ſecret, and would let it go no farther; the General promiſed, it ſhould not. *Well*, anſwered his Majeſty, *I know how to keep a ſecret as well as you.*

11. *Cato*, the Cenſor, being aſk'd, How it came to paſs, that he had no Statue erected for him, who had ſo well deſerved of the Common-wealth? I had rather, ſaid he, have this Queſtion aſk'd, than *Why I had one*?

12. King *Henry* VIII. deſigning to ſend a Nobleman on an Embaſſy to *Francis* I. at a very dangerous Juncture, he begg'd to be excus'd, ſaying ſuch a threatning Meſſage to ſo hot a Prince as *Francis I.* might go near to coſt him his Life. Fear not, ſaid old *Harry*, if the *French* King ſhould offer to

take away your Life, I would revenge you by taking off the Heads of many *Frenchmen* now in my Power. *But of all these Heads*, replied the Nobleman, *there may not be one to fit my Shoulders.*

13. Some repartees, if, strictly speaking, not to be brought under the head of jests, yet, for the readiness of the thought, and the politeness of the expression, are somewhat better. Of this sort was the answer made by Sir Robert Sutton to the late King of Prussia, on his asking him at a review of his tall grenadiers, if he would say an equal number of Englishmen could beat them? No, Sir, answered Sir Robert, I won't pretend to say that, but I believe *half the number would try.*

14. A *Gascon* Officer, who had serv'd under *Henry* IV. King of *France*, and not having receiv'd any Pay for a considerable Time, came to the King, and confidently said to him, *Sir, three Words with your Majesty. Money or Discharge. Four with you*, answer'd his Majesty, *Neither one, nor t'other.*

15. *Villiers*, the witty and extravagant Duke of *Buckingham*, in King *Charles* IId's Time, was saying one Day to Sir *Robert Viner*, in a melancholic Humour, I am afraid, Sir *Robert*, I shall die a Beggar at last, which is the most terrible Thing in the World: Upon my Word, my Lord, said Sir *Robert*, there is another Thing more terrible which you have Reason to apprehend, and that is, *That you will live a Beggar, at the Rate you go on.*

16. The same noble Duke, another Time, was making his Complaint to Sir *John Cutler*, a rich Miser, of the Disorder of his Affairs, and ask'd him what he should do to prevent the Ruin of his Estate? *Live as I do, my Lord*, said Sir *John; That I can do*, answer'd the Duke, *when I am ruined.*

17. A pragmatical young fellow, sitting at Table over against the learned *John Scot*, asked him, What Difference there was between *Scot* and *Sot? Just the Breadth of the Table*, answered the other.

18. A Gentleman, having lent a Guinea for two or three Days to a person whose Promises he had not much Faith in, was very much surpriz'd to find, that he very punctually kept his Word with him; the same Gentleman being some Time after desirous of borrowing a larger Sum, *No*, said the other, *you have deceived me once, and I am resolved you shall not do it a second Time.*

19.

19. Three or four roguiſh Scholars walking out one Day from the Univerſity of *Oxford*, eſpy'd a poor Fellow near *Abingdon*, aſleep in a Ditch, with an Aſs by him laden with Earthen Ware, holding the Bridle in his Hand; ſays one of the Scholars to the reſt, If you will aſſiſt me, I'll help you to a little Money, for you know we are bare at preſent, No doubt of it they were not long conſenting: Why then, ſaid he, we'll go and ſell this old Fellow's Aſs at *Abingdon;* for you know the Fair is To-morrow, and we ſhall meet with Chapmen enough; therefore, do you take the Panniers off, and put them upon my Back, and that Bridle over my Head, and then lead the Aſs to Market, and let me alone with the old Man. This being done accordingly, in a little Time after the poor Man waking, was ſtrangely ſurprized to ſee his Aſs thus metamorphoſed: Oh! for Heaven's Sake, ſaid the Scholar, take this Bridle out of my Mouth, and this Load from my Back. Zoons, how came you here, replied the old Man? Why, ſaid he, my Father, who is a Necromancer, upon an idle Thing I did to diſoblige him, transformed me into an Aſs; but now his Heart has relented, and I am come to my own Shape again, I beg you will let me go home and thank him: By all Means, ſaid the Crockery Merchant, I do not deſire to have any thing to do with Conjuration; and ſo ſet the Scholar at Liberty, who went directly to his Comrades, that by this Time were making merry with the Money they had ſold the Aſs for. But the old Fellow was forced to go the next Day to ſeek for a new one in the Fair, and after having looked on ſeveral, his own was ſhewn him for a very good one: *Oh! Oh!* ſaid he, *what! have he and his Father quarrelled again already? No, no, I'll have nothing to ſay to him.*

20. A witty Knave coming into a Lace-ſhop upon *Ludgate-hill*, ſaid, He had Occaſion for a ſmall Quantity of very fine Lace, and having pitched upon that he liked, aſk'd the Woman of the Shop, how much ſhe would have for as much as would reach from one of his Ears to the other, and meaſure which Way ſhe pleaſed, either over his Head, or under his Chin: After ſome Words they agreed, and he paid the Money down, and began to meaſure, ſaying, *One of my Ears is here, and the other is nailed to the Pillory in* Briſtol, *therefore I fear you have not enough to make good your Bargain; however, I will take this Piece in Part, and deſire you will provide the reſt with all Expedition.*

21.

21. A Lady's Age happening to be queſtion'd, ſhe affirmd ſhe was but *Forty*, and call'd upon a Gentleman, who was in Company, for his Opinion: Couſin, ſaid ſhe, do you believe I am in the right, when I ſay I am but *Forty?* I am ſure, Madam, reply'd he, I ought not to diſpute it; for I have conſtantly heard you ſay ſo for above theſe *ten Years.*

22. A Lieutenant-Colonel to one of the *Iriſh* Regiments in the *French* Service, being diſpatched by the Duke of *Berwick*, from *Fort-Kehl*, to the King of *France*, with a Complaint relating to ſome Irregularities that had happen'd in the Regiment, his Majeſty, with ſome Emotion of Mind, told him, that the *Iriſh* Troops gave him more Uneaſineſs than all his Forces beſides. *Sir*, ſays the Officer, *all your Majeſty's Enemies make the ſame Complaint.*

23. Mr. *G—n*, the Surgeon, being ſent for to a Gentleman who had juſt received a ſlight Wound in a Rencounter, gave Ordres to his Servant to go home with all Haſte imaginable, and fetch a certain Plaiſter; the Patient turning a little pale, *Lord, Sir*, ſaid he, *I hope there is no Danger? Yes indeed is there*, anſwered the Surgeon, *for if the Fellow don't ſet up a good Pair of Heels, the Wound will heal before he returns.*

24. A profligate young Nobleman, being in Company with ſome ſober People, deſired Leave to toaſt the Devil. The Gentleman, who ſat next to him, ſaid, *He had no Objection to any of his Lordſhip's Friends.*

25. The late Colonel *Chartres* reflecting on his ill Life and Character, told a certain Nobleman, That if ſuch a Thing as a good Name was to be purchaſed, he would freely give 10,000 Pounds for one. The Nobleman ſaid, It would certainly be the worſt Money he ever laid out in his Life. Why ſo, ſaid the *honeſt* Colonel? *Becauſe* anſwered the Lord, *you would forfeit it again in leſs than a Week.*

26. One ſaying that Mr. *Dennis* was an excellent Critic, was anſwered, That indeed his Writings were much to be valued; for that by his Criticiſm he taught Men how to write well; and by his Poetry ſhew'd them what it was tho write ill; ſo that the World was ſure to edify by him.

27. The late earl of *S—* kept an *Iriſh* Footman, who, perhaps, was as expert in making Bulls as the moſt learned of his Countrymen. My Lord having ſent him one Day with a Preſent to a certain Judge, the Judge in Return ſent my Lord half a Dozen live Partridges with a Letter; the Partridges fluttering

fluttering in the Basket upon *Teague's* Back, as he was carrying them home, he set down the Basket, and opened the Lid of it to quiet them, whereupon they all flew away. Oh! the Devil burn ye, said he, I am glad you are gone; but when he came home, and my Lord had read the Letter, Why *Teague*, said my Lord, I *find* there are half a Dozen Partridges in the Letter: Now, Arrah, dear Honey, said *Teague*, I am glad you have found them in the *Letter*, for they are all *lost* out of the Basket.

28. The same Nobleman going out one Day, called *Teague* to the Side of his Chariot, and bade him tell Mr. *Such-a-one*, if he came, that he should be at home at Dinner. But when my Lord was got across the Square in which he lived, *Teague* came puffing after him, and calling to the Coachman to stop; upon which my Lord, pulling the String, desired to know what *Teague* wanted: My Lord, said he, you bade me tell Mr. *Such-a-one*, if he came, that you would dine at home; *but what must I say if he don't come?*

29. Two inseparable Comrades in the Guards in *Flanders*, had every thing in common between them. One of them being an extravagant Fellow, and unfit to be trusted with Money, the other was always Purse-bearer, which yet he gained little by, for the former would at Night frequently pick his Pocket to the least Stiver; to prevent which, he bethought himself of a Stratagem; and coming among his Companions the next Day, he told them he had bit his Comrade. *Ay, how?* said they. *Why*, replied he, *I hid my Money in his own Pocket last Night, and I am sure he would never look for it there.*

30. A Fellow once standing in the Pillory at *Temple-Bar*, it occasion'd a Stop, so that a Carman with a Load of Cheeses had much ado to pass; and driving just up to the Pillory, he ask'd, What that was that was wrote over the Person's Head? They told him, it was a Paper to signify his Crime, that he stood there for *Forgery*. Ay, said he, What is *Forgery?* They answer'd him, That *Forgery* was counterfeiting another's Hand, with intent to cheat People. To which the Carman replied, looking up at the Offender: *Oh, Pox, this comes of your Writing and Reading, you silly Dog.*

31. *Alphonso*, King of *Naples*, sent a *Moor*, who had been his Captive a long Time, to *Barbary*, with a considerable Sum of Money to purchase Horses, and to return

by

by ſuch a Time. There was about the King a Buffoon, or Jeſter, who had a Table-Book, wherein he uſed to regiſter any remarkable Abſurdity that happened at Court. The Day the *Moor* was diſpatch'd to *Barbary*, the ſaid Jeſter waiting on the King at Supper, the King called for his Table-Book; in which the Jeſter kept a regular Journal of Abſurdities. The King took the Book and read, How *Alphonſo*, King of *Naples*, had ſent *Beltram* the *Moor*, who had been a long Time his Priſoner, to *Morocco*, his own Country, with ſo many thouſand Crowns to buy Horſes. The King turn'd to the Jeſter, and aſk'd, Why he inſerted that? Becauſe, ſaid he, I think he will never come back to be a Priſoner again; and ſo you have loſt both Man and Money: But, if he does come, ſays the King, then your Jeſt is marr'd: No, Sir, replies the Buffoon, *for if he ſhould return, I will blot out your Name, and put in his for a Fool.*

32. A Lady whoſe Beauty was very much upon the Decline, having ſent her Picture to a Gentleman that was to come a wooing to her, bid her Chambermaid, when ſhe was coming to dreſs her, take Care in repairing her Decays a little, or ſhe ſhould not look like her Picture. *I warrant you, Madam*, ſays ſhe, laying on the *Bavarian* Red, *a little Art once made your Picture like you, now a little of the ſame Art ſhall make you like your Picture; your Picture muſt ſit to you.*

33. A certain Philoſopher, when he ſaw Men in a Hurry to finiſh any Matter, us'd to ſay: *Stay a little, that we may make an End the ſooner.*

34. A Gentleman complaining of a Misfortune, ſaid, it was along with that drunken Sot his Man, who could not keep himſelf ſober. *With Reſpect to your Worſhip*, ſaid the Fellow, *I know very few drunken Sots that do keep themſelves ſober.*

35. A certain *Iriſhman* making ſtrong Love to a great Fortune, told her, *He could not ſleep for dreaming of her.*

36. A certain preacher held forth at St. Mary, without giving his auditory any ſatisfaction. Santeuil, the celebrated Poet who was preſent, ſaid, "He did better laſt year." A by-ſtander aſſerted he muſt be miſtaken; for the preſent pulpit thumper had not preached laſt year. "That is the very reaſon," ſaid Santeuil.

37. A ſimple Bumpkin, coming to *London*, was very much taken with the Sight of a Chair, or Sedan, and bargained with the Charman to carry him to a Place he named. The Chairmen, obſerving the Curioſity of the Clown to be ſuitable to the Meanneſs of his Habit, privately took out the Bottom of the Chair, and then put him into it, which, when they took up, the Countryman's Feet were upon the Ground, and as the Chairmen avanced, ſo did he; and to make the better Sport, if any Place was dirtier in the Way than the reſt, that they choſe to go through; the Countryman not knowing but others uſed to be carried, or rather driven in the ſame Manner, coming to his Lodgings, gave them their Demand. Returning into the Country, he related what rare Things he had ſeen in *London* and withal, that he had been carried in a Sedan; Sedan quoth one, What is that? *Why*, ſaid he, *like our Watch Houſe, only it is covered with Leather; but were it not for the Name of a Sedan, a Man might as well walk on Foot.*

38. An impudent ridiculous fellow, being laughed at by all who came in his company, told ſome of his acquaintance, that he had a happy quality of laughing at all who laughed at him. *Then*, ſaid one of them, *you lead the merrieſt life of any man in Chriſtendom.*

39. *Alexander the Great* aſk'd *Diomedes*, a famous pirate who was brought priſoner to him, why he was ſo bold as to rob and plunder in his ſeas? he anſwered, that he did it for his profit, and as *Alexander* himſelf was uſed to do it. *But becauſe I do it with one ſingle galley, I am called a Pirate; but you, Sir, who do it with a great army, are called a King.* This bold anſwer ſo pleaſed *Alexander* that he ſet him at liberty.

40. The Duke of Guiſe, after a battle fought between Francis I. and Charles V. reproach'd one Villandry, that tho' he was in compleat armour, yet he had not been ſeen in the fight. I'll make it out, anſwered Villandry, boldly, that I was there, and in a place where you durſt not be ſeen. The Duke, nettled at this reproach, threatened to puniſh him ſeverely; but he appeaſed him with theſe words: *I was, my Lord, with the baggage, where your courage would not ſuffer you to go.*

14. One who had formerly been rich, but had ſquandered away his eſtate, and left himſelf no furniture in the houſe but a ſorry bed, a little table, a few broken chairs, and ſome other

other odd things, ſeeing a parcel of thieves, who knew not his condition breaking into his houſe in the night, he cried out to them, *Are not you a damn'd pack of fools, to think to find any thing here in the dark, when I can find nothing by day-light?*

43. Poor *Joe Miller* going one day along the *Strand*, an impudent *Derby* captain came ſwaggering up to him, and thruſt between him and the wall. *I don't uſe to give the wall,* ſaid he *to every jackanapes. But I do*, ſaid *Joe;* and ſo made way for him.

43. When his late Royal Highneſs the Duke of *Cumberland* arrived at *Portſmouth*, to ſee the Fleet, he ſtood talking to one of the Admirals with his Hat on; upon which a Sailor, who was at a little Diſtance, hailed his Meſs-mate, *Jack! Jack*, ſays he, there's a Sight for ye; ſee, there's a Man talks to the Admiral with his Hat on! *Why*, *you Fool*, anſwered the other, *how ſhould he know Good-manners, he never was at Sea.*

44. I never laughed more than at the Simplicity of a man in the North, who had entered into a Manufactury without any Knowledge of Buſineſs, and traded away a good Fortune without knowing how to draw even a Bill of Exchange. This honeſt Man had long owed my Friend Mr *** a Hundred Pound, which he had often aſked for in vain; at laſt, meeting with him one Day in Company, he aſked him why he did not pay him the Money? Becauſe I have none, Maſter, anſwered the other. Well, but *Thomas*, replied my Friend, if you have no Money? perhaps you may give me a Bill upon Somebody in *London*. Yes, Maſter, that I will do with all my Heart, replied the other with great Simplicity; ſit down and write it, Maſter, for you can write better than I. My Friend ſat down to draw the Bill, greatly rejoiced with an opportunity of getting his Money; and when he had done, *Thomas*, ſays he, I have drawn the Bill a Month after Date, now who ſhall I addreſs it to, that is, who ſhall I direct it to for Payment? *Whom you pleaſe, Maſter*, anſwered the poor Man, *you know more People in London than I do.*

45. A Gentleman, who was declaiming before a large Audience, having a bad Memory, was at a Stand, and in a low Voice deſired his Friend, who ſtood by, to help him out. *No*, ſays the other, *methinks you are* out *enough already.*

An

AN ABRIDGEMENT OF ANDERSON'S COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF GREAT-BRITAIN AND IRELAND. *)

The Island of *Great-Britain* may be considered both in a *geographical* and *mercantile* Sense, as comprehending two distinct Parts, viz. *England* the richer and greater, and *Scotland* the smaller and less considerable Part; although in a *political Sense* those two Parts have been indissolubly united *sixty-seven* Years ago.

I. *England* is the more level and fertile Part of this noble Island, and *Scotland* more mountainous, and in its Northern and North-western Parts more cold and barren, though enjoying a more pure and healthy Air. *England* is often subject to Damps, Fogs, and much variable Weather; yet the Country is uncommonly fertile, almost always abounding in Plenty of Corn, and excellent Vegetables and Fruit; in Cyder, Perry, Saffron, Liquorice, Woad, excellent Timber both for House and Ship Building, as also for Fuel; almost inexhaustible Pit-coal; the finest Pastures, Horses, and horned Cattle; and Sheep, a most profitable Article beyond any other, on Account of the noblest Manufacture upon Earth. *England*'s Mines and Manufactures are also very considerable; and her *Tin-Mines* of *Cornwall* have not their Parallel in any other Part of *Europe*, nor perhaps in the whole World. In her Mountains are found Marble, Alabaster, Crystal, Alum, and Vitriol; her Sea-Coasts and Rivers abound in the greatest Quantities of the best Kinds of Fish. II. In *Scotland* they are making many Improvements in Agriculture, and in the greater Production of Hemp and Flax, for farther increasing their already extensive very fine and valuable *Linen* Manufacture. It also abounds in horned Cattle, Sheep, and a smaller Breed of hardy Horses; in vast Quantities of Pit-coal, better than that of *England;* and in Plenty of Lead, of Salmon in its Rivers, and an inexhaustible Abundance of *Fish* in her Seas. III. *Ireland*, though abounding in Lakes and Bogs, is nevertheless a noble Island. Agriculture is beginning to be improved, and its Cultivation of *Hemp*, and yet more of *Flax*, is become very considerable; also her *Linen* Manufacture is grown almost to be a Prodigy, even in a few Years Space. —

Dr.

*) Anderson's Historical Deduction of the Origin of Commerce &c. London 1764. fol. Vol. II.

Dr. *Busching* makes the Inhabitants of *Great-Britain* amount to *nine Millions*, which is probably near the Truth; and the People of *Ireland* are nearly computed at 2,250,000. — *England's* foreign Commerce is immense!

1. To *Turkey*, *England* sends Woollen Cloths, Tin, Lead, and Iron, solely in her own Shipping; and brings thence Raw-Silk, Carpets, Galls, and other dying Drugs, Cotton, Fruits, medicinal Drugs, Coffee, &c. Dr. *Busching* relates, that a very eminent *Turkey* Merchant at *London* assured him, *That the Balance of this Trade in* England's *Favour was, to his certain Knowledge, near* 600,000 *l. per Annum*; which we heartily wish may be true! though we have too much Ground to doubt it. 2. To *Italy*, *England* exports Woollen Goods of various Kinds, Peltry, Leather, Lead, Tin, Fish and *East-India* Goods; and brings back raw and thrown Silk, Wines, Oil, Soap, Olives, Oranges, Lemons, Pomegranates, dried Fruits, Colours, Anchovies, &c. And the said Author thinks, the Balance of this Trade, *in Favour of Italy*, cannot be less than 200,000 *l. per Annum.* 3. To *Spain*, *England* sends all Kinds of Woollen Goods, Leather, Lead, Tin, Fish, Corn, Iron and Brass Manufactures, Haberdashery Wares, Assortments of *Linen* from *Germany* and elsewhere for her *American* Colonies; and receives in return, Wines, Oils, dried Fruits, Oranges, Lemons, Olives, Wools, Indigo, Cochineal, and other dying Drugs, Colours, *Gold* and *Silver* Coin, &c. And is, doubtless, a gainful Trade for *England*, though not so greatly so at is was formerly, before other Nations, and more especially *France*, interfered so much of late Years. 4. To *Portugal*, *England* sends mostly the same Kinds of Merchandize as to *Spain*; and makes returns in vast Quantities of Wines with Oils, Salt, dried and moist Fruits, dying Drugs, and *Gold* Coins; and, undoubtedly, much to *England*'s Advantage. 5. To *France*, *England* sends much Tabacco, Lead, Tin, Flanels, Horns, and sometimes Corn; and always much Money at the Long-run. And brings Home, in a smuggling Way, a much greater Value in Wines, Brandies, Linen, Cambricks, Lace, Velvets, and many other prohibited Fopperies, Brocades, &c. always very considerably to *England*'s Disadvantage. But as there is no commercial Treaty subsisting between *England* and *France*, not even in Time of Peace, *England's* just Loss cannot be ascertained.

6. To *Flanders*, *England* sends Serges, Flanels, Tin, Lead, Sugars, and Tobacco; and makes Returns in fine Lace, Linen,

Cambricks,

Cambricks, &c. to *England's* Disadvantage (according to Dr. *Busching*) to the Amount of 250,000 *l.* Sterling yearly. 7. To *Germany*, *England* sends Cloths and Stuffs, Tin, Pewter, Sugars, Tobacco, and *East-India* Merchandize: And brings thence vast Quantities of Linen, Thread, Goats-skins, Tinned-plates, Timber for all Uses, Wines, and many other Articles: And Dr. *Busching* thinks the Balance against *England* may amount annually to 500,000 *l.* 8. To *Norway*, *England* sends a small Quantity of Tobacco, and of Woollen Stuffs; and (it is said) 150,000 *l.* in Money; and brings thence vast Quantities of *Deal* and other Timber. 9. To *Sweden*, *England* sends some few Manufactures, and about 200,000 *l.* annually in Money; and brings back from thence much Iron, Timber, Tar, Copper, &c. 10. To *Russia*, *England* sends Woollen Cloth and Stuffs, Tin, Lead, Tobacco, Diamonds, Household Furniture &c.; and makes Returns in Hemp, Flax, Linen, Thread, Furs, Pot-ash, Iron, Wax, Tallow, &c. And by this Trade *England* loses (according to the Opinion of some) 400,000 *l.* annually. 11. To *Holland*, *England* sends an immense Quantity of many Sorts of Merchandize; such as all Kinds of Woollen Goods, Hides, Corn, Coals, *East-India* and *Turkey* Merchandize, Tobacco, Tar, Sugar, Rice, Ginger, and other *American* Productions: And makes Returns in fine Linen, Lace, Cambricks, Thread, Tapes, Incle, Madder, Boards, Drugs, Whalebone, Train-oil, Toys, and many other Things. And the Balance is usually supposed to be much in Favour of *England*. 12. To *Ireland*, *England* sends allmost all Kinds of Merchandize, (Linen and Woollen Stuffs and Provisions alone excepted;) and, doubtless, reaps great Advantages thereby. Although, of late Years, *Ireland's* great and increasing Importations of Linen into *England* may, in Time, turn the Balance against *England*, notwithstanding the great Sums of Money spent in *England* by *Ireland's* Absentees. — *Ireland* moreover enjoys the Benefit of a direct Commerce to most Parts of *Europe*, *viz.* with the *Netherlands*, *France*, *Spain* and *Portugal*, with her Hides, Tallow, salted Beef, Pork, and Butter. The Returns whereof help to pay to *England* what they have from thence.

13. But the most important and advantageous Commerce of *England* is that carried on to her own Colonies in *America*. There it is that *England* (and *Scotland* also since her Union with her) finds the vast and constantly increasing Vent of her Product and Manufactures of almost every Kind, both of her

own and thoſe of every other *European* Country. And from thence ſhe returns with the various Productions of *America;* Tobacco, Sugars, Rice, Ginger, Indigo, Drugs, Logwood, and Money, which our own Colonies got from the ſundry *European* Nations holding Colonies in *America.* 14. To the Coaſt of *Guinea, England* ſends ſundry Sorts of coarſe Woollen and Linen, Iron, Pewter, Braſs, and Hardware Manufactures, Lead-ſhot, Swords, Knives, Fire-arms, Gunpowder, Glaſs Manufactures, &c. And, beſide its drawing no Money out of the Kingdom, it ſupplies her *American* Colonies with Negro Slaves, amounting in Number to above 100,000 annually; and moreover brings home to *England* Gold-Duſt, dying and other Drugs, Red-wood, *Guinea*-Grains, Ivory, &c. This Trade therefore is extremely profitable to *England.* 15. To *Arabia, Perſia, Eaſt-India,* and *China, England* ſends much foreign Silver Coin and Bullion, and ſundry *Engliſh* Manufactures of Woollen Goods, and of Lead, Iron and Braſs: And brings Home from thoſe remote Regions, Muſlins and Cottons of many various Kinds, Callicoes, raw aud wrought Silk, Chints; Teas, Porcellain, Gold-Duſt, Coffee, Saltpetre, and many other Drugs, &c. And ſo great a Quantity of thoſe various Merchandizes are re-exported to foreign *European* Nations, as more than abundantly compenſates for *all* the Silver Bullion which *England* carries out! — Now, if, (as ſome compute) *England*'s annual Exports do amount to near *ſeven Millions Sterling*, and that her annual Imports do not exceed *five Millions;* of which five Millions above one Million is re-exported, then may the general annual Balance in Favour of *England* be about or near *three Millions Sterling;* or, in other Words, ſo much is the annual Profit of *England by its foreign Commerce.*

In order for a Deſcription of its ſeveral Parts, we ſhall begin with.

Cornwall: This County's Mountains ſupply an immenſe Quantity of excellent *Tin,* and alſo ſome *Copper.* — Its beſt Towns are: *Falmouth*, a pretty modern Town. It has a good Harbour, ſome foreign Commerce; and is finely ſituated for the Station of the Packet-boats to *Spain* and *Portugal.* — *Penzance* is a well-built and populous Sea-port Town, of conſiderable Commerce.

Devonſhire has both Tin and Lead Mines, with Manufactures of the fineſt Serges or Perpetuanos, Kerſies, Bonelace, and excellent Cyder. — *Plymouth* is a large Town, with a

noble

noble Harbour, a large Royal Dock for Ships of War, a Royal Citadel, and other Forts and Batteries; and with the Buildings and People, and its extenſive Dock, may probably contain about 20,000 People. — *Exeter* is a large, opulent, and ancient commercial City, containing about and ſome ſay more than 20,000 Inhabitants. It is eminent for its great Trade in fine Perpetuanos and Serges, to the Value (as commonly ſaid) of 600,000 *l. per Annum*, and has alſo a good foreign Commerce.

Dorſetſhire abounds in Corn, Cattle, Sheep, Hemp, Flax, and Timber; ſo pleaſant a County as to have been ſometimes ſtiled the *Garden of England.* — *Bridport* is chiefly noted for the great Quantities of *Cordage* and *Match* for the Navy. — *Weymouth* and *Melcomb-Regis* are two populous Sea-port Towns. They carry on a conſiderable foreign Commerce. *Dorcheſter*, the County-Town, is large, though an inland Town; and, for ſix Miles round it, the Country has been ſaid to feed 600,000 Sheep. — *Pool* is a conſiderable Port for Shipping and Commerce, chiefly in the *Newfoundland* Fiſhery. *Blandford*, a well-built inland Town, ſurpaſſes all *England* in fine *Lace*, has ſome Woollen Manufactures, and is noted for good Malt. — *Sherburn*, a large Town, containing 1,300 Houſes and 10,000 Inhabitants. Its modern Manufactures are Buttons, Lace, and Haberdaſhery Wares, wherein it carries on a good Trade.

Somerſetſhire lies on the *Briſtol Channel;* it abounds in Corn, fine Cattle, Sheep, Lead, Copper, Woad for Dyers, and *Briſtol Stones* reſembling Diamonds. Its Manufactures are very important, conſiſting of fine Cloths, Serges, and Druggets: It is alſo famous for the beſt and largeſt Cheeſes, by ſome eſteemed equal to *Parmezan* Cheeſe, and alſo for Cyder. — Its beſt Town is, *Taunton*, a very large Town, on the River *Tone*, navigable from thence to *Bridgewater*. It contains about 20,000 Inhabitants, many of whom are wealthy, as this Place has very conſiderable Manufactures of Serges, Druggets, and other Woollen Stuffs.

The renowned commercial City of *Briſtol* is ſeparated by the River *Avon*, between the two Counties of *Somerſet* and *Glouceſter;* yet, being a County of itſelf, it is no Part of of either of thoſe Counties. A conſiderable Part of it lies on the South Side of that River, and a ſtill larger Part on the North Side of it; having a Communication by three Stone-bridges alſo by a Draw-bridge for letting of Ships up into

the Harbour, called the *Back*, or the little River ſtiled the *Froom*. It is by far the largeſt City in *Britain*, next after *London*; containing above 13,000 Houſes, and about 100000 Inhabitants; both which are conſtantly increaſing. It is ſaid by ſome to employ 2,000 maritime Veſſels of all Sizes, Coaſters, as well as Ships employed in foreign Voyages. It has many very important Manufactures: Its Glaſsbottle and Drinking-glaſs one alone occupying fifteen large Houſes. Its Braſs-wire Manufactures are alſo very conſiderable. It contains twenty-one Churches, beſide its Cathedral, and ſeven or eight Meeting-houſes; has a moſt extenſive Quay, with Dock-yards, &c. for Ship-building; ſundry good Hoſpitals, in all eighteen in Number, and many Alms-houſes and other charitable Foundations. Inſomuch, that this City, for its prudent Regulations is perhaps out-done by none, and for its vaſt Commerce, Wealth, and Shipping, by very few trading Cities in all *Europe*.

Wiltſhire is a fertile County, greatly abounding in Woollen Manufactures, more eſpecially at the Towns of *Chippenham*, *Malmſbury*, *Calne*, *Devizes*, *Marlborough*, *&c.* — *Saliſbury* is a fine and well-built City, having a fine Town-houſe, a ſpacious Market-place, a noble Cathedral, and about 10,000 Inhabitants. Here are ſeveral flouriſhing Manufactures, particulary fine Flanels, Long-clothes, called *Saliſbury Whites*, for the *Turkey* Trade; alſo Druggets and Bone-lace.

Hampſhire, on the *Engliſh Channel*, abounds in Corn, Wool, Iron, and Timber; but it has ſtill a conſiderable Trade in Wool-ſtapling. — *Portſmouth* is a regularly fortified and moſt famous Sea-port Town. It has a very ſpacious Harbour, in which a thouſand Ships may ride at Anchor, a moſt extenſive Dock-yard, for the Conſtruction and Repairs of the Royal Navy, fine Rope-yards, vaſt Storehouſes, a Cooperage, Victualing-office, Gunwharf, moſt convenient Houſes alſo for the numerons Officers and Maſter-Workmen; All which form a Kind of diſtinct Town. And the adjoining Streets on the Place called the *Common*, form another conſiderable Town. Moreover, the Town of *Goſport*, intirely depending on *Portſmouth*, and lying on the South Side of the Harbour, forms alſe a conſiderable Town. So that the whole taken together may fairly be preſumed to contain at leaſt 20,000 People; above 1,000 Men being conſtantly kept in the King's Pay in and about the Harbour.

Berkſhire,

Berkshire, a delightful and fruitful County. — *Reading*, its County Town, on the *Thames*, is large and wealthy It contains at leaſt about 8,000 People, and carries on a great Trade with *London* in Malt and Flour.

Surrey is a pleaſant County. — *Guilford* being its reputed County Town, ſtanding on the River *Wey;* which, being navigable from it to the *Thames*, ſerves to convey much Ship-Timber, &c. to *London*. *Southwark*, though uſually deemed a Part of the great Contiguity of *London*, or one of its great Suburbs, yet is within this County; and its Contiguity ſtretches along the *Thames* from *Deptford-Bridge* to *Vaux-hall*, above ſix Miles in Length, though very narrow in ſome Parts, and at other Parts ſcarcely contiguous, containing very many opulent People, and many Thouſands of induſtrious Inhabitants, and various Manufacturers.

Suſſex, on the *Engliſh Channel*, oppoſite to *France*, is abundant in fine *Oak* Timber, and in Iron-mines, worked with very great Benefit. — *Chicheſter* City is its chief Town. Its principal Trade is in Corn for exportation, and in Malt and Needles. Its Harbour is neither good nor large; though it has not much foreign Trade, it is nevertheleſs eſteemed a well-built City.

Kent, a noble and fertile County. — *Canterbury*, its ancient Capital, is a decayed City. Here are ſtill ſome Silk Manufactures carried on by the poſterity of the *Walloons*, and of the *French* Refugees. It has ſeveral fine Remains of ſtately Eccleſiaſtical Buildings, with Part of its ancient Walls: Poſſibly there may be near 20,000 People ſtill left in it. Its Neighbourhood is noted for the beſt *Brawn*, and alſo for great Quantities of excellent Hops. *Dover*, an ancient and open Sea-port, oppoſite to that of *Calais* in *France*. Its Harbour is a dry one, and is only capable, at High-water, of receiving middling Merchant-Ships. Of its ancient ſeven Pariſh Churches two only remain. Here is a Cuſtom-houſe, and a Victualing-office for the Royal Navy; yet it is a Place of no conſiderable foreign Commerce. Its huge Caſtle ſtands too high to do much Execution againſt Shipping. Here are held the Courts relating to the *Cinque Ports*, it being the chief of them. In Time of Peace there goes from hence a Packet-Boat twice every Week to *Calais*, in Sight of it, with the Mails for *France*, &c. *Chatham* is the principal Dock-yard for the Royal Navy, being ſupplied with immenſe Quantities of all Kinds of Naval Stores, and whatever elſe

may be requiſite for the Equipment of a Royal Fleet. It has an *Ordnance-Office*, a *Victualing-Office*, and an *Hoſpital;* — handſome and convenient Houſes for the ſeveral Officers. And the intire Oeconomy here is ſo much improved of late Years, that it may be pronounced truly admirable!

Middleſex is a ſmall but pleaſant and fertile County. *London*, its auguſt and matchleſs Capital, is not to be deſcribed in leſs than a very conſiderable Folio Volume: Yet we may ſummarily obſerve, that it contains 128 Pariſh Churches, and near as many Proteſtant Diſſenting Meeting-houſes and Chapels, of various Denominations, beſide five Foreign Churches, or private Popiſh Chapels, and *Jews* Synagogues. It contains 3 Colleges, 13 Hoſpitals, and almoſt 100 Alms-houſes; 15 Colleges (called Inns) for Lawyers, 27 Squares, and 131 Charity-Schools. In point of Opulence, Commerce, Populouſneſs, and Extent, (including *Weſtminſter* and all its other Suburbs) we apprehend it may fairly be deemed the firſt City in *Chriſtendom*, if not on the whole Earth.

Eſſex abounds with the fineſt Manufactures of *Bays*, and with fine Saffron, and Oyſters. — *Colcheſter*, its chief Town, is an ancient, large, and populous Place, with a Harbour for ſmall Veſſels. It has long been eminent for its fine Manufactures of Bays and Serges, (in which Manufactures this ſingle Town has been ſaid formerly to have returned 1,500,000 *l.* annually) and for excellent barrelled Oyſters, ſent to many diſtant Parts.

Suffolk produces *Hemp*, and all Sorts of Grain and excellent Cattle. — *Ipſwich*, its Capital, is an ancient decayed Town, although it has ſtill twelve Pariſh Churches, a Harbour and Yard for Ship-building. It alſo retains ſtill ſome Woollen and Linen Manufactures.

Norfolk's Productions are Corn, Wool, Honey, and Saffron; and its chief Manufactures are fine Woollen, and Half-Silk Stuffs and Stockings. — *Norwich* is its ancient, large, and populous Metropolis, the Center of all the Manufactures and inland Commerce of this County. To the *Flemings* and *Walloons*, who fled hither from the Perſecution of the *Duke d'Alva*, and were encouraged to ſettle here by Queen *Elizabeth*, are owing the principal and vaſt Increaſe of its fine Crapes and other light Manufactures, which are ſaid to employ 120,000 Perſons in and near this City; and *Norwich* buys up Quantities of fine Yarn, which is ſpun in ſundry other more Nothern Counties. This City is of great Service

to

to *Yarmouth*, its proper Sea-port, not only for exporting its excellent Stuff, &c. Manufactures, beyond Sea and to *London*, but likewise by the vast Quantities of Wine, Oil, Coals, Fish, and other heavy Goods, which so populous a manufacturing City as *Norwich* constantly consumes. The persecuted *Flemings*, driven out by *d'Alva's* Cruelty, first taught *Norwich* to make *Says*, *Bays*, *Serges*, *Shalloons*, and other fine Stuffs; and they afterwards fell into the Manufactures of *Camlets*, *Crapes*, *Druggets*, &c. in which they are said to return 200,000 *l.* annually, and their Stocking Manufactures are said to be valued annually at 60,000 *l.* more. — *Yarmouth* is a handsome and populous Town, with a good Harbour, and one of the finest Quays in all *Europe*. Its Herring Fishery is very great, employing 150 Vessels therein, whereof about 50 are usually laden to *Genoa*, *Leghorn*, *Naples*, *Messina*, *Portugal*, *Spain*, and *Venice*; from hence also are exported all Kinds of Stuffs made at *Norwich*, and other Parts, to *Holland*, &c. — *Yarmouth* imports from *Norway*, and the Ports of the *Baltic*, *Pitch*, *Tar*, *Timber*, *Hemp*, *Flax*, *Iron*, &c. and, since the Decline of *Ipswich*, it has been the principal *Rendevouz* of the *Newcastle* Colliers and other Shipping, passing between the North and South Parts. It also deals considerably in Coals and Malt. It was formerly reckoned to have 1,100 Ships of its own. *Lynn*, a wealthy and populous Sea-port Town, with considerable Shipping and Commerce.

Cambridgeshire is chiefly noted for very good Pasturage, Corn, and Saffron.

Huntingdonshire is partly marshy, though with fine Pasturage, Corn and Cattle. Its fenny Situation, like Part of *Cambridgeshire*, affords great Plenty of fine fresh-water Fish and Wild-fowl.

Bedfordshire is an in-land County, fertile in Grain and Cattle. — *Bedford*, its Shire-Town, on the *Ouse*, is a large, populous, and well-built Town. It has a great Trade in Corn sent down the *Ouse* to *Holland* by the Shipping of *Lynn*. Other Materials for Commerce formerly were Women's Straw-hats. Here is also good *Fuller's Earth*, so necessary for the Woollen Manufacture.

Hertfordshire is in general a fertile inland Country, plentiful in Corn and Cattle.

Buckinghamshire has Plenty of Cattle and Sheep; and has good Bone-lace and Paper Manufactures.

Oxfordſhire is a fine and fertile County. — *Oxford* City, having an illuſtrious Univerſity, is large and well built, but, in a great Meaſure, deſtitute both of Commerce and Manufactures. *Woodſtock*, a ſmall Market-Town, is only noted for a Manufacture of Watch-Chains and other Steel Wares, as alſo for Gloves and other Leather Manufactures; and *Bampton*, for the greateſt Trade in Skins of any Part ofhe Kingdom.

Glouceſterſhire is a fine and fruitful County, eminent for the fineſt of *Wool.* In its Plains there is Plenty of Corn and Timber; and it produces vaſt Quantities of Cheeſe and excellent Cyder. — *Glouceſter City* ſtands on the *Severn.* Although the City of *Briſtol* always has, and probably ever will, intercept and prevent its being conſiderable for naval Commerce, it has however a Cuſtom-houſe, to which Ships of a moderate Burden come up; its beſt Manufactures are Pins and Bellfounding.

Monmouthſhire, on the other or weſt Side of the *Severn Frith*, or *Sea*, is mountainous and woody, yet not unfertile. — *Monmouth*, its Shire-Town, having a Harbour, and carrying on a good Trade with *Briſtol. Pontypoole* is noted for its Iron Slitting-mills, its Manufacture of Iron Snuff-boxes, &c. And more lately for its fine Manufacture of *Tinned Iron Plates*, ſo much improved, and ſo univerſally in uſe for Kitchen-Furniture, and many other Purpoſes.

Herefordſhire abounds in Corn, excellent Wool, Timber, Cyder and Salmon.

Worceſterſhire abounds in Corn, Cattle Sheep, Fruits, River Fiſh, and in divers Salt-Springs and Salt-Pits at ſundry of its Towns. Its beſt Towns are: *Worceſter City*, ſtanding pleaſantly on the River *Severn*, may contain about or near 20,000 Inhabitants. It has divers Manufactures of fine Cloths, and of Gloves. Here is a Cuſtom-houſe and Quay, to which many Veſſels of ſmall Burden come up. *Bewdley* is a good Town, on the *Severn*, dealing largely in Corn; Iron Wares, Salt, Hops, Leather, *Mancheſter Goods*, &c. carried down the *Severn* to *Glouceſter* and other Parts.

Warwickſhire is a good inland County. — *Birmingham* is the largeſt Town in this County, moſt populous and moſt thriving. It is not only all over *England*, but it may be ſaid likewiſe all over *Europe*, that it is eminent for its almoſt endleſs Variety of excellent and ingenious *Hardware* Manufactures; of vaſt Variety of Snuff and Tobacco Boxes, Buttons, Shoe-Buckles, Tweezers, &c. with many other Sorts of Steel and Braſs Wares. For which End it is ſupplied with very cheap Coals,

Coals, and all other Neceſſaries in great Plenty. It has three fine Churches, ſeveral Diſſenting Meeting-houſes; and, having lately had many new Streets added to it, it may probably contain about 30,000 Inhabitants; and at preſent much more likely to increaſe than to diminiſh.

Northamptonſhire is a very populous inland County, extremely fruitful. — *Northampton* Town is a pleaſant Place, where is the greateſt Horſe-Market in *England*.

Rutlandſhire is the very ſmalleſt County in *England*, remarkably abounding in Corn, black Cattle, and Sheep.

Leiceſterſhire is very fertile in Corn, Cattle, and Sheep with fine long Wool. — *Leiceſter*, its Shire-Town, is conſiderably large and populous. It carries on a great Trade in Stockings, Corn, and Cattle. The Stocking-frame Trade having in ſome Years yielded 60,000 *l. per Annum*.

Lincolnſhire, a large County, with a very various Soil.

Nottinghamſhire is a fine County, and has in it many Woods, Foreſts, and Coal-pits — *Nottingham*, ſituated on a Rock near the River *Trent*, is one of the fineſt and pleaſanteſt Towns of the whole Kingdom. It is wealthy and populous. Its principal Manufactures are Stockings, for which it is very famous; it has good Earthen-ware; and is alſo very famous for its excellent *Malt* and *Ale*.

Derbyſhire, though (like moſt other Counties) it has a various Soil, has however Plenty of Corn and Wood, with many Mines of Iron, Lead, Coal, and Marble. — *Derby*, its Shire-Town, is a Staple for *Wool* and is noted for good Malt and fine Ale the latter being exported in great Quantities.

Staffordſhire is in ſome Parts barren, mountainous, and woody; in other Parts it has good Corn and Paſture; and particularly abounds in Mines of Iron and Coal. — *Woolverhampton* is a wealthy and populous Town, filled with Manufactures of the fineſt Lockſmiths Work in *England*, and other Kinds of Hardware.

Shropſhire (or the County of *Salop*) is a pleaſant and fertile Country, abounding in Corn, Coals, Iron, aud Wood. — *Shrewſbury* (or *Salop*) is a pleaſant, and well-built Town. It has large Manufactures of *Flannel*, called here *Welch Cottons*, and alſo of Cloth.

Cheſhire is moſtly a level Country, abounding in Corn and Cattle of all kinds, and in Salt-Works. — *Cheſter* City drives a very conſiderable Trade with *Ireland*. This City is large and populous. It is computed annually to vend 30,000 Tons

Weight

Weight of its excellent *Cheese*, each consisting of 20 Hundred Weight.

Yorkshire, by far the largest County in *England*, is, in general, extremely fertile and plentiful in all the Necessaries of Life. Out of its forty-nine Towns, the following ones are the principal, *viz.* *York* City is very much decayed, and fallen from its ancient Splendor and Magnitude. *Halifax*, upon the River *Calder*, is a very populous and very wealthy Town, eminent for its extensive Woollen Manufactures. *Leeds* is a very populous, large, and wealthy Town, having three Churches, and several dissenting Meeting-houses. It is most famous for its immense Woollen-Cloth fair, where, say some, 20,000 *l.* worth of Cloth is often sold in an Hour's Time, and much of it shipped off at *Hull* for foreign Parts, its River being navigable by Boats to *Wakefield*, *York*, and *Hull*. *Wakefield's* Woollen Manufactures have of late so much increased it, as to be computed more populous than *York* City. *Sheffield* is a very large Town, eminently famous, for its Cutlery Ware; in which it is said to employ 40,000 People, though not all living within the Town. — *Hull*, enjoys a very large foreign Commerce, and a numerous Shipping, more especially employed to the *Baltic*, and to the Northern Kingdoms, for Naval Stores, &c. and also in the Fisheries to *Ireland* and *Greenland*. It has a large inland Trade with sundry neighbouring Counties, by means of the several Rivers at and near it. *Hull* also deals largely in Corn, has much Sail-Cloth manufactured at its Trinity-house, and Lead. Its Customs, by its foreign Trade, are reputed to amount to from 30 to 40,000 *l.* It may probably contain near 20,000 Inhabitants. *Scarborough* is a good Seaport Town, with a safe Harbour. It is employed so much in the fishing for Cod, Herrings, &c. as to be able, not only to supply the neighbouring Countries, but also to send considerable Quantities beyoud Sea. It likewise deals largely in the Coal-Trade.

In the County or Bishopric of *Durham*, the principal Commodities or Productions are, *Iron*, *Lead*, and *Coals*, and some *Linen* Manufactures at *Darligton*.

Northumberland yields excellent Mines of Coals and Lead. — *Newcastle*, on the North Side of the River *Tine*, it its stately and opulent Capital. This Town is extremely populous. The River *Tine* is its extensive and safe Harbour; from whence almost incredible Quantities of Coals are constantly shipped off for *London*, and other Parts of *England*, as well as to foreign Parts.

Parts. It is, moreover, in other Respects, a Place of very considerable foreign Commerce; has several Glass-houses, a considerable Manufacture of Hardware, and the best Grindstones in all *Europe*. *Newcastle* builds many Ships for the Coal-trade. Seven Miles down the River, the large Village of *North-Shields* is the noted Station for the Coal-Ships, where they take in their Ladings from the numerous Lighters called *Keels*, constantly going thither for that End, navigated by above 4000 Keelmen. Merchant-Ships of considerable Burden come up to its fine Quay, but most of them remain at *Shields*, ready to go out to Sea; where, at the Mouth of the *Tine*, there is a Fort well planted with Cannon, and a Garrison. *Newcastle*, with *Shields*, is by many thought to contain above 30,000 People.

Lancashire is in some Parts fruitful, in other Parts marshy, and in some other Parts stony and barren. Its chief natural Productions are Corn, Coals, and excellent Hemp. — *Lancaster*, its County-Town, is a Sea-port, though capable only of Ships of about 70 Tons Burden: Yet, with such Ships, it carries on a thriving Trade with our *American* Colonies, in Manufactures of Woollen, Hardware, &c. *Manchester*, is a large, beautiful, and extremely populous Place: And though, in Point of Government, it is really but a Village as having no higher Magistrate than a Constable; yet, in Magnitude, elegant Buildings, and Number of Inhabitants, it surpasses all the Towns, and even all the Cities of *England*, three only excepted. It is eminently famous for the Skill and Industry of its People, in many Kinds of Manufactures of Cotton, Dimities, Tickings, &c. and is by some said to contain upwards of 30,000, and some others think 40,000 People. *Liverpool* is a large and fine Sea-port Town, at the Mouth of the River *Mersee*, with a convenient Harbour, and a fine wet Dock. It has so vast a foreign or naval Commerce, more particularly in the *Guinea* and *West-India* Trade, as even to vie with, and in some Branches to exceed the City of *Bristol* itself. It may have about 300 Ships and Vessels, great and small, belonging to it, including coasting as well as foreign Trade; is thought to contain about 30,000 Inhabitants; and both it and *Manchester* are constantly increasing, not only in single Houses, but even in intire new Streets.

Westmoreland lies mostly in a marshy or moorish Country, and other Parts of it are mountainous. — *Kendal* is a considerable Place in point of Trade, Buildings, and the Number and

Wealth

Wealth of its Inhabitants, and is alſo greatly enriched by its Woollen Cloth Manufactures, and by its Druggets, Stockings, and Hats, although it has but a ſmall Harbour on the River *Can.*

Cumberland, on the *Iriſh* Sea, abounds in Pit-coal, Copper, and Lead.

In the Principality of WALES are twelve Connties, *viz.* ſix in *South-Wales*, and the like Number in *North-Wales.* The whole country is ſo vaſtly improved ſince its complete Union with *England*, as to have quite another Appearance at preſent than 200 Years ago. Its Lands well cultivated, its Towns well built and inhabited; and, although it be moſtly mountainous, it nevertheleſs affords Plenty of all the Neceſſaries of Life, either in reſpect to Corn or Cattle: It has alſo Plenty of Wood, Coals, and Turf for Fuel, and for working its Mines. The whole Principality probably containing 300,000 People. — The Town of *Pembroke* has a conſiderable naval Commerce. *Caermarthen* is a thriving, well-built, polite, and populous Place, with a good Trade. *Cardigan* Town is reaſonably large and well built, has a very briſk Trade with *Ireland* from its River *Tivy.* And here they are ſaid to catch the fineſt Salmon in all *England. Wrexham* is the largeſt Town in *Northwales*, being populous and well built; and has a good Trade in Flannels.

SCOTLAND.

Its natural Productions are Corn and Pulſe of all Kinds, horned Cattle, ſmall hardy Horſes, Sheep, Hogs, Wool, Flax, Iron, Lead, Marble, Peltry, Slate, and Hemp. It is uſually divided into thirty-one Shires and two Stewartries, and may contain 1,500,000 People. Its beſt Towns are: *Dunbar*, a well-built Royal Burgh, and a well-known Sea-port, with a good Harbour, and ſome conſiderable naval Commerce. *Edinburgh*, the Capital of *Scotland.* It is large, well built, and populous, having an eminent Univerſity, an Exchange, a noble and ſtrong Caſtle, with a Garriſon, a fine Royal Palace, and many handſome Palaces of the Nobility. The ſpacious Town and Port of *Leith*, containing two Pariſh-Churches, with a fine Quay and Pier running a great Way into the Sea, is the proper of *Edinburgh*; which has no inconſiderable foreign Trade, and large coaſting Trade; and with *Leith*, and its other Suburbs, may fairly contain 60,000 People. *Edinburgh* is, moreover, the Seat of Government of the chief

Courts

Courts of Law, and Boards of Revenue; and has many Persons of Quality and Figure always residing in it.

Borrowstonness, on the River *Forth*, is a Port of good Commerce and Shipping; and, next to *Leith*, carries on the greatest Trade to *Holland* and *France* of any in *Scotland*.— *Dumfries* is a large improving Sea-port, on the *Irish* Sea; has a considerable Number of good Ships, with a proportionable Share of foreign Commerce, and about 6000 Inhabitants. — *Port-Patrick*, a small Town, with a tolerable Harbour, being the usual Port of Passage to *Belfast*, and other Parts of the North of *Ireland*. — *Greenock*, a well-built Sea-port, with a good Share of foreign Trade, and the largest Herring-Fishery of any on the West Coast of *Scotland*.

Glasgow is a large and beautifully built City, situated in a Plain along the River *Clyde*, in a very fertile Country. It is a City of very considerable foreign as well as domestic Commerce, having many good Ships trading to our *American* Colonies, and to many other Countries. It has many excellent Manufactures of various Kinds. Its proper Harbour lies some Miles lower down the River, at a Place named *Newport-Glasgow*; yet smaller Vessels can come up to the City, and the City may possibly contain near 30,000 Inhabitants. — *Stirling* is a large and well-built Town; Ships of small Burden come up with the Tide to its Bridge. It has very considerable Manufactures of Shalloons and Serges. *Kirkaldy* is the most populous and thriving Burgh on all the Coast of *Fife*, having a considerable foreign Commerce, and much Shipping. *Dundee*, is a large and populous Town, near the Mouth of the River *Tay*: It is a Town of considerable Trade, exporting much Linen, Grain, Herrings, Peltry, &c. to sundry foreign Parts: It may contain about 10,000 Inhabitants. *New Aberdeen*, at the Mouth of the River *Dee*, is a large well-built City, and has a good dry or Tide-Harbour: a considerable Degree of foreign Commerce, and much Shipping, and above 12,000 Inhabitants. *Old-Meldrum* has good Woollen Manufactures, and a very great Trade in Wool and Linen. — From the Isle of *Skye* is carried on a very great *Herring-Fishing*, and from also some neighbouring Isles.

IRELAND.

The Kingdom of *Ireland* is a fine and fertile Island, abounding in all the Necessaries and Conveniencies that a reasonable Man can wish for, Wine only excepted. In it are to be found sundry large and opulent Cities, a great Number of handsome and well-traded Towns, and many valuable Materials for Commerce. — *Dublin*, its superb Capital, and the famous Metropolis of the whole Kingdom. Of this City it has been very frequently and confidently asserted, that, since the Year 1711, or, as others, three Years later, or since the Accession to the Crown of the illustrious House of *Hanover*, it has so rapidly increased, as, in so short a Space, to have added to her Suburbs no fewer than 4000 Houses, and 30,000 Inhabitants. It stands in so good a Country as enables it to export many Materials for Commerce, and particularly great Quantities of Salt, Provisions, Hides, Tallow, Butter, and Cheese, but principally of late Years an almost incredible Quantity of Linen of various Sorts, to the great enriching of *Ireland*. *Dublin*, therefore, with all such Advantages, cannot fail to have a great Commerce, and a numerous Shipping; and may probably contain about 100,000 Inhabitants; much about the Size of *Stockholm*, *Copenhagen*, *Berlin*, *Marseilles*, and our own *Bristol*. — *Donnegal* is a Place of some Trade; as is likewise *Enniskilling*. All wich Places, and many more, (tho' less considerable ones) are chiefly, and most industriously, employed in the Manufactures of Linen and Linen Thread, to the great Benefit of the whole Kingdom, which, by its vast annual Exportations of Linen into *England*, is enabled to pay for the great annual Importations from *England* into *Ireland*.

Cork, by far the noblest City next to *Dublin*; whether considered in respect to Magnitude, Riches, Commerce or Shipping; every one of which are truly great. More especially its Commerce to our *American* Plantations is exceeding great, for Salt Provisions of all Kinds, but Fish. — *Limerick* is a handsome, populous, well-traded and strong City, on both Sides the *Shannon*, a Place, of good Commerce and Shipping. *Kingsale* is a populous and strong Town, with an excellent Harbour and considerable Commerce and Shipping: And it is moreover, occasionally a Station for the Navy-Royal; for which End there reside at this Port proper naval Officers, Storehouses, &c.

DIALOGUES

DIALOGUES OF THE DEAD.

DIALOGUE I. *)

LOUIS LE GRAND — PETER THE GREAT.

LOUIS.

Who, Sir, could have thought, when you were learning the Trade of a ſhipwright in the Dock-yards of England and Holland, that you would ever acquire, as I had done, the ſurname of *Great.*

PETER.

Which of us beſt deſerved that Title, Poſterity will decide. But my Greatneſs appeared ſufficiently in that very Act which ſeemed to you a Debaſement.

LOUIS.

The Dignity of a King does not ſtoop to ſuch mean Employments. For my own part, I was careful never to appear to the Eyes of my Subjects or Foreigners, but in all Splendor and Majeſty of Royal Power.

PETER.

Had I remained on the Throne of Ruſſia, as my Anceſtors did, environed with all the pomp of barbarous Greatneſs, I ſhould have been idolized by my People, as much, at leaſt, as you ever were by the French. My Deſpotiſm was more abſolute, their ſervitude was more humble. But then I could not have reformed their evil Cuſtoms; have taught them Arts, Civility, Navigation, and War; have exalted them from Brutes in human ſhapes into Men. In this was ſeen the extraordinary Force of my Genius beyond any Compariſon with all other Kings, that I thought it no Degradation, or Diminutiou of my Greatneſs, to deſcend from my Throne, and go and work in the Dock-yards of a foreign Republic; to ſerve as a private ſailor in my own Fleets, and as a common ſoldier in my

*) Littleton's Dialogues of the Dead. London 1765. 8.

my own Army; till I had raised myself by my Merit in all the several steps and degrees of Promotion, up to the highest Command, and had thus induced my nobility to submit to a regular subordination in the Sea- and Land-service, by a lesson hard to their pride, and which they would not have learnt from any other Master, or by any other method of instruction.

LOUIS.

I am forced to acknowledge, that it was a great Act. When I thought it a mean one, my judgement was perverted by the Prejudices arising from my own education, and the Ridicule thrown upon it by some of my Courtiers, whose minds were too narrow to be able to comprehend the Greatness of yours in that situation.

PETER.

It was an Act of more Heroism than any ever done by Alexander or Cæsar. Nor would I consent to exchange my Glory with their's. They both did great Things; but they were at the head of great Nations, far superior in valour and military skill to those with whom they contended. I was the King of an ignorant, undisciplined, barbarous People. My Enemies were at first so superior to my Subjects, that ten thousand of them could beat a hundred thousand Russians. They had formidable navies: I had not a ship. The King of Sweden was a Prince of the most intrepid Courage, assisted by Generals of consummate Knowledge in War, and served by soldiers so disciplined, that they were become the Admiration and Terror of Europe. Yet I vanquished these soldiers; I drove that Prince to take refuge in Turkey; I won battles at Sea, as well as Land; I *new-created* my People; I gave them Arts, Sciences, Policy; I enabled them to keep all the Powers of the North in Awe and Dependance, to give Kings to Poland, to check and intimidate the Ottoman Emperors, to mix with great Weight in the Affairs of all Europe. What other Man has ever done such Wonders as these? Read all the Records of ancient and modern times, and find, if you can, one fit to be put in comparison with me!

LOUIS.

Your Glory would indeed have been supreme and unequalled, if, in civilizing your subjects, you had reformed the Brutality of your own Manners, and the barbarous Vices of your Nature. But, alas! the Legislator and Reformer of the Muscovites was drunken and cruel.

PETER.

PETER.

My Drunkenneſs I confeſs: nor will I plead, to excuſe it, the Example of Alexander. It inflamed the tempers of both, which were by nature too fiery, into furious paſſions of Anger, and produced Actions, of which our Reaſon, when ſober, was aſhamed. But the Cruelty you upbraid me with, may in ſome degree be excuſed, as neceſſary to the work I had to perform. Fear of Puniſhment was in the hearts of my barbarous Subjects the only Principle of Obedience. To make them reſpect the Royal Authority, I was obliged to arm it with all the Terrors of Rage. You had a more pliant People to govern, a People whoſe minds could be ruled, like a fine managed Horſe, with an eaſy and gentle Rein. The fear of Shame did more with them, than the fear of the *Knout* could do with the Ruſſians. The Humanity of your Character and the Ferocity of mine were equally ſuitable to the Nations over which we reigned. But what excuſe can you find for the cruel violence you employed againſt your Proteſtant Subjects? They deſired nothing but to live under the protection of Laws you yourſelf had confirmed; and they repaid that Protection by the moſt hearty Zeal for your ſervice. Yet theſe did you force, by the moſt inhuman ſeverities, either to quit the Religion in which they were bred, and which their conſciences ſtill retained, or to leave their native Land, and endure all the Woes of a perpetual Exile. If the rules of Policy could not hinder you from thus depopulating your kingdom, and transferring to foreign countries its manufactures and commerce, I am ſurpriſed that your heart itſelf did not ſtop you. It makes one ſhudder to think, that ſuch orders ſhould be ſent from the moſt poliſhed Court in Europe, as the moſt ſavage Tartars could hardly have executed without Remorſe and Compaſſion.

LOUIS.

It was not my heart, but my Religion, that dictated theſe ſeverities. My Confeſſor told me, they alone would atone for all my ſins.

PETER.

Had I believed in my Patriarch, as you believed in your Prieſt, I ſhould not have been the great Monarch that I was. — But I mean not to detract from the Merit of a Prince whoſe memory is dear to his Subjects. They are proud of having obeyed you, which is certainly the higheſt praiſe to a King. My people alſo date their glory from the Æra of

Reign. But there is this capital Diſtinction between us. The Pomp and Pageantry of ſtate were neceſſary to your Greatneſs; I was great in myſelf, great in the Energy and Powers of my Mind, great in the ſuperiority and *ſovereignty* of my Soul over all other Men.

DIALOGUE II.

MERCURY — An Engliſh DUELLIST — A North-American SAVAGE.

The DUELLIST.

Mercury, Charon's Boat is on the other ſide of the Water. Allow me, before it returns, to have ſome converſation with the North-American Savage, whom you brought hither with me. I never before ſaw one of that *Species*. He looks very grim. — Pray, Sir, what is your Name? I underſtand you ſpeak Engliſh.

SAVAGE.

Yes, I learnt it in my Childhood, having been bred for ſome years among the Engliſh of New York. But, before I was a Man, I returned to my valiant Countrymen, the *Mohawks;* and having been villainouſly cheated by one of yours in the ſale of ſome Rum, I never cared to have any thing to do with them afterwards. Yet I took up the Hatchet for them with the reſt of my Tribe in the late War againſt France, and was killed while I was out upon a Scalping Party. But I died very well ſatisfied: for my Brethren were victorious; and, before I was ſhot, I had glorioùſly ſcalped ſeven Men, and five Women and Children. In a former War I had performed ſtill greater Exploits. My Name is *the bloody Bear:* it was given me to expreſs my Fierceneſs and Valour.

DUELLIST.

Bloody Bear, I reſpect you, and am much your humble Servant. My Name is Tom Puſhwell, very well known at Arthur's. I am a Gentleman by my Birth, and by Profeſſion a Gameſter and Man of Honour. I have killed Men in fair Fighting, in honourable ſingle combat, but don't underſtand cutting the Throats of Women and Children.

SAVAGE.

Sir, that is our way of making War. Every Nation has its Cuſtoms. But, by the Grimneſs of your Countenance,

and

that Hole in your Breaſt, I preſume you were killed, as I was, in ſome ſcalping Party. How happened it that your Enemy did not take off your Scalp?

DUELLIST.

Sir, I was killed in a Duel. A Friend of mine had lent me a ſum of Money. After two or three years, being in great Want himſelf, he aſked me to pay him. I thought his Demand, which was ſomewhat peremptory, an Affront to my Honour, and ſent him a Challenge. We met in Hide-Park. The Fellow could not fence: I was abſolutely the adroiteſt Swordſman in England. So I gave him three or four Wounds; but at laſt he run upon me with ſuch Impetuoſity, that he put me out of my Play, and I could not prevent him from whipping me through the Lungs. I died the next day, as a Man of Honour ſhould, without any ſniveling Signs of Contrition or Repentance: and he will follow me ſoon; for his Surgeon has declared his Wounds to be mortal. It is ſaid, that his Wife is dead of Grief, and that his Family of ſeven Children will be undone by his Death. So I am well revenged, and that is a Comfort. For my Part, I had no Wife. — I always hated Marriage: my Miſtreſs will take good care of herſelf, and my Children are provided for at the Foundling-Hoſpital.

SAVAGE.

Mercury, I won't go in a Boat with that Fellow. He has murdered his Countryman: he has murdered his Friend: I ſay poſitively, I won't go in a Boat with that Fellow. I will ſwim over the River: I can ſwim like a Duck.

MERCURY.

Swim over the Styx! it muſt not be done; it is againſt the Laws of Pluto's Empire. You muſt go in the Boat, and be quiet.

SAVAGE.

Don't tell me of Laws: I am a Savage: I value no Laws. Talk of Laws to the Engliſhman: there are Laws in his Country, and yet you ſee he did not regard them. For they could never allow him to kill his Fellow-ſubject, in time of Peace, becauſe he aſked him to pay a Debt. I know indeed, that the Engliſh are *a barbarous Nation;* but they can't poſſibly be ſo brutal as to make ſuch things lawful.

MERCURY.

You reaſon well againſt Him. But how comes it that you are ſo offended with Murder; you, who have frequently

maſſacred Women in their Sleep, and Children in the Cradle?

SAVAGE.

I killed none but my Enemies: I never killed my own Countrymen: I never killed my Friend: — Here, take my Blanket, and let it come over in the Boat; but ſee that the Murderer does not ſit upon it, or touch it. If he does, I will burn it inſtantly in the Fire I ſee yonder. Farewell. — I am determined to ſwim over the Water.

MERCURY.

By this touch of my Wand I deprive thee of all thy Strength. — Swim now if thou canſt.

SAVAGE.

This is a potent Enchanter. — Reſtore me my Strength, and I promiſe to obey thee.

MERCURY.

I reſtore it; but be orderly, and do as I bid you: Otherwiſe worſe will befall you.

DUELLIST.

Mercury, leave him to me. I'll tutor him for you. Sirrah Savage, doſt thou pretend to be aſhamed of my company? Doſt thou know that I have kept the beſt company in England?

SAVAGE.

I know thou art a Scoundrel. — Not pay thy Debts! kill thy Friend who lent thee Money for aſking thee for it! Get out of my ſight. I will drive thee into the Styx.

MERCURY.

Stop. — I command thee. No Violence. — Talk to him calmly.

SAVAGE.

I muſt obey thee. — Well, Sir, let me know what Merit you had, to introduce you into good company? What could you do?

DUELLIST.

Sir, I gamed, as I told you. — Beſides, I kept a good table. — I *eat* as well as any Man either in England or France.

SAVAGE.

Eat! did you ever eat the liver of a Frenchman, or his Leg, or his Shoulder! There is *fine Eating!* I have eat twenty. — My table was always *well ſerved*. My Wife was eſteemed the beſt Cook for the dreſſing of Man's Fleſh in all North-

North-America. You will not pretend to compare your *Eating* with mine.

DUELLIST.

I danced very finely.

SAVAGE.

I'll dance with thee for thy Ears. — I can dance all day long. I can dance the *War-Dance* with more Spirit than any Man of my Nation. Let us see thee begin it. How thou standest like a Post! Has Mercury struck thee with his enfeebling Rod? Or art thou ashamed to let us see how aukward thou art? If he would permit me, I would teach thee to dance in a way that thou hast never yet learnt. But what else canst thou do, thou bragging *Rascal?*

DUELLIST.

O Heavens! must I bear this! What can I do with this Fellow? I have neither Sword, nor Pistol. And his shade seems to be twice as strong as mine.

MERCURY.

You must answer his Questions. It was your own Desire to have a conversation with him. He is not well bred; but he will tell you some truths which you must necessarily hear, when you come before Rhadamanthus. He asked you what you could do besides Eating and Dancing.

DUELLIST.

I sung very agreeably.

SAVAGE.

Let me hear you sing your *Death Song*, or the *War Whoop*. I challenge you to sing. — Come, begin. — The Fellow is mute. — Mercury, this is a *Liar.* — He has told us nothing but *Lies.* Let me pull out his tongue.

DUELLIST.

The Lie given me! — and alas! I dare not resent it. What an indelible Disgrace to the family of the Pushwells! This indeed is *Damnation.*

MERCURY.

Here, Charon, take these two Savages to your Care. How far the Barbarism of the Mohawk will excuse his horrid Acts, I leave Minos to judge. But what can be said for the other, for the Englishman? The Custom of Duelling? A bad Excuse at the best! but here it cannot avail. The Spirit that urged him to draw his Sword against his Friend is not that of *Honour;* it is the Spirit of the Furies, and to them he must go.

SAVAGE.

If he is to be punifhed for his wickednefs turn him over to me. I perfectly underftand the Art of tormenting. Sirrah, I begin my Work with this *kick on your Breech.*

DUELLIST.

Oh my Honour, my Honour, to what Infamy art thou fallen!

DIALOGUE III.

ALEXANDER THE GREAT.

CHARLES the Twelfth, King of Sweden.

ALEXANDER.

Your Majefty feems in great Wrath! Who has offended you?

CHARLES.

The Offence is to you as much as me. Here is a Fellow admitted into Elyfium, who has affronted us both: an Englifh Poet, one Pope. He has called us *two Madmen!*

ALEXANDER.

I have been unlucky in Poets. No Prince ever was fonder of the Mufes than I, or has received from them a more ungrateful Return! When I was alive, I declared that I envied Achilles, becaufe he had a Homer to celebrate his Exploits; and I moft bountifully rewarded Chœrilus, a Pretender to Poetry, for writing Verfes on mine: but my Liberality, inftead of doing me Honour, has fince drawn upon me the Ridicule of Horace, a witty Roman Poet, and Lucan, another Verfifier of the fame nation, has loaded my Memory with the harfheft Invectives.

CHARLES.

I know nothing of thefe; but I know that in my time, a pert French Satirift, one Boileau, made fo free with your character, that I tore his book foor having abufed my favourite Hero. And now this faucy Englifhman has libelled us both. — But I have a Propofal to make to you for the Reparation of our Honour. If you will join with me, we will turn all thefe infolent Scriblers out of Elyfium, and throw them down headlong to the bottom of Tartarus, in fpite of Pluto and all his Guards.

ALEXNDER.

ALEXANDER.

This is juſt ſuch a Scheme as that you formed at Bender, to maintain yourſelf there, with the aid of three hundred Swedes, againſt the whole Force of the Ottoman Empire. And I muſt ſay, that ſuch Follies gave the Engliſh Poet too much cauſe to call you a Madman.

CHARLES.

If my Heroiſm was Madneſs, your's, I preſume, was not Wiſdom.

ALEXANDER.

There was a vaſt difference between your Conduct and mine. Let Poets or Declaimers ſay what they will, Hiſtory ſhews, that I was not only the braveſt Soldier, but one of the ableſt Commanders the World has ever ſeen. Whereas you, by imprudently leading your Army into vaſt and barren Deſerts, at the approach of the Winter, expoſed it to periſh in its march for want of Subſiſtence, loſt your Artillery, loſt a great number of your Soldiers, and were forced to fight with the Muſcovites under ſuch diſadvantages, as made it almoſt impoſſible for you to conquer.

CHARLES.

I will not diſpute your Superiority as a General. It is not for me, a mere Mortal, to contend with *the Son of Jupiter Ammon.*

ALEXANDER.

I ſuppoſe you think my pretending that *Jupiter* was my Father, as much entitles me to the name of a Madman, as your extravagant behaviour at Bender does you. But you are greatly miſtaken. It was not my Vanity, but my Policy, which ſet up that Pretenſion. When I propoſed to undertake the conqueſt of Aſia, it was neceſſary for me to appear to the People ſomething more than a Man. They had been uſed to the Idea of *Demi-god Heroes.* I therefore claimed an equal Deſcent with Oſiris and Seſoſtris, with Bacchus and Hercules, the former Conquerors of the Eaſt. The Opinion of my Divinity aſſiſted my Arms, and ſubdued all Nations before me, from the Granicus to the Ganges. But, though I called myſelf *the Son of Jupiter*, and kept up the Veneration that name inſpired, by a Courage which ſeemed more than human, and by the ſublime Magnanimity of all my Behaviour, I did not forget that I was *the Son of Philip.* I uſed the Policy of my Father, and the wiſe Leſſons of

Ariſtotle, whom he had made my Preceptor, in the conduct of all my great Deſigns. It was *the Son of Philip* who planted Greek Colonies in Aſia, as far as the Indies; who formed Projects of Trade more extenſive than his Empire itſelf; who laid the foundations of them in the midſt of his Wars, who built Alexandria, to be the Centre and Staple of Commerce between Europe, Aſia, and Africk; who ſent Nearchus to navigate the unknown Indian Seas, and intended to have gone himſelf from thoſe Seas to the Pillars of Hercules, that is, to have explored the Paſſage round Africk, the Diſcovery of which has ſince been ſo glorious to Vaſco de Gama. It was *the Son of Philip*, who, after ſubduing the Perſians, governed them with ſuch Lenity, ſuch Juſtice and ſuch Wiſdom, that they loved him even more than ever they had loved their natural Kings; and who, by Intermarriages, and all Methods that could beſt eſtabliſh a Coalition between the Conquerors and the Conquered, united them into one People. But what, Sir, did you do, to advance the Trade of your Subjects, to procure any Benefit to thoſe you had vanquiſhed, or to convert any Enemy into a Friend?

CHARLES.

When I might eaſily have made myſelf King of Poland, and was adviſed to do ſo, by Count Piper, my favourite Miniſter, I generouſly gave that Kingdom to Staniſlas, as you had given a great part of your Conqueſts in India to Porus, beſides his own Dominions, which you reſtored to him entire, after you had beaten his Army and taken him Captive.

ALEXANDER.

I gave him the Government of thoſe Countries under me, and as my Lieutenant; which was the beſt method of preſerving my Power in Conqueſts, where I could not leave Garriſons ſufficieut to maintain them. The ſame Policy was afterwards practiſed by the Romans, who of all Conquerors, except me, were the greateſt Politicians. But neither was I, nor were they ſo extravagant, as to conquer only for Others, or dethrone Kings with no view, but merely to have the pleaſure of beſtowing their Crowns on ſome of their ſubjects, without any advantage to Ourſelves. Nevertheleſs, I will own, that my Expedition to India was an Exploit of *the Son of Jupiter*, not of *the Son of Philip*. I had done better if I had ſtaid to give more Conſiſtency to my Perſian and Grecian Empires, inſtead of attempting new Conqueſts, and at ſuch a diſtance, ſo ſoon. Yet even this War was of Uſe to hinder

my

my Troops from being corrupted by the Effeminacy of Aſia, and to keep up that univerſal Awe of my Name, which in thoſe Countries was the great Support of my Power.

CHARLES.

In the unwearied Activity with which I proceeded from one Enterprize to another, I dare call myſelf your equal. Nay, I may pretend to a higher Glory than you, becauſe you only went on from Victory to Victory; but the greateſt Loſſes were not able to diminiſh my Ardour, or ſtop the Efforts of my daring invincible Spirit.

ALEXANDER.

You ſhewed in Adverſity much more Magnanimity than you did in Proſperity. How unworthy of a Prince who imitated me, was your behaviour to the King your Arms had vanquiſhed! The compelling Auguſtus to write himſelf a Letter of Congratulation to one of his Vaſſals, whom you had Placed in his Throne, was the very Reverſe of my treatment of Porus and Darius. It was an ungenerous inſult upon his ill fortune! It was the Triumph of a little and a low Mind! The Viſit you made him immediately after that Inſult was a farther contempt, offenſive to him, and both uſeleſs and dangerous to yourſelf.

CHARLES.

I feared no Danger from it. — I knew he durſt not uſe the Power I gave him to hurt me.

ALEXANDER.

If his Reſentment, in that inſtant, had prevailed over his Fear, as it was likely to do, you would have periſhed deſervedly by your Inſolence and Preſumption. For my part, intrepid as I was in all Dangers, which I thought it was neceſſary or proper for me to meet, I never put myſelf one moment in the Power of an Enemy whom I had offended. But you had the Raſhneſs of *Folly* as well as of *Heroiſm*. A falſe Opinion conceived of your Enemy's Weakneſs proved at laſt your Undoing. When, in anſwer to ſome reaſonable Propoſitions of Peace, ſent to you by the Czar, you ſaid, "*You would come and treat with him at Moſcow;*" he replied very juſtly, "*That you affected to act like Alexander, but ſhould not find in Him a Darius.*" And, doubtleſs, you ought to have been better acquainted with the Character of that Prince. Had Perſia been governed by a *Peter Alexiowitz* when I made war againſt it, I ſhould have acted more cautiouſly,

cautiously, and not have counted so much on the Superiority of my Troops in Valour and Discipline, over an Army commanded by a King, who was so capable of instructiug them in all they wanted.

CHARLES.

The Battle of Narva, won by eight thousand Swedes against fourscore thousand Muscovites, seemed to authorize my Contempt of the Nation and their Prince.

ALEXANDER.

It happened that their Prince was not present in that Battle. But he had not as yet had the time, which was necessary to instruct his barbarous Soldiers. You gave him that time and he made so good a use of it, that you found at Pultawa the Muscovites become a different Nation. If you had followed the Blow you gave them at Narva, and marched directly to Moscow, you might have destroyed their Hercules in his Cradle. But you suffered him to grow, till his strength was mature, and then acted as if he had been still in his Childhood.

CHARLES.

I must confess you excelled me in Conduct, in Policy, and in true Magnanimity. But my Liberality was not inferior to your's; and neither you nor any Mortal ever surpassed me in the Enthusiasm of Courage. I was also free from those Vices which sullied your Character. I never was drunk; I killed no Friend in the Riot of a Feast; I fired no Palace at the Instigation of a Harlot.

ALEXANDER.

It may perhaps be admitted as some Excuse for my Drunkenness, that the Persians esteemed it an Excellence in their Kings to be able to drink a great quantity of Wine; and the Macedonians were far from thinking it a Dishonour. But you were as frantic, and as cruel, when sober, as I was, when drunk. You were sober when you resolved to continue in Turkey against the Will of your Host, the *Grand Signor*. You were sober when you commanded the unfortunate Patkull, whose only crime was his having maintained the Liberties of his Country, and who bore the sacred Character of an Embassador, to be broken alive on the Wheel, against the Laws of Nations, and those of Humanity, more inviolable still to a generous Mind. You were likewise sober when you wrote to the Senate of Sweden, who, upon a Report of

of your Death, endeavoured to take ſome care of your Kingdom, *That, you would ſend them one of your Boots, and from That they ſhould receive their Orders, if they pretended to meddle in Government:* An inſult much worſe than any the Macedonians complained of from me, when I was moſt heated with Wine and with Adulation! As for my Chaſtity, it was not ſo perfect as your's, though on ſome Occaſions I obtained great Praiſe for my Contience: but, perhaps, if you had been not quite ſo inſenſible to the Charms of the fair Sex it would have mitigated and ſoftened the Fierceneſs, the Pride, and the Obſtinacy of your Nature.

CHARLES.

It would have ſoftened me into a Woman, or, what I think ſtill more contemptible, the Slave of a Woman. But you ſeem to inſinuate that you never were cruel or frantic unleſs when you were drunk; This I abſolutely deny. — You were not drunk, when you crucified Hephæſtion's Phyſician, for not curing a Man who killed himſelf by his Intemperance in his Sickneſs, nor when you ſacrificed to the Manes of that favourite Officer the whole Nation of the Cuſſeans, Men, Women, and Children, who were entirely innocent of his Death; becauſe you had read in Homer, that Achilles had immolated ſome Troyan Captives on the Tomb of Patroclus. I could mention other Proofs that your Paſſions inflamed you as much as Wine: but theſe are ſufficient.

ALEXANDER.

I can't deny that my Paſſions were ſometimes ſo violent as to deprive me for a while the Uſe of my Reaſon; eſpecially when the Pride of ſuch amazing Succeſſes, the Servitude of the Perſians, and Barbarian Flattery, had intoxicated my Mind. To bear, at my Age, with continual Moderation, ſuch Fortune as mine, was hardly in human Nature. As for you, there was an Exceſs and Intemperance in your Virtues, which turned them all into Vices. And one Virtue you wanted, which in a Prince is very commendable, and beneficial to the Public, I mean the Love of Science and to the elegant Arts. Under my Care and Patronage they were carried in Greece to their utmoſt Perfection. Ariſtotle, Apelles, and Lyſippus were among the Glories of my Reign: Your's was illuſtrated only by Battles. — Upon the whole, though, from ſome Reſemblance between us, I ſhould naturally be inclined to decide in your favour, yet I muſt give the Priority

in

in Renown to your Enemy, Peter Alexiowitz. That great Monarch *raiſed* his Country; You *ruined* your's. He was a *Legiſlator*, you were a *Tyrant*.

DIALOGUE IV.

HERNANDO CORTEZ — WILLIAM PENN.

CORTEZ.

Is it poſſible, William Penn, that you ſhould ſeriouſly compare your Glory with mine! The Planter of a ſmall Colony in North-America preſume to vie with the Conqueror of the Great Mexican Empire!

PENN.

Friend, I pretend to no Glory, — the LORD preſerve me from it. — All Glory is *his*; but this I ſay, that I was *his Inſtrument* in a more glorious Work than that performed by thee: incomparably more glorious.

CORTEZ.

Doſt thou not know, William Penn, that with leſs than ſix hundred Spaniſh Foot, eighteen Horſe, and a few ſmall pieces of Cannon, I fought and defeated innumerable Armies of very brave Men, dethroned an Emperor who had been raiſed to the Throne by his Valour, and excelled all his Countrymen in the Science of War, as much as they excelled all the reſt of the Weſt Indian Nations? that I made him my Priſoner in his own Capital; and, after he had been depoſed and ſlain by his Subjects, vanquiſhed and took Guatimozin, his ſucceſſor, and accompliſhed my Conqueſt of the whole Empire of Mexico, which I loyally annexed to the Spaniſh Crown? Doſt thou not know, that, in doing theſe wonderful Acts, I ſhewed as much Courage as Alexander the Great, as much Prudence as Cæſar? That, by my Policy, I ranged under my Banners the powerful Commonwealth of Tlaſcala, and brought them to aſſiſt me in ſubduing the Mexicans, though with the loſs of their own beloved Independence? and that, to conſummate my Glory, when the Governor of Cuba, Velaſquez, would have taken my Command from me, and ſacrificed me to his Envy and Jealouſy, I drew from him all his forces and joined them to my own, ſhewing myſelf as ſuperior to all other Spaniards as I was to the Indians?

PENN.

PENN.

I know very well that thou waſt as fierce as a Lion, and as ſubtle as a Serpent. The Devil, perhaps, may place thee as high *in his black liſt of Heroes* as Alexander or Cæſar. It is not my Buſineſs to interfere with him in ſettling thy Rank. But hark thee, Friend Cortez — What Right hadſt thou, or had the King of Spain himſelf, to the Mexican Empire? Anſwer me that, if thou canſt.

CORTEZ.

The Pope gave it to my maſter.

PENN.

The Devil offered to give our LORD all the Kingdoms of the Earth, and I ſuppoſe the Pope, as *his Vicar*, gave thy Maſter this: in return for which he *fell down and worſhipped him*, like an Idolater as he was. But ſuppoſe the High Prieſt of Mexico had taken it into his head to give Spain to Motezuma, would his Grant have been good?

CORTEZ.

Theſe are Queſtions of Caſuiſtry, which it is not the buſineſs of a Soldier to decide. We leave that to Gownſmen. But pray, Mr. Penn, what Right had you to the Province you ſettled?

PENN.

An honeſt Right of fair Purchaſe. We gave the native Savages ſome things they wanted, and they in return gave us Lands they did not want. All was amicably agreed on, not a drop of blood ſhed to ſtain our Acquiſition.

CORTEZ.

I am afraid there was a little *Fraud* in the Purchaſe. Thy Followers, William Penn, are ſaid to think cheating in a quiet and ſober way no mortal ſin.

PENN.

The Saints are always calumniated by the Ungodly. But it was a Sight which an Angel might contemplate with delight, to behold the Colony I ſettled! To ſee us living with the Indians like innocent Lambs, and taming the Ferocity of their barbarous Manners by the Gentleneſs of ours! To ſee the whole Country, which before was an uncultivated Wilderneſs, rendered as fertile and fair as the Garden of GOD! O Hernando Cortez, Hernando Cortez! didſt thou leave the great Empire of Mexico in that State? No, thou hadſt turned

thofe delightful and populous Regions into a Defert, a Defert flooded with Blood. Doft thou not remember that moft infernal Scene, when the noble Emperor Guatimozin was ftretched out by thy Soldiers upon hot burning Coals, to make him difcover into what part of the Lake of Mexico he had thrown the Royal Treafures? Are not his Groans ever founding in the ears of thy Confcience? Do not they rend thy hard Heart, and ftrike thee with more Horror than the Yells of the Furies?

CORTEZ.

Alas! I was not prefent when that dire Act was done. Had I been there I would have forbidden it. My nature was mild.

PENN.

Thou waft the Captain of that Band of Robbers, who did this horrid Deed. The advantage they had drawn from thy Counfels and Conduct enabled them to commit it: and thy Skill faved them afterwards from the Vengeance that was due to fo enormous a Crime. The enraged Mexicans would have properly punifhed them for it, if they had not had thee for their General, thou *Lieutenant of Satan.*

CORTEZ.

The *Saints* I find can *rail;* William Penn. But how do you hope to preferve this *admirable* Colony which you have fettled? Your people, you tell me, live *like innocent Lambs.* Are there no *Wolves* in North America to devour thofe *Lambs?* But if the Americans fhould continue in perpetual peace with all your Succeffors there, the French will not. Are the Inhabitants of Penfylvania to make war againft *them* with Prayers and Preaching? If fo, that Garden of GOD which you fay you have planted, will undoubtedly be their Prey, and they will take from you your Property, your Laws, and your Religion.

PENN.

The LORD's will be done. The LORD will defend us, againft the rage of our Enemies if it be his good Pleafure.

CORTEZ.

Is this the Wifdom of a great Legiflator? I have heard fome of your Countrymen compare you to Solon! Did Solon, think you, give Laws to a People, and leave thofe Laws and that People at the Mercy of every Invader? The firft Bufinefs of Legiflature is to provide a military Strength that may defend

defend the whole Syſtem. If a Houſe is built in a land of Robbers, without a Gate to ſhut, or a Bolt or Bar to ſecure it, what avails it how well-proportioned, or how commodious the Architecture of it may be? It is richly furniſhed within? the more it will tempt the hands of Violence and of Rapine to ſeize its Wealth. The World, William Penn, is all a Land of Robbers. Any State or Commonwealth erected therein muſt be well fenced and ſecured by good military Inſtitutions; or, the happier it is in all other reſpects, the greater will be its Danger, the more ſpeedy its Deſtruction. Perhaps the neighbouring Engliſh Colonies may for a while protect your's: but that precarious Security cannot always preſerve you. Your Plan of Government muſt be changed, or your Colony will be loſt. What I have ſaid is alſo applicable to Great Britain itſelf. If an Encreaſe of it's Wealth be not accompanied with an Encreaſe of it's Force, that Wealth will become the Prey of ſome of the neighbouring Nations, in which the Martial Spirit is more prevalent than the Commercial. And whatever praiſe may be due to its civil Inſtitutions, if they are not guarded by a wiſe Syſtem of military Policy, they will be found of no value, being unable to prevent their own diſſolution.

PENN.

Theſe are Suggeſtions of Human Wiſdom. The Doctrines I held, were *inſpired;* they came *from above.*

CORTEZ.

It is blaſphemy to ſay, *that any Folly could come from the Fountain of Wiſdom.* Whatever is inconſiſtent with the great Laws of Nature, and with the neceſſary State of Human Society, cannot poſſibly have been inſpired by GOD. Selfdefence is as neceſſary to Nations as to Men. And ſhall Particulars have a Right which Nations have not? True Religion, William Penn, is the Perfection of Reaſon. Fanaticiſm is the Diſgrace, the Deſtruction of Reaſon.

PENN.

Though what thou ſayeſt ſhould be true, it does not come well from thy mouth. Go to the Inquiſition, and tell *them* of *Reaſon*, and *the great Laws of Nature.* They will broil thee, as thy Soldiers broiled the unhappy Guatimozin. Why doſt thou turn pale? Is it the name of the Inquiſition, or the name of Guatimozin, that troubles and affrights thee?

O wretched Man! who madeſt thyſelf a voluntary Inſtrument to carry into a newdiſcovered World that helliſh Tribunal. Tremble and ſhake when thou thinkeſt, that every Murder the Inquiſitors have committed, every Torture they have inflicted on the innocent Indians, is originally owing to thee. Thou muſt anſwer to God for all their Inhumanity, for all their Injuſtice. What wouldſt thou give to part with the Renown of thy Conqueſts, and to have a conſcience as pure and undiſturbed as mine?

CORTEZ.

I feel the force of thy Words. They pierce me like Daggers. I can never, never be happy, while I retain any memory of the Ills I have cauſed. — Yet I thought I did right I thought I laboured to advance the Glory of God, and propagate in the remoteſt Parts of the Earth his holy Religion. He will be merciful to well deſigning and pious Error. Thou alſo wilt have need of that gracious Indulgence; though not, I own, ſo much as I.

PENN.

Aſk thy Heart, whether Ambition was not thy real Motive, and Zeal the Pretence?

CORTEZ.

Aſk thine, whether thy Zeal had no worldly Views, and whether thou didſt believe all the Nonſenſe of the Sect, at the head of which thou waſt pleaſed to become a Legiſlator. Adieu. — Self-Examination requires Retirement.

DIALOGUE V.

MERCURY — and a modern fine LADY.

MRS. MODISH.

Indeed, Mr. Mercury, I cannot have the pleaſure of waiting upon you now. I am engaged, abſolutely engaged.

MERCURY.

I know you have an amiable affectionate huſband, and ſeveral fine Children; but you need not be told, that neither conjugal attachments, maternal affections, nor even the care of a Kingdom's welfare or a Nation's glory, can excuſe a perſon who has received a ſummons to the realms of Death. If the grim meſſenger was not as peremptory as unwelcome, Charon would

would not get a paſſenger, (except now and then an hypochondriacal Engliſhman) once in a century. You muſt be content to leave your huſband and family, and paſs the Styx.

Mrs. Modish.

I did not mean to inſiſt on any engagement with my huſband and children; I never thought myſelf engaged to them. I had no engagements but ſuch as were common to women of my rank. Look on my Chimney-piece, and you will ſee I was engaged to the Play on Mondays, Balls on Tueſdays, the Opera on Saturdays, and to Card-aſſemblies the reſt of the week, for two months to come; and it would be the rudeſt thing in the world not to keep my appointments. If you will ſtay for me till the Summer-ſeaſon, I will wait on you with all my heart. Perhaps the Elyſian Fields may be leſs deteſtable than the country in our world. Pray have you a fine Vauxhall and Ranelagh? I think I ſhould not diſlike drinking the Lethe Waters when you have a full Seaſon.

Mercury.

Surely you could not like to drink the waters of Oblivion, who have made Pleaſure the Buſineſs, end, and aim of your Life! It is good to drown cares, but who would waſh away the remembrance of a Life of Gaiety and Pleaſure.

Mrs. Modish.

Diverſion was indeed the buſineſs of my Life, but as to Pleaſure I have enjoyed none ſince the novelty of my amuſements was gone off. Can one be pleaſed with ſeeing the ſame thing over and over again? Late hours and fatigue gave me the Vapours, ſpoiled the natural chearfulneſs of my Temper, and even in youth wore away my youthful vivacity.

Mercury.

If this way of Life did not give you Pleaſure, why did you continue in it? I ſuppoſe you did not think it was very meritorious?

Mrs. Modish.

I was too much engaged to think at all: ſo far indeed my manner of Life was agreeable enough. My friends always told me diverſions were neceſſary, and my Doctor aſſured me diſſipation was good for my Spirits; my huſband inſiſted that it was not, and you know that one loves to oblige one's friends,

 comply

comply with one's Doctor, and contradict one's husband and besides I was ambitious to be thought *du Bon ton.* *)

MERCURY.

Bon ton! what is that, Madam? Pray define it.

Mrs. BODISH.

Oh Sir, excuse me, it is one of the Privileges of the *Bon ton* never to define, or be defined. It is the child and the parent of Jargon. It is — I can never tell you what it is: but I will try to tell you what it is not. In conversation it is not Wit; in manners it is not Politeness; in behaviour it is not Address; but it is a little like them all. It can only belong to people of a certain rank, who live in a certain manner, with certain Persons, who have not certain Virtues, and who have certain Vices, and who inhabit a certain Part of the Town. Like a place by courtesy, it gets an higher rank than the person can claim, but which those who have a legal title to precedency dare not dispute, for fear of being thought not to understand the rules of Politeness. Now, Sir, I have told you as much as I know of it, though I have admired and aimed at it all my life.

MERCURY.

Then, Madam, you have wasted your time, faded your Beauty, and destroyed your health, for the laudable purposes of contradicting your husband, and being this something and this nothing called the *Bon ton.*

Mrs. MODISH.

What would you have had me do.

MERCURY.

I will follow your mode of instructing. I will tell you what I would not have had you do. I would not have had you sacrifice your time, your reason, and your Duties, to fashion and folly. I would not have had you neglect your husbands happiness, and your childrens education.

Mrs. MODISH.

As to the Education of my Daughters, I spared no expence. They had a dancing-master, music-master, and drawing-master; and a French governess to teach them behaviour and the French Language.

MERCURY.

*) *Du bon ton* is a cant Phrase in the modern French Language for the fashionable Air of Conversation and Manners.

MERCURY.

So their religion, ſentiments and manners were to be learnt from a dancing-maſter, muſic-maſter, and a chambermaid! Perhaps they might prepare them to catch the *Bon ton.* Your daughters muſt have been ſo educated as to fit them to be wives without conjugal affection, and mothers without maternal care. I am ſorry for the ſort of life they are commencing and for that which you have juſt concluded. Minos is a ſour old Gentleman, without the leaſt ſmattering of the *Bon ton,* and I am in a fright for you. The beſt thing I can adviſe you is, to do in this world as you did in the other, keep happineſs in your view, but never take the road that leads to it. Remain on this ſide the Styx; wander about without end or aim; look into the Elyſian Fields, but never attempt to enter into them, leſt Minos ſhould puſh you into Tartarus: for Duties neglected may bring on a Sentence not much leſs ſevere than Crimes committed.

ACCOUNT
OF THE
PRESENT KING OF SPAIN. *)

This day I have ſeen the King; and I muſt ſay that a prominent noſe, a piercing eye, and a ſerene countenance, make him look much better than his coin repreſents him. I have ſeen ſeveral portraits of him, even one by his favourite *Mengs:* but neither *Mengs*, nor any other painter, had given me a true idea of his face, which is pleaſing, though made up of irregular features.

As to his perſon, it is of a good ſize, and his walk quite *Bourbonian;* that is, errect and ſteady. He appears to be robuſt, and I am told that he has a great deal of bodily ſtrength. His complexion is quite ſun-burnt, which is undoubtedly the conſequence of his paſſion for the chace. In this reſpect he is a true Meleager. No degree of heat or cold can keep him from this exerciſe. You may poſſibly think it worth the while

*) Barretti's Journey from London to Genoa, through England, Portugal, Spain and France. London 1770. 8.

while to read an account of the life he leads; and here it is, as I had it from people who have been daily witneſſes of it for many years.

Every day in the year he gets up about ſix, and exactly at ſeven comes out of his bed-room in his night-gown. He finds waiting in the anti-chamber a *Gentilhombre de Camera*, a *Mayordomo de Semana*, a phyſician, a ſurgeon, and ſeveral other regular attendants, with whom he interchanges words while dreſſing. The Gentilhombre, kneeling on one knee, preſents a diſh of chocolate; which the King drinks almoſt cold. He then diſmiſſes ſome of them with a nod, enters his private chapel, and hears a maſs: then retires to a cloſet, to which no body is ever admitted, and there reads or writes, eſpecially on thoſe days that he does not intend to go a hunting in the morning.

About eleven he comes out of the cloſet to meet the whole royal family. They all kiſs his hand, or offer to do it, lowering a knee. He embraces them all, kiſſing the Princes at the cheek, and the Princeſſes on the forehead.

The royal family withdraw after a little chit-chat, and he gives a momentary audience to his confeſſor: then ſpeaks to thoſe miniſters of ſtate, who have any buſineſs to communicate, or paper to ſign. Then the Family Ambaſſadors come in: that is, the French and the Neapolitan. With them the King interchanges words for a quarter of an hour; ſeldom more. Juſt againſt the time that he is going to dine, the other Ambaſſadors and foreign Miniſters come in. Exactly at twelve he ſits down to table, quite alone now as his queen is dead. The Ambaſſadors and foreign Miniſters, his own Miniſters of State, the great officers of his army, and ſeveral other great perſonages, pay their court while he falls to eating, and all thoſe whom the guards have permitted to get in, croud round the table to ſee him dine. The Cardinal-patriarch of the Indies ſays grace, not as Cardinal or Patriarch, but as his chief Chaplain.

The ceremony of the table is this. The *Mayordomo Mayor* ſtands on the King's right hand, and a captain of his body-guards on his left. One of the weekly Mayordomos, two *Gentilhombres de Camera*, and a croud of pages and ſervants attend promiſcuouſly. One of the two Gentilhombres carves, the other gives him drink. The diſhes, all covered, are brought in one by one in an uninterrupted ſucceſſion by pages and each diſh is put into the hands of the carving Gentilhombre,

who

who takes it with one hand, uncovers it with the other, and presents it to the King. The King gives a nod of approbation or disapprobation at every dish. Those that are approved, the Gentilhombre places upon the Table: the rest are carried back. Many howewer are the dishes approved, which still are not touched as the King eats only of the plainest, and always with a good appetite.

The Gentilhombre who gives him drink, pours first a few drops of wine and water in a silver-salver that has a beak, and drinks that himself; then kneels on one knee, and pours of both to the king, first the water, then the wine, which is always Burgundy.

When the King has drank his first glass, the Ambassadors and foreign Ministers, who stood the while and all in a row on the King's right hand, make their bows, and go to pay their respects to the rest of the royal family that are all at their dinners each in his or her own appartment, the Prince of Asturias alone, Don Luis alone, the Infanta alone and the two younger Infantes together. All these tables are sumptuous.

Near a hundred dishes are generally served to the King, of which about forty are laid upon the table. When they are removed, an ample desert succeeds: but he seldom tastes of it; except sometimes a little bit of cheese and some fruit. The last thing that is presented is a glass of canary wine with a sweet biscuit. He breaks the biscuit in two, steps it in the wine, and eats it, but never drinks the wine.

A moment before he rises from table, which lasts near an hour, the Ambassadors, and foreign Ministers return, pass before him, and go into an adjoining room, where they wait for his coming. With them he converses about half an hour upon indifferent matters.

He then re-enters his private apartment to put on his huntingdress; that is a grey frock of coarse cloth, made at Segovia on purpose for him, and a leather waistcoat. The leather breeches he always puts on when he gets from bed, especially on those days that he intends to go a-hunting. Light boots, hat flapp'd before, and strong leather gloves complete this dress. While the boots are putting on, the *Sommelier de Corps* (Duke of Losada) gives him a dish of coffee. Between one and two he steps into his coach drawn by six or eight mules, and away with his brother Don Luis the mules galloping *ventre à terre*. Half a dozen of his

body-guards precede the coach on horse-back, and three footmen ride behind it.

No bad weather, as I said, is ever on obstacle to his going out on hunting-days, not even a storm of hail accompanied by thunder and lightning. Don Luis, who is his constant attendant in the coach, is the only person allowed to fire at the game on these daily huntings. But on solemn huntings some of the grandees who wait on him at the chace, are granted the same privilege. However of late the solemn huntings are become rare, because the expence of them was found too great.

A little after sun-set he generally comes back, carrying as much of the feather-game in his hands as he can hold. As to the quadrupeds he has killed, such as stags, deer, wildboars, wolves, foxes, &c. they are brought to the palace in carts. He surveys the whole, orders it to be weighed in his presence, and rejoices when there is much, most particularly when he has killed a wolf or two. It is but seldom that he takes the Prince of Asturias to hunt with him.

When the game is weighed and ordered to the kitchen, he goes to pay a short visit to the Queen-Mother; then gives a private audience to that Minister, whose day it happens to be, as each of them has his fixed day of private audience. The Minister brings his papers in a bag, and offers to his inspection those that are to the purpose of his errand. If the Ministers business leaves him any time, he plays at Reversino (a game at cards so called) with three of his courtiers, generally the Duke de Losada *Sommelier de Corps*, Duke d'Arcos *Capitan de la Compañia Española*, and another grandee whose name I have forgotten. He never plays for any thing, having recourse to this expedient merely to consume a quarter of an hour, or half an hour that he must wait for his supper. At nine he sits down to it, attended only by his courtiers: then goes to bed, to get up again next day to the same round of occupations, and with the same scrupulous nicety of method in the distribution of them, seldom or never to be altered, except on post-days, when, instead of going to hunt, he passes some more time, both morning and afternoon, in the private closet, writing to his son at Naples, to his brother at Parma, to his sisters in Turin and Lisbon*, and very often likewise to Marquis Tanucci and to the Prince of Santo Niccandro, the first of whom he has made chief Minister, and the second *Ayo*, or governour, to his Sicilian Majesty.

If

If on poſt-days he has any time left, it is employed in his laboratory; that is, in the completeſt turner's ſhop that ever exiſted. He is a moſt expert turner, and works toys to perfection. The ſhop contains many turning engines of rare invention, ſome of which were preſents from the King of France, and ſome contrived by Count Zazzola, one of the greateſt mechaniſts of the age. By him his Majeſty is attended when working in the laboratory.

As to his perſonal character, he was certainly a good huſband when his Queen was alive. Never once did he ſwerve from conjugal fidelity, nor ever had any miſtreſs public or private. His brothers were always his beſt friends and moſt familiar companions; and as to his children there is no need of ſaying that he always proved a kind father. He is rather an eaſy, than an affectionate maſter, never deſcending to great familiarity with his ſervants, yet always ſatisfy'd with what they do. They ſay that he never betrayed any great love to any body out of his own family, no more than hatred. It happened once, that he detected one of his moſt familiar domeſtics in a Lye, and forbad him his preſence, but ſtill continued him his ſalary. His converſation is generally chearful, but always as chaſte as his conduct. He repoſes much confidence in his chief Miniſters, eſpecially Marquis Squillace, who has found the means of prepoſſeſſing him in favour of his own abilities, yet neither Squillace, nor any body elſe, was ever a favourite, when by a favourite we mean a man admitted by a Sovereign to the cloſeſt intimacy of friendſhip.

The King uſes every body with a ſort of condeſcenſion that may be called civility, which impreſſes his ſervants with a ſtrong ſenſe of real reſpect, independent of his Kingſhip, as the rigidity of his morals gives them no room for the leaſt contempt. His method of ſpending time, ſo unalterably regular, may appear ſomewhat dull: but is certainly laudable, and it is quite neceſſary that a King ſhould have his Miniſters and his ſervants exactly appriſed of the hours, and even the minutes, that they are to approach him for the diſpatch of buſineſs in their reſpective ſtations and employments.

Every body here agrees, that his Majeſty is far from wanting knowledge of men or things. He has read much, and never paſſes a day without looking into a book. Beſides his native tongue, he ſpeaks Italian and French with the greateſt fluency and propriety, nor is he ignorant of the Latin.

They ſay, that he knows his own as well as other Princes intereſt full as well as any of his Miniſters, and does not ſpare any expence to be early informed of whatever paſſes in Europe and out of Europe that may affect him any way.

Since he came to this throne, he never would ſuffer any Italian opera to be performed either at Madrid or Aranjúez, as was practiſed in the former reign.

His Majeſty, beſides retrenching this abſurd Article of expence, has leſſened that of his ſtables, ſo that he has much reduced the vaſt debt with which he found himſelf encumbered, by which means, if not interrupted by war, I ſuppoſe the whole will be diſcharged in about 20 Years. He viſits the Queen-Mother every day, and treats her with the profoundeſt reſpect.

On every gala-day, his Majeſty puts on a new ſuit, and as rich as art can make it: but all his fine cloaths are conſtantly made after the faſhion that was uſed in his younger years, and he always appears impatient to undreſs, being never eaſy, until he reſumes his grey frock and leather waiſtcoat. He was always an enemy to all ſort of innovation, and ſo ſteady in uniformity, that he wore for above twenty years a ſilver-watch. His Queen inſiſted often upon his changing it for a better, but to no purpoſe. Yet, to get rid of her importunity, and inceſſant jokes, reſolved at laſt to have a goldcaſe to it, which he made himſelf on the lathe.

When he reſolved to give the kingdom of Naples to his ſon, every body expected that he would ſend to Spain all the antique monuments that had been dug out of Herculaneum. But little did they know him that formed ſuch conjectures, as on the ſame day that he crowned that ſon, he went to the place where thoſe monuments were depoſited, and there left a ring he had worn many years, which had been found in thoſe ruins, ſaying, that he had no right to any thing that belonged to another Monarch.

The place where the King hunts is called the Pardo; the ſituation is very romantic, having an eaſy hill on one ſide, and an extenſive foreſt all round; the trees are chiefly green oaks, and their ſweet acorns afford plenty of food to the innumerable animals that live in it. When the King is there, the neighbouring peaſants get up before day, at the ringing of their church bells, and men, women, and children, run

about

about the country, hooting and beating the bushes, in order to fright the game towards the Pardo, that the King may have plenty, for which each of them is paid two reals, about elevenpence sterling a day. It is said that the King can hit the smallest bird on the wing with a single ball.

An authentic Narrative of the Death of MARK ANTHONY CALAS, and of the Trial and Execution of his Father, JOHN CALAS, for the supposed Murder of his Son.

John Calas was a merchant of the city of *Toulouse;* where he had been settled, and lived in good repute, forty years: He married an *Englishwoman* of *French* extraction, her grandmother being of the family of *Garde-Montesquieu,* and related to the chief noblesse of *Languedoc.*

Calas and his wife were Protestants, and had five sons, whom they educated in the same religion: But *Lewis*, one of the sons, some time since became a Roman Catholic; his father's maid-servant, a religious Catholic, who had lived thirty years in the family, having greatly contributed to his conversion; but the father was so far from expressing any resentment or ill-will on the occasion, that he settled an annuity upon *Lewis*, and still kept the maid in his family.

In *October* 1761, the family seems to have consisted of the father *John Calas* and his wife, one woman servant, *Mark Anthony Calas* the eldest son, and *Peter Calas*, the second son. *Mark Anthony* had been educated as a scholar, with a view to his becoming an advocate or counsellor at law; but he was not able to get himself admitted as a licentiate, because he must either have performed some acts, which, as a Protestant, he could not have performed; or have purchased certificates, which he either thought unlawful, or found too expensive. He could not follow the business of a merchant, because he was not qualified for it by his education, nor his

turn of mind; he therefore became difcontented and melancholy, and endeavoured to diffipate the gloom of his mind by playing at billiards, and other expenfive pleafures, of which his father often expreffed his difapprobation with fome warmth, and once threatened, that if he did not alter his conduct, he would turn him out of doors; or expreffed himfelf in words to that effect. The young man's difcontent and melancholy ftill increafed, and he feems to have entertained thoughts of putting an end to his life, as he was continually felecting and reading paffages from *Plutarch*, *Seneca*, *Montaigne*, and many other authors on *fuicide*, and could fay by heart a *French* tranflation of the celebrated foliloquy in *Hamlet*, which he frequently repeated, with fome paffages from a *French* Tragy-Comedy, called *Sidney*, to the fame effect.

On the 13th of *October* 1761, M. *Gober la Vaiffe*, a young gentleman about nineteen years of age, the fon of *La Vaiffe*, a celebrated advocate of *Touloufe*, having been fome time at *Bourdeaux*, came back to *Touloufe* to fee his father; but finding that his father was gone to his country houfe, at fome diftance from the city, he went to feveral places, endeavouring to hire a horfe to carry him thither. No horfe, however, was to be hired; and about five o'clock in the evening he was met by *John Calas*, the father and the eldeft fon *Mark Anthony*, who was his friend. *Calas*, the father, invited him to fupper, as he could not fet out for his father's that night, and *La Vaiffe* confented. All three therefore proceeded to *Calas's* houfe together, and when they came thither, finding that Mrs *Calas* was ftill in her own room, which fhe had not quitted that day, *La Vaiffe* went up to fee her. After the firft compliments, he told her, he was to fup with her by her hufband's invitation; fhe expreffed her fatisfaction, and a few minutes afterwards left him, to give fome orders to her maid. When that was done, fhe went to look for her fon *Anthony*, whom fhe found fitting alone in the fhop, very penfive; fhe gave him fome money, and defired him to go and buy fome Roquefort cheefe, he being always the market man for cheefe, as he knew how to buy it better than any other of the family.

She then returned to her gueft *La Vaiffe*, who very foon after went again to the livery-ftable, to fee if any horfe was come in, that he might fecure it for the next morning.

In a fhort time *Anthony* returned, having bought the cheefe, and *La Vaiffe* alfo coming back about the fame time, the

the family and their gueſt ſat down to ſupper, in a room up one pair of ſtairs, the whole company conſiſting of *Calas* the father and his wife, *Anthony* and *Peter Calas*, the ſons, and *La Vaiſſe* the gueſt, no other perſon being in the houſe except the maid-ſervant, who has been already mentioned.

It was now about ſeven o'clock; the ſupper was not long; but before it was over, or, according to the *French* expreſſion, *when they came to the deſert*, *Anthony* left the table, and went into the kitchen, which was on the ſame floor, as he uſed to do; the maid aſked him if he was a-cold; he anſwered, *Quite the contrary; I burn;* and then left her. In the mean time his friend and the family left the room they had ſupped in, and went into a bed-chamber: the father and M. *La Vaiſſe* ſat down together on a ſofa; the younger ſon *Peter* in an elbow-chair, and the mother in another chair; and without making any enquiry after *Anthony*, continued in converſation together till between nine and ten o'clock, when *La Vaiſſe* took his leave, and *Peter*, who had fallen aſleep, was awaked to attend him with a light.*)

On the ground floor of *Calas*'s houſe was a ſhop and a warehouſe; the warehouſe was divided from the ſhop by a pair of folding doors: When *Peter Calas* and *La Vaiſſe* came down ſtairs into the ſhop, they were extremely ſhocked to ſee *Anthony* hanging in his ſhirt, from a bar which he had laid acroſs the top of the two folding doors, having half opened them for that purpoſe. Upon diſcovery of this horrid ſpectacle, they ſhrieked out, and the cry brought down *Calas* the father, the mother being ſeized with ſuch a terror as kept her trembling in the paſſage above. The unhappy old man ruſhed forward, and taking the body in his arm, the bar

*) This little narrative contains a picture of domeſtic life, which muſt be altogether new to an *Engliſh* reader. A merchant who had bred his eldeſt ſon a ſcholar, in order to have him called to the bar, ſends this ſon out to buy cheeſe, having only one ſervant in the family, who, after preparing the ſupper, ſets in upon the table at ſeven o'clock, and leaves the company to wait upon themſelves: This ſupper, however, had what they call a deſert; but before it is over, *Anthony*, the eldeſt ſon, the particular friend of the gueſt, leaves the table, and goes into the kitchen; no enquiry was made about him, though the company continued together above two hours afterwards; they ſpent their evening in a bedchamber, having left the eating room with the table ſtill covered; as ſoon as they had ſupped, ſon *Peter* goes to ſleep, and is not diſturbed till he is wanted to wait upon the gueſt with a light.

bar to which the rope that fufpended him was faftened, flipped off from the folding doors of the warehoufe, and fell down: Having placed the body on the ground, he loofed and took off the cord, in an agony of grief and anguifh not to be expreffed, weeping, trembling, and deploring himfelf and his child. The two young men, his fecond fon and *La Vaiffe*, who had not had prefence of mind enough to attempt taking down the body, were ftanding by, ftupid with amazement and horror; in the mean time the mother, hearing the confufed cries and complaints of her hufband, and finding no-body come to her, found means to get down ftairs. At the bottom fhe found *La Vaiffe*, and haftily and eagerly demanded what was the matter; this queftion rouzed him in a moment, and inftead of anfwering her, he urged her to go again up ftairs, to which, with much reluctance, fhe confented; but the conflict of her mind being fuch as could not be long borne, fhe fent down the maid, *Jannet*, to fee what was the matter; when the maid difcovered what had happened, fhe continued below, either becaufe fhe feared to carry an account of it to her miftrefs, or becaufe fhe bufied herfelf in doing fome good office to her mafter, who was ftill embracing the body of his fon, and bathing it in his tears. The mother therefore, being thus left alone, went down, and mixed in the fcene, that has been already defcribed, with fuch emotions as it would naturally produce. In the mean time, *Peter* had been fent for *La Moire*, a furgeon in the neighbourhood; *La Moire* was not at home, but his apprentice, M. *Groffe*, came inftantly. Upon examination, he found the body quite dead; and upon taking off the neckcloth, which was of black taffety, he faw the mark of the cord, and immediately pronunced, that the deceafed had been ftrangled. This particular had not been told; for the poor old man, when *Peter* was going for *La Moire*, cried out, "Save at leaft the honour of my family; do not go and fpread a report that your brother has made away with himfelf.,,

By this time a crowd of people was gathered about the door, and one *Cafing*, with another friend or two of the family were come in; fome of thofe who were in the ftreet had heard the cries and exclamations of the father, the mother, the brother, and his friend, before they knew what was the matter; and having by fome means learnt that *Anthony Calas* was fuddenly dead, and that the furgeon who had examined the body, declared he had been ftrangled, they took it into their

their heads that he had been murdered; and as his family were Proteſtants, they preſently ſuppoſed that the young man was about to abjure their religion, and had been put to death for that reaſon. The cries they had heard, they fancied were thoſe of the deceaſed, while he was reſiſting the violence that was offered him. The tumult in the ſtreet increaſed every moment; ſome ſaid that *Anthony Calas* was to have abjured the next day; others, that Proteſtants are bound by their religion to ſtrangle or cut the throats of their children, when they are inclined to become Catholics. Others, who had found out that *La Vaiſſe* was in the houſe when the accident happened, very confidently affirmed, that the proteſtants, at their laſt aſſembly, appointed a perſon to be their common executioner on theſe occaſions, and that *La Vaiſſe* was the man, who, in conſequence of the office to which he had been appointed, had come to *Calas*'s to hang his ſon.

The poor father, therefore, who was overwhelmed with grief for the loſs of his child, was adviſed by his friends to ſend for the officers of juſtice, to prevent his being torn to pieces for having murdered him.

This was accordingly done: One was diſpatched to the Capitoul, one *David*, the firſt magiſtrate of the police, or principal civil magiſtrate of the place; and another to an inferior officer, called an aſſeſſor. The Capitoul, was already ſet out, having been alarmed by the rumor of a murder, before the meſſenger ſent from *Calas*'s got to his houſe. He entered the houſe with 40 ſoldiers, took the father, *Peter* the ſon, the mother, *La Vaiſſe*, and the maid, all into cuſtody, and ſet a guard over them: He ſent for M. *de la Tour*, a phyſician, and M. *La Marque* and *Perronet*, ſurgeons, who examined the body for marks of violence, but found none except the mark of the ligature on the neck; they found alſo the hair of the deceaſed done up in the uſual manner, perfectly ſmooth, and without the leaſt diſorder; his cloaths alſo were regularly ſolded up, and laid upon the counter, nor was his ſhirt either torn or unbuttened.

Notwithſtanding theſe appearances, *David* thought fit to give into the opinion of the mob, and took it into his head that old *Calas* had ſent for *La Vaiſſe*, telling him he had a ſon to be hanged, that *La Vaiſſe* had come to perform his office of executioner, and that the father and the brother had aſſiſted him in it.

The

The body, by order of this poor ignorant bigot, was carried to the town-houſe with the cloaths. The father and ſon were thrown into a dark dungeon; aud the mother, *La Vaiſſe*, the maid, and *Caſing*, were impriſoned in one that admitted the light. The next day, what is called the *verbal proceſs* was taken at the Town-houſe, inſtead of the ſpot where the body was found, as the law directs, and was dated at *Calas's* houſe, to conceal the irregularity. This *verbal proceſs* is ſomewhat like our *Coroner's Inqueſt*; witneſſes are examined, and the magiſtrate makes his report, which is the ſame there as the verdict of the coroner's jury with us. The witneſſes examined by this Capitoul were the phyſician and ſurgeon, who proved *Anthony Calas* to have been ſtrangled; the ſurgeon having been ordered to examine the ſtomach of the deceaſed, depoſed alſo, that the food which was found there had been taken four hours before his death: As no proof of the ſuppoſed fact could be procured, the Capitoul had recourſe to a Monitory, in which the crime was taken for granted, and all perſons were required to give ſuch teſtimony concerning it as they were able, particularizing the points to which they were to ſpeak. This Monitory recites, that *La Vaiſſe* was commiſſioned by the Proteſtants to be their executioner in ordinary, when any of their children were to be hanged for changing their religion; it recites alſo, that when Proteſtants thus hang their children, they compel them to kneel, aud one of the interrogatories was, whether any perſon had ſeen *Anthony Calas* kneel before his father when he ſtrangled him; it recites too, that *Anthony* died a Roman Catholic, and requires evidence of his Catholiciſm. Theſe ridiculous opinions being thus adopted and publiſhed by the principal magiſtrate of a conſiderable city, the church of *Geneva* thought itſelf obliged to ſend an atteſtation of its abhorrence of opinions ſo abominable and abſurd, and of its aſtoniſhment that they ſhould be ſuſpected of ſuch opinions, by perſons whoſe rank and office required them to have more knowledge and better judgment.

But before this Monitory was publiſhed, the mob had got a notion that *Anthony Calas* was the next day to have entered into the fraternity of the White penitents. The Capitoul immediately adopted this opinion alſo, without the leaſt examination, and ordered *Anthony's* body to be burried in the middle of St. *Stephen's* church, which was done; forty prieſts, and all the white penitens aſſiſting in the funeral proceſſion.

Four

Four days afterwards, the White Penitents performed a ſolemn ſervice for him in their chapel; the church was hung with white, and a tomb was raiſed in the middle of it, on the top of which was placed a human ſkeleton, holding in one hand a paper, on which was written *abjuration of hereſy*, and in the other a palm, the Emblem of Matyrdom.

The next day the Franciſcans performed a ſervice of the ſame kind for him, and it is eaſy to imagine how much the minds of the people were inflamed by this ſtrange folly of their magiſtrates and prieſts.

The Capitoul continued the proſecution with urelenting ſeverity, and though the grief and diſtraction of the family when he firſt came to the houſe, were alone ſufficient to have convinced any reaſonable being that they were not the authors of the event which they deplored, yet having publickly atteſted that they were guilty in his monitóry without proof, and no proof coming in, he thought fit to condemn the unhappy father, mother, brother, friend and ſervant to the torture, and put them all into irons on the 18th of *November*. *Caſing* was enlarged upon proof that he was not in *Calas*'s houſe till after *Anthony* was dead.

From theſe dreadful proceedings the ſufferers appealed to the parliament, which immediately took cognizance of the affair, annulled the ſentence of the Capitoul as irregular, and continued the proſecution.

When the tryal came on, the hangman, who had been carried to *Calas*'s houſe, and ſhewn the folding doors and the bar, depoſed, that it was impoſſible *Anthony* ſhould hang himſelf as was pretended; another witneſs ſwore that they looked through the key hole of *Calas*'s door into a *dark* room, where they ſaw men running haſtily to and fro; a third ſwore, that his wife had told him, that a woman, named *Mandrill*, had told her, that a certain woman unknown had declared ſhe heard the cries of *Mark Anthony Calas* at the farther end of the city. Upon ſuch evidence as this, the majority of the parliament were of opinion, that the father and mother ordered *La Vaiſſe* to hang their ſon, and that another ſon and a maid ſervant, who was a good Catholic, had aſſiſted him to do it.

One *la Borde* preſided at the tryal, who had zealouſly eſpouſed the popular prejudices, and though it was manifeſt to demonſtration that the priſoners were either all innocent, or all guilty, he voted that the father ſhould firſt ſuffer the torture ordinary and extraordinary, to diſcover his accom-

 plices,

plices, and be then broken alive upon the wheel, to receive the laſt ſtroke when he had lain two hours, and then to be burnt to aſhes. In this opinion he had the concurrence of ſix others, three were for the torture alone, two were of opinion that they ſhould endeavour to aſcertain upon the ſpot whether *Anthony* could hang himſelf or not, and one voted to acquit the priſoner. After long debates, the majority was for the torture and the wheel, and probably condemned the father by way of experiment, whether he was guilty or not, hoping he would, in his agony, confeſs the crime, and accuſe the other priſoners, whoſe fate, therefore, they ſuſpended. It is, however, certain, that if they had had evidence againſt the father, that would have juſtified the ſentence they pronounced againſt him, that very evidence would have juſtified the ſame ſentence againſt the reſt, and that if they could not juſtly condemn the reſt, they could not juſtly condemn him, for they were all in the houſe together when *Anthony* died, all concurred in declaring he hanged himſelf, which thoſe who did not help to hang him, if hanged by others, could have had no motive to do, nor could any of the priſoners have hanged him by violence without the knowledge of the reſt.

Poor *Calas*, however, an old man of ſixty-eight, was condemned to this dreadful puniſhment alone; he ſuffered the torture with great conſtancy, and was led to execution in a frame of mind which excited the admiration of all that ſaw him.

Two Dominicans; Father *Bourges* and Father *Caldagues*, who attended him in his laſt moments, wiſhed, "that their latter end might be like his," and declared that they thought him not only wholly innocent of the crime laid to his charge, but an exemplary inſtance of true chriſtian patience, fortitude, and charity.

One ſingle ſhriek, and that not very violent, eſcaped him when he received the firſt ſtroke; after that he uttered no complaint. Being at length placed on the wheel, to wait for the moment which was to end his life and his miſery together, he expreſſed himſelf with an humble hope of an happy immortality, and a compaſſionate regard for the judges who had condemned him. When he ſaw the executioner preparing to give him the laſt ſtroke, he made a freſh declaration of his innocence to Father *Bourges*, but while the words were yet in his mouth, the Capitoul, the author of this cataſtrophe, and who came upon the ſcaffold merely to gratify his deſire of being a witneſs of his puniſhment and death, ran up to him

and

and bawled out, *Wretch, there are the faggots which are to reduce your body to aſhes; ſpeak the truth.* Calas made no reply, but turned his head a little aſide, and that moment the executioner did his office.

Though the teſtimony of a dying man had thus acquitted the reſt of the priſoners, yet the judges, that they might act with a uniform abſurdity through the whole affair, baniſhed *Peter Calas* for life, and acquitted the reſt. The widow and the other ſufferers are ſeeking ſuch redreſs from the king as can now be had, to whom the ſentence of the judges was not ſent for confirmation as it ought to have been.

The judges have thought fit to ſuppreſs the trial; the widow petitions that it may be ordered to be laid before the parliament of *Paris* for a reviſion.

ANSON'S VOYAGE TO ASIA. *)

The *Centurion* and *Glouceſter* left the coaſt of *America* the 6th of May 1742. The firſt land in *Aſia* which they could reach was the iſlands *Ladrones*, which are ſeparated from *America* by near one third of the globe's circumference. But as the N. E. winds, which are favourable for this voyage, uſually blow between the tropics, the *Engliſh* could not think that they could be longer about it than the *Spaniards*, who generally perform it in two months. In this confidence they put to ſea, and ſtood for the latitude where the moſt regular winds are expected; but, contrary of their expectations, the wind ſhifted ſo often, and they had ſo many ſtrong gales at W. that, in ſeven weeks, they had not proceeded one fourth of the voyage. Several misfortunes happen'd during this tedious delay. Both ſhips ſprung their maſts in ſeveral places, and being obliged to keep their pumps continually going, on account of the leaks, it was an inſupportable fatigue to the men, the greateſt part of whom were weakened by the ſcurvy.

Tho' they had plenty of proviſions, and tho' the rains conſtantly ſupplied them with water, and all poſſible care was taken to keep the ſhips cool and clean; yet the ſcurvy continued its havock, notwithſtanding all their ſkill and precau- tion:

*) A Voyage round the World by George Anſon Esq. compiled by R. Walter. Lond. 1748. 8. Gentleman's Magazine 1749.

tion; and even when the fair winds ſet in towards the end of *June*, the voyage was far from being ſo ſpeedy as might have been hoped. The *Glouceſter* having loſt her main-maſt, ſail'd heavily, and the *Centurion* loſt near a month in waiting for her. When they were within 300 leagues of the port, the *Glouceſter's* other maſts were all carried away by ſome contrary gales; nor were her crew any longer able to free her of water; ſo that on the 15th of *Auguſt*, having taken out the moſt neceſſary ſtores, they ſet her on fire; and on the 23d they made ſome iſlands, wich were the firſt that they had ſeen during this long paſſage; and on the 26th, while they were regretting the apparent difficulty of landing at any of theſe, and fearing they ſhould not get ſight of any others, they diſcovered three more. Of one of theſe, a boat, which they had taken, gave them ſuch an inviting account, that they immediately ſet about landing their men. The ſick, who were now grown very numerous, were, without delay, put on ſhore, being carried on the ſhoulders even of their officers, their humane Commodore ſetting the example. Here they recover'd ſurpriſingly, ſo that all the time they ſtay'd, they loſt but ten men. Their quick recovery was owing to the acid fruits and anti-ſcorbutic plants, as well as to the healthful qualities of the air. Beaſts, fowls, and vegetables were here in great abundance; and tho' there was no river, this defect was amply ſupply'd by ſeveral reſervoirs of excellent water, iſſuing from the ſprings. But, as the fineſt countries are ſubject to ſome inconveniencies, ſo was this delightful iſland of *Tinian*. The chief is the want of harbours, for there is but one place where ſhips can anchor, which is to the S. E. and this, from the middle of *June* to the middle of *October*, is expoſed to very furious tempeſts, which blow at the new and full moons. The coral, which ſpreads all over the bottom of the ſea, wounds the cables, ſo that they eaſily part in a ſtrong current, or hard gale. This the *Centurion* experienced on the 22d of *September*, when a ſtrong guſt of wind broke both her cables, and drove her from the coaſt, ſo that it was 19 days before ſhe could get back again. As the greateſt part of the ſhip's company was on ſhore with Mr. *Anſon*, only 108 men were on board, and moſt of them ſickly. This was a number ſo unequal to the working of the pumps, and at the ſame time navigating the ſhip, that it was impoſſible for them to bring her ſooner back to the iſland, where indeed ſhe had been given over for loſt. The Commodore, who at firſt ſhew'd

no

no ſigns of uneaſineſs, was unable to conceal the emotion of his mind, when, ſome days after the ſhip's departure, he preceived two boats, which at firſt he imagined to belong to the *Centurion*, and feared that the ſhip was foundered, and that the perſons who had ſaved themſelves in theſe boats, were all that remained of the crew. This conjecture, but eſpecially the apprehenſion that all the expected glory and advantage of his hazardous expedition was irretrievably prevented, affected him ſo ſtrongly that he retired to his tent, that he might have no witneſſes to the grief and anguiſh which he could no longer ſuppreſs. Except this ſingle inſtance of human frailty, which ſome perſons have inſolently cenſured, his conſtancy, his prudence, his ſerenity, and alacrity, juſtly excite our aſtoniſhment, and deſerve our imitation: and from this he ſoon recover'd, reſuming his uſual chearfulneſs. He told his men, that, as the ſhip had not been able to regain the iſland, it was probable that ſhe was gone for *Chili*, and that the only means which remained to meet her there, was to ſaw the boat which they had taken through the middle, and lengthen it, ſo that it might be large enough to carry them all. He not only exhorted them to this work, but, to encourage them in forwarding it, he himſelf condeſcended to be a workman. Moſt of the ſhip's carpenters happening to be on the iſland, they ſoon got tools and materials ready to join the two ends of the boat, when, on the 11th of *October*, the ſhip again appeared, and put an end at once to their labour and apprehenſions. Mr. *Anſon* immediately went on board, with the greateſt part of his men; and tho', ſome days after, ſhe was again driven off, the crew, being now ſtronger, brought her back into the road in five days. The ſailors who had been left on ſhore, had already begun to refit the boat, which would conveniently have held their ſmall number. But being at laſt once more got all together, they left this iſland, where they had experienced the greateſt viciſſitudes of joy and conſternation. This laſt trip proved more proſperous, and they arrived at *Macao* on the 12th of *December*, which was the firſt friendly port they had ſeen during two years. The *Portugueſe* governor ſhew'd himſelf both a weak counſellor and a timorous friend. For tho' he was inclined to favour Mr. *Anſon*, his ſelfiſh dependence on the *Chineſe* hinder'd him from doing it effectually. He adviſed him againſt going to *Canton*, to avoid a diſpute with the inhabitants, who not being uſed to ſee ſhips of that force would inſiſt upon the ſame fees which

merchant ſhips paid, and from which a man of war might juſtly think itſelf exempt. Upon receiving this account, the Commodore ſail'd to a ſmall port called *Typa*, and here he was put to infinite trouble in procuring neceſſaries from the *Chineſe*, becauſe they are ſtrictly attached, by their intereſt, to the *Spaniards* of *Manilla*. They regarded the *Engliſh* Commodore as no better than a powerful pirate, and this, joined with the perfidy of their Mandarines, the venality of their courts of juſtice, and the fraud of their traders, occaſion'd delay after delay, in fitting their ſhip, and buying the neceſſary ſtores and proviſions. Mr. *Anſon*, out of patience at being thus amuſed and retarded, was at length convinced that reſolution and threatenings availed more than courteſy and preſents. Accordingly, having at length procured the ſhip to be refitted and victualled, he left *Typa*, the 6th, and *Macao*, the 19th of *April* 1743. Mr. *Anſon*, when he was about to leave this port, had given out that he was going to return to *Europe;* and, tho' this ſeem'd impracticable at that ſeaſon, by reaſon of the weſtern monſoon, he had made his men believe, that, in confidence of their ſkill, and the goodneſs of the ſhip, he would venture to attempt it; for he was perſuaded that, if his intention upon the *Manilla* galleon had taken wind at *Macao*, the *Spaniards* would have been ſoon apprized of it by their *Chineſe* friends. But, notwithſtanding all his precaution to keep at ſuch a diſtance from the *Philippine* iſlands as not to be perceived, they had often ſight of him; and the governor of *Manilla*, at the inſtances of the merchants, had reſolved to ſend out ſome ſhips of force againſt him. But the contrary winds, the ſlowneſs in fitting out the largeſt ſhip, and eſpecially the diſſenſions among the proprietors, happily retarded this expedition. Nor was this the only ſcheme which proved abortive; for when the *Centurion* was repairing at *Typa*, and conſequently unable to make any defence, ſome *Spaniards* had form'd a deſign to ſend thither a kind of fireſhip, in order to deſtroy her. But tho' no more than 40,000 crowns was required for an action which would have ſaved a million, the merchants, ſuſpecting the governor's view was only to get the money into his hands, could not be brought to advance it: and thus the *Engliſh* owed the ſafety of their ſhip to the miſtruſt and parſimony of their enemies.

Mr. *Anſon* was no ſooner at ſea, than he called the ſhip's company upon deck, and told them his deſign was to go and wait for the *Acapulco* ſhip at Cape *Spirito Santo*, that being her

her conſtant courſe in her return to *Manilla*; adding that, notwithſtanding it had been given out that the ſides of this ſhip were cannon proof, he was reſolved to be ſo near to her, that his ſhot ſhould go in at one ſide and out at the other. This ſpeech animated them with hopes of obtaining that ineſtimable prize, and they waited for her off the cape with unexampled patience for above a month. At length, on the 20th of *June*, the galleon, the object of their hopes, appeared, and ſo far from ſeeming to ſhun the *Centurion*, ſhe boldly made towards her, and prepared for an engagement. But Mr. *Anſon* keeping a continual fire both with his guns and ſmall arms, at which his ſhip's company were very expert, he ſoon became maſter of this rich galleon. For the *Spaniards*, ſeeing a great many of the common men, and eſpecially of the officers, fall, were ſo terrified, that they ſtruck to an enemy who was not half their number. The name of the prize was the *Nueſtra Señora de Cabadonga;* and ſhe was much larger than the *Centurion*, mounted 36 guns, and 27 padereroes, with 550 men. Don *Jeronimo de Montaro*, who was commander, was eſteemed the beſt ſeaman of all the captains of the galleons, and was ſtiled General. The *Engliſh* were informed by their priſoners that the ſhip which laſt year had been detained at *Acapulco*, had ſet out this year on her return ſooner than ordinary, and muſt have reached *Manilla* before Mr. *Anſon* got to the cape, where he had the good fortune to meet with them; ſo that the delays of the *Chineſe* may be ſaid to have hinder'd Mr. *Anſon* from taking another prize. However, this being ſo immenſely rich, they did not much regret the diſappointment. All that remained now, was to carry their prize to ſome port in *China;* and during the voyage, which proved but ſhort, the priſoners were ſecured as far as humanity would admit of, an account being taken of the cargo, and the treaſure put on board the *Centurion*. There were on board 1,313,843 pieces of eight, and 35,682 ounces of ſilver, which, with what the *Engliſh* had before taken from the *Spaniards*, amounted to 400,000 l. ſterling. And if to this ſum we add the effects which were deſtroy'd, to the value of at leaſt 600,000 l. the charges of *Pizarro's* fleet, and the expences of repairing the fortifications in *America*, it will appear that the *Spaniards* were very great ſufferers, and, conſequently, that expedition of the *Engliſh* fleet was of conſiderable advantage to their country. Mr. *Anſon* arrived at *Macao* the 11th of *July*, and ſailing from thence to the river of *Canton*, he ad-

vanced through the narrow paſſage which defends the harbour, notwithſtanding a meſſage which the *Chineſe* had ſent to forbid him. The two forts on each ſide the gut did not preſume to make any oppoſition, with their batteries of 8 or 10 iron guns; as it muſt have been to their own loſs. But the governors, as well as the pilot; whom Mr. *Anſon* had compelled to cary his ſhip in, were puniſhed for permitting what they could not prevent. This reſolution, together with the vaſt riches of the *Engliſh*, raiſed their character with a timorous and mercenary people. Some *Spaniards*, who had been permitted to go on ſhore, ſpoke in very honourable terms of their conquerors. Mr *Anſon* had wrote to the Viceroy for a ſupply of proviſions, and an audience. The firſt was readily granted him, but the audience was deferred upon pretence of the heat; but, in reality, to gain time for receiving orders from his court. The accuſtomed duty was alſo required: but, upon the commodore's inflexibly perſiſting in a refuſal, the Mandarines, who had been deputed by the Viceroy, made no farther mention of it, requiring only that the *Spaniſh* priſoners ſhould be ſet at liberty. Some ſeeming dificulties were made on this head, to give it the appearance of a favour, tho', in reality, the *Engliſh* wanted to be rid of them.

It would be no leſs tedious than unneceſſary to relate all the preparations the *Engliſh* made for their return, and the obſtructions which the *Chineſe*, whether out of fear, intereſt, or formality, were continually throwing in their way. In ſhort, Mr. *Anſon* was obliged himſelf to go up to *Canton*, and enforce his orders in perſon. Being now ready to depart, he ſent the Viceroy another meſſage, to remind him of the audience he had deſired. This probably would have been again put off, but for the following accident: A fire broke out with ſuch violence, that it ſoon ſpread thro' a great part of the city, and probably would have conſumed the whole, had it not been extinguiſhed by the boldneſs and activity of the *Engliſh* ſailors. For this ſervice they received the thanks of the citizens, and the Viceroy immediately granted an audience, in which all Mr. *Anſon's* demands met with a ready compliance. Upon which, having ſold the *Spaniſh* galleon to ſome merchants at *Macao*, he left that port the 15th of *December*, and returned to *Europe* by the ſtreights of *Sunda*, and the Cape of *Good Hope*. The 15th of *June* was the auſpicious day which gave him a ſight of his country after an abſence of three years and nine months, in an expedition which will be an eternal monument,

monument, that, tho' *prudence, intrepidity, and perſeverance united, are not exempted from the blows of adverſe fortune; yet in a long ſeries of tranſactions, they uſually riſe ſuperior to its power, and in the end rarely fail of proving ſucceſsful.*

Account of Sir CHARLES GRANDISON'S reſcuing MISS HARRIET BYRON. *)

Mr. Reeves, *to* George Selby, *Eſq;*

Dear Mr. Selby, *Friday, Feb.* 17.

No one, at preſent, but yourſelf, muſt ſee the contents of what I am going to write.

But how ſhall I tell you the news; the dreadful news? — You muſt not — But how ſhall I ſay, *You* muſt not, be too much affected, when *we* are unable to ſupport ourſelves?

O my couſin Selby! — We know not what is become of our deareſt Miſs Byron!

I will be as particular as my grief and ſurprize will allow. There is a neceſſity for it, as you will find.

We were laſt night at the Ball in the Hay-market.

The chairmen who carried the dear creature, and who, as well as *our* chairmen, were engaged for the night, were inveigled away to drink ſomewhere. They promiſed Wilſon, my couſins ſervant, to return in half an hour.

It was then but little more than twelve.

Wilſon waited near two hours, and they not returning, he hired a chair to ſupply their place.

Between two and three, we all agreed to go home. The dear creature was fatigued with the notice every-body took of her. Every body admired her. She wanted to go before; but Lady Betty prevailed on her to ſtay a little longer.

She hurried into it becauſe of her dreſs, and being warm; and no leſs than four gentlemen following her to the very chair.

I ordered Wilſon to bid the chairmen ſtop, when they had got out of the croud, till Lady Betty's chair, and mine, and my my wife's, joined them.

I ſaw

*) The Hiſtory of Sir Charles Grandiſon. Lond. 1754. 6 Vol. 8.

I ſaw her chair move, and Wilſon with his lighted flambeaux before it; and the four maſks who followed her to the chair, return into the houſe.

When our ſervants could not find that her chair had ſtopt, we ſuppoſed that in the hurry, the fellow heard not my orders; and directed our chairmen to proceed, not doubting but we ſhould find her got home before us.

We had before agreed to be carried directly home; declining Lady Betty's invitation to reſume our own dreſſes at her houſe, where we dreſſed for the Ball.

We were very much ſurpriſed at finding her not arrived: But concluding that, by miſtake, ſhe was carried to Lady Betty's, and was there expecting us, we ſent thither immediately.

But, good God! what was our conſternation, when the ſervants brought us word back, that Lady Betty had not either ſeen or heard of her!

Mr. Greville, as I apprehend — you know he is a man of enterprize.

He came to town, having profeſſedly no other material buſineſs but to give obſtruction to my couſin's viſitors. He ſaw, ſhe had two new ones. He talked at firſt of ſtaying in town, and partaking of its diverſions, and even of beſpeaking a new equipage.

But all of a ſudden, tho' expecting Mr. Fenwick would come up, he pretended to leave the town, and to ſet out directly for Northamptonſhire, without having obtained any conceſſion from my couſin in his favour.

Laying all theſe circumſtances together, I think it is hardly to be doubted, but Mr. Greville it as the bottom of this black affair.

I have ſix people out at different parts of the town, who are to make enquiries among chairmen, coachmen, &c.

Her new ſervant cannot be a villain — What can one ſay! — What can one think?

We have ſent to his ſiſter, who keeps an inn in Smithfield. She has heard nothing of him.

I had half a ſuſpicion of Sir Hargrave, as well from the character given us of him by a friend of mine, as becauſe of his unpolite behaviour to the dear creature on her rejecting him: And ſent to his houſe in Cavendiſh-ſquare, to know if he were at home, and if he were, at what time he returned from the Ball.

Anſwer

Anſwer was brought, that he was in bed, and they ſuppoſed would not be ſtirring till dinner-time; when he expected company; and that he returned not from the Ball till between four and five this morning.

You will be ſo good, as to diſpatch the bearer inſtantly with what information can be got about Mr. Greville.

Ever, ever Yours!

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. SELBY, *to* ARCHIBALD REEVES, *Eſq;*

Saturday, Feb. 18.

O Mr. Reeves! — Dear ſweet child! — Flower of the world! —

How could I conceal my conſternation! — My wife ſaw it. She would know the cauſe of it.

I could not tel her the fatal news — Fatal news indeed! It will be immediate death to her poor grandmother. —

We muſt keep it from her as long as we can! — But *keep* it from her! — And *is* the deareſt creature ſpirited away? — O Mr. Reves!

I gave my wife your Letter. She fainted away, before ſhe had read it thro'.

Maſquerades, I have generally heard ſaid, were more ſilly than wicked: But they are now, I am convinced, the moſt profligate of all diverſions.

Some damned villain, to be ſure! — Greville it is not. Greville was ſeen late laſt night, alighting at his own houſe from a poſt-chaiſe. He had no-body with him.

Find out where ſhe is: And find her ſafe and well: Or we will never forgive thoſe who were the cauſe of her going to London.

Dear ſoul! She was over-perſuaded! She was not fond of going!

Search every-where — But you will, no doubt! — Suſpect every-body — This Lady Betty Williams — Such a plot muſt have a woman in it. Was ſhe not Sir Hargrave's friend? — This Sir Hargrave! — Greville it could not be. Had we not the proof I mentioned, Greville, bad as he is, could not be ſuch a villain.

Greville was this moment here.

We

We could not see him. We did not let him know the matter.

He is gone away, in great surprize, on the servants telling him that we had received some bad news, which made us unfit to see any-body. The servants could not tell him what: Yet they all guess, by your livery, and by our grief, that something has befallen their beloved young Lady. They are all in tears — And they look at us, when they attend us, with *such* inquisitive, yet silent grief! — We are speechless before them; and tell them our wills by motions, and not by words.

Good God! — After so many happy years! — Happy in ourselves! to be at last in so short a time made the most miserable of wretches!

But this had not been, if — But no more — Good God of heaven, what will become of my poor aunt Shirley! — But no more — Hasten your next — And forgive this distracted Letter. I know not what I have written. But I am

Yours

GEORGE SELBY.

Mr. REEVES, *to* GEORGE SELBY, *Esq.*

EVery hour we have one messenger or other returning with something to say; but hitherto with nothing to the purpose. This has kept me within. O Mr. Selby, I know not what to direct! I know not what to do! I send them out again as fast as they return: Yet rather shew my despair, than my hope.

Surely this villany must be Mr. Greville's. Tho' I have but just dispatched away my servant to you, I am impatient for his return.

We begin to suspect the servant (that Wilson) whom my cousin so lately hired. Were *he* clear of the matter, either he or the chairmen he hired, must have been heard of. He would have returned. They could not all three be either murdered or secreted.

One o'Clock.

Lady Betty's chairmen have found out, and they brought with them, one of the fellows, whom that vile Wilson hired. The other was afraid to come. I have secured this fellow: Yet he seems to be ingenuous; and I have promised, that if he prove innocent, he shall be rewarded instead of punished; and

and the two chairmen, on this promiſe, are gone to try to prevail upon his partner to come, were it but to releaſe the other, as both inſiſted upon their innocence.

And now will you be impatient to know what account this fellow gives.

O Mr. Selby! The dear, dear creature — But before I can proceed, I muſt recover my eyes.

Two o'Clock.

This fellow's name is Macpherſon. His partner's M' Dermot. This is Macpherſon's account of the matter.

Wilſon hired them to carry his young Lady to Paddington. — To Paddington! A vile dog; —

They objected diſtance and danger; the latter, as Macpherſon owns, to heighten the value of the ſervice.

As to the danger, Wilſon told him, they would be met by three others of his fellow-ſervants, armed, at the firſt fields: And as to the diſtance, they would be richly rewarded; and he gave them a crown a piece earneſt, and treated them beſides with brandy.

To prevent their curioſity, and entirely to remove their difficulties, the villain told them, that his young Lady was an heireſs, and had agreed to go off from the Maſquerade with her Lower, but that the gentleman would not appear to them till ſhe came to the very houſe, to which ſhe was to be conveyed.

She thinks, ſaid the helliſh villain, that ſhe is to be carried to May-Fair Chapel, and to be married directly; and that the miniſter (unſeaſonable as the hour is) will be there in readineſs. But the gentleman, who is a man of the utmoſt honour, intends firſt to try whether he cannot obtain her friends conſent. So when ſhe finds her way lenghtened, proceeded the vile wretch, ſhe will perhaps be frightened, and will aſk me queſtions. I would not for the world diſoblige her; but here ſhe muſt be cheated for her own ſake; and when all is over, will value me the more for the innocent impoſture. But whatever orders ſhe may give you, obſerve none but mine, and follow me. You ſhall be richly rewarded, repeated the miſcreant. Should ſhe even cry out, mind it not: She is ful of fears; and hardly holds in one mind for an hour together.

He further cautioned them not to anſwer any queſtions which might poſſibly be aſked of them, by the perſon who

ſhould

ſhould conduct his young Lady to her chair; but refer to himſelf: And in caſe any other chairs were to go in company with hers, he bid them fall behind, and follow his flambeaux.

Macpherſon ſays, that ſhe drew the curtains cloſe (becauſe of her dreſs, no doubt) the moment I had left her, after ſeeing her in chair.

The fellows thus prepoſſeſſed and inſtructed, ſpeeded away, without ſtopping for our chairs. Yet the dear creature muſt have heard me give that direction.

They had carried her a great way before ſhe called out: And *then* ſhe called three times before they would hear her, at the third time they ſtopt, and her ſervant aſked her commands. Where am I, William? ſaid ſhe. Juſt at home, madam, anſwered he. Surely you have taken a ſtrange roundabout way. We *are* come about, ſaid the raſcal, on purpoſe to avoid the croud of chairs and coaches.

They proceeded onwards, and were joined by three men, as Wilſon had told them they would; but they fancied one of them to be a gentleman; for he was muffled up in a cloak and had a ſilver-hilted ſword in his hand: But he ſpoke not: He gave no directions: And all three kept aloof, that they might not be ſeen by her.

At Maribone, ſhe again called out; William, William, ſaid ſhe, with vehemence: The Lord have mercy upon me! Where are you going to carry me? Chairmen, ſtop! Stop, chairmen! Set me down! — William! — Call my ſervant, chairmen! —

The chairmen called him. They lifted up the head. The ſide curtains were ſtill undrawn, and M'Dermot ſtood ſo cloſe, that ſhe could not ſee far before her. Did you not tell me, ſaid the villain to them, that it was not far about?— See how you have frighted my Lady! — Madam, we are now almoſt at home.

They proceeded with her, ſaying, they had indeed miſtaken their way; but they were juſt there; and hurried on.

She then undrew the ſide curtains — Good God of heaven protect me! they heard her ſay — I am in the midſt of fields — They weere then at Liſſom-Green.

They heard her prey; and Macpherſon ſaid, he began then to conclude, that the Lady was too much frightened, and *too pious*, to be in a Love-plot.

But, nevertheleſs, beckoned by their villainous guide, they hurried on: And then ſhe ſcreamed out; and happening

to

to ſee one of the three men, ſhe begged his help for God's ſake.

The fellow bluſtered at the chairmen, and bid them ſtop. She aſked for Groſvenor-ſtreet. She was to be carried, ſhe ſaid, to Groſvenor-ſtreet.

She was juſt there, that fellow ſaid — It can't be, Sir! It can't be! Don't I ſee fields all about me? — I am in the midſt, of fields, Sir.

Groſvenor-Square, madam, replyed that villain; the trees and garden of Groſvenor-Square.

What a ſtrange way have you come about! cried her miſcreant: And then trod out his flambeaux; while another fellow took the chairmens lantern from them; and they had only a little glimmering ſtar-light to guide them.

She then, poor dear ſoul! ſcreamed ſo diſmally; that Macpherſon ſaid, it went to his heart to hear her. But they following Wilſon, who told them they were juſt *landed*, that was his word, he led them up a long garden-walk, by a back-way. One of the three men having got before, opened the garden-door, and held it in his hand; and by the time they got to the houſe to which the garden ſeemed to belong, the dear creature ceaſed ſcreaming.

They too well ſaw the cauſe, when they ſtopt with her. She was in a fit.

Two women, by the aſſiſtance of the perſon in the cloak, helped her out, with great ſeeming tenderneſs. They ſaid ſomething in praiſe of her beauty, and expreſſed themſelves concerned for her, as if they were afraid ſhe was paſt recovery: Which apparently ſtartled the man in the cloak.

Wilſon entered the houſe with thoſe who carried in the dear creature; but ſoon came out to the chairmen. They ſaw the man in the cloak (who hung about the villain; and hugged him, as in joy) give the raſcal money: who then put a guinea into each of their hands; and conveyed them thro' the garden again, to the door at which they entered; but refuſed them light even ſo much as that of their own candle and lantern. However he ſent another man with them, who led them over rough and dirty by-ways into a path that pointed London-ward; but plainly ſo much about with deſign to make it difficult for them to find out the place again.

The other fellow is brought hither: He tells exactly the ſame ſtory.

I aſked

I asked of both, what sort of man he in the cloak was; but he so carefully muffled himself up, and so little appeared to them, either walking after them, or at the house, that I could gain no light from their description.

On their promise to be forth-coming, I have suffered them to go with Lady Betty's chairmen to try if they can trace out their own footsteps, and find the place.

The four chairmen are just returned. They think they have found the place; but having gained some intelligence (intelligence which distracts me!) they hurried back for directions.

They had asked a neighbouring alehouse-keeper, if there were not a long garden (belonging to the house they suspected) and a back-door out of it to a dirty lane and fields. He answered in the affirmative. The front of this house faces the road.

They called for some hot liquors; and asked the landlord after the owners. He knew nothing of harm of them, he said. They had lived there near a twelvemonth in reputation. The family consisted of a widow, whose name is Awberry, her son and two daughters. The son (a man of about thirty years of age) has a place in the Custom-house, and only came down on a Saturday, and went up on Monday. But an odd circumstance, he said, had alarmed him that very morning.

He was at first a little shy of telling what it was. He loved, he said, to mind his own business: What other people did was nothing to him: But, at last, he told them, that about six o'clock in the morning he was awakened by the trampling of horses; and looking out of his window, saw a chariot-and-six, and three or four men on horseback, at the widow Awberry's door. He got up. The footmen and coachmen were very *hush*, not calling for a drop of liquor, tho' his doors were open: A rare instance, he said, where there were so many men-servants together, and a coachman one of them. This, he said, could not but give a greater edge to his curiosity.

About seven o'clock, one of the widow's daughters came to the door, with a lighted candle in her hand, and directed the chariot to drive up close to the house. The alehouse-keeper then slipt into an arbour-like porch, next door to the widow's; where he had not been three minutes before he saw two persons come to the door; the one a tall gentleman in laced cloaths, who had his arms about the other, a person of

middling

middling ſtature, wrapt up in a ſcarlet cloak; and reſiſting, as one in great diſtreſs, the other's violence, and begging not to be put into the chariot, in a voice and accent, that ſhewed evidently it was a woman.

The gentleman made vehement proteſtations of honour; but lifted the Lady into the chariot. She ſtruggled, and ſeemed to be in agonies of grief; aud on being lifted in, and the gentleman going in after her, ſhe ſcreamed out for help; and he obſerved in the ſtruggling, that ſhe had on, under her cloak, a ſilverlaced habit (the Maſquerade habit, no doubt!) Her ſcreaming grew fainter and fainter, and her voice ſounded to him, as if her mouth were ſtopped. And the gentleman ſeemed to ſpeak high, as if he threatened her.

Away drove the chariot. The ſervants rode after it.

In about half an hour, a coach and four came to the widow's door; the widow and her two daughters went into it, and it took the ſame road.

The alehouſe-keeper had afterwards the curioſity to aſk the maid-ſervant, an ignorant country wench, whither her miſtreſſes went ſo early in the morning? She anſwered they were gone to Windſor, or that way, and would not return, ſhe believed, in a week.

O this damn'd Sir Hargrave! He has a houſe upon the foreſt. I have no doubt but he is the villain. Who knows what injuries the dear creature might have ſuſtained before ſhe was forced into the chariot? — God give me patience! Dear ſoul! Her prayers! Her ſtruggling! Her crying out for help! Her mouth ſtopt! — O the villain!

I have ordered as many men and horſes as two of my friends can furniſh me with, to be added to two of my own (we ſhall be nine in all) to get ready with all ſpeed. I will purſue the villain to the world's end, but I will find him.

I have, however, accepted Lady Betty's offer of her ſteward's going with the two chairmen, to get what farther intelligence he can from Paddington, againſt my return.

At four in the morning the ſix men I borrow, and myſelf, and two of my ſervants, well armed, are to rendevous at Hyde-Park Corner. It is grievous that another night muſt paſs. But ſo many people cannot be got together as two or three might.

My poor wife has made me promiſe to take the aſſiſtance of peace-officers, where-ever I find either the villain, or the ſuffering angel.

Where the road parts, we ſhall divide, and enquire at every turnpike; and ſhall agree upon our places of meeting.

I am haraſſed to death: But my mind is the greateſt ſufferer.

O my dear Mr. Selby! We *have* tidings — God be praiſed, we have tidings — Not ſo happy indeed as were to be wiſhed: Yet the dear creature is living, and in honourable hands — God be praiſed!

Read the incloſed Letter directed to me.

SIR,

Miſs Byron is in ſafe and honourable hands.

The firſt moment ſhe could give any account of herſelf, ſhe beſought me to quiet your heart, and your Lady's, with this information.

She has been cruelly treated.

Particulars, at preſent, ſhe cannot give.

She was many hours ſpeechleſs.

But don't fright yourſelves: Her fits, tho' not leſs frequent, are weaker.

The bearer will acquaint you who my Brother is; to whom you owe the preſervation and ſafety of the lovelieſt woman in England; and he will direct you to a houſe where you will be welcome with your Lady (for Miſs Byron cannot be removed) to convince yourſelves that all poſſible care is taken of her, by, Sir,

Friday, Feb. 17.

Your humble Servant,
CHARLOTTE GRANDISON.

In fits! — *Has been cruelly treated!* — *Many hours ſpeechleſs!* — *Cannot be removed!* — Deareſt, dear creature! — But you will rejoice with me, my couſins, that ſhe is in ſuch honourable hands.

She is at a nobleman's houſe, the Earl of L. near Colnebrooke.

I ſhall ſet out before day, on horſeback. My ſervant ſhall carry with him a portmanteau of things, ordered by my wife. My couſin muſt have made a ſtrange appearance in her Maſquerade dreſs, to her deliverer.

The honeſt man who brought the Letter was but juſt returned from Windſor, whither he had been ſent early in the morning, to tranſact ſome buſineſs, when he was diſpatched away

away to us with the welcome Letter. He could not therefore be ſo particular as we wiſhed him. What he gathered was from the houſekeeper; the men-ſervants, who were in the fray (A fray there was!) being gone to town with their maſter. But what we learnt from him, is, briefly, as follows:

His maſter is Sir Charles Grandiſon; a gentleman who has not been long in England. I have often heard mention of his father, Sir Thomas, who died not long ago. This honeſt man knew not when to ſtop in his maſter's praiſe. He gives his young Lady alſo an excellent character.

Sir Charles was going to town in his chariot-and-ſix when he met (moſt happily met!) our diſtreſſed couſin.

Sir Hargrave *is* the villain.

Sir Charles had earneſt buſineſs in town; and he proceeded thither, after he had reſcued the dear creature, and committed her to the care of his ſiſter. — God for ever bleſs him!

The vile Sir Hargrave, as the ſervant underſtood, was wounded. Sir Charles it ſeems was alſo hurt. Thank God it was ſo ſlightly, as not to hinder him from purſuing his journey to town after the glorious act.

I will ſpeed this away by Richard Fennell. I will ſoon ſend you farther particulars by the poſt: Not unhappy ones, I hope.

Ever Yours,

ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. REEVES, *to* GEORGE SELBY, *Eſq.*

Dear Sir, *Sat. Feb.* 18.

I am juſt returned from viſiting my beloved couſin. You will be glad of every minute particular, as I can give it to you, relating to this ſhocking affair; and to her protector and his ſiſter. There are not ſuch another brother and ſiſter in England.

I got to the hoſpitable manſion by nine this morning. I enquired after Miſs Byron's health; and, on giving in my name, was ſhewn into a handſome parlour, elegantly furniſhed.

Immediately came down to me a very agreeable young Lady; Miſs Grandiſon. I gave her a thouſand thanks for the honour of her Letter, and the joyful information it had given me of the ſafety of one ſo deſervedly dear to us.

She *muſt* be an excellent young Lady, anſwered ſhe. I have juſt left her — You muſt not ſee her yet —

Ah, madam, ſaid I, and looked ſurpriſed and grieved, I believe. —

Don't affright yourſelf, Sir. Miſs Byron will do very well. But ſhe muſt be kept quiet. She has had a happy deliverance — She —

O madam, interrupted I, your generous, your noble brother. —

Is the beſt of men, Mr. Reeves: His delight is in doing good. — And, as to this adventure, it has made him, I am ſure, a very happy man.

But is my couſin, madam, ſo ill, that I cannot be allowed to ſee her for one moment?

She is but juſt come out of a fit. She fell into it in the relation ſhe would have made of her ſtory, on mentioning the villain's name by whom ſhe has ſuffered. She could give only broken and imperfect accounts of herſelf all day yeſterday, or you had heard from me ſooner. When you ſee her, you muſt be very cautious of what you ſay to her. We have a ſkilful phyſician, by whoſe advice we proceed.

God for ever bleſs you, madam!

He has not long left her. He adviſes quiet. She has had a very bad night. Could ſhe compoſe herſelf, could ſhe get a little natural reſt, the cure is performed. Have you breakfaſted, Sir?

Breakfaſted, madam! My impatience to ſee my couſin allowed me not to think of breakfaſt.

You muſt breakfaſt with me, Sir. And when that is over, if ſhe is tolerable, we will acquaint her with your arrival, and go up together. I read your impatience, Sir: We will make but very ſhort breakfaſting. I was juſt *going* to breakfaſt.

She rang. It was brought in.

I longed, I ſaid, as we ſat at tea, to be acquainted with the particulars of the happy deliverance.

We avoid aſking any queſtions that may affect her. I know very little of the particulars myſelf. My brother was in haſte to get to town. The ſervants that were with him at the time, hardly diſmounted: He doubted not but the Lady (to whom he referred me for the gratifying my curioſity) would be able to tell me every-thing. But ſhe fell into fits, and, as I told you, was ſo ill, on the recollection of what ſhe had ſuffered. —

Good

Good God! ſaid I, what *muſt* the dear creature have ſuffered!

— That we thought fit to reſtrain our curioſity, and ſo muſt you, till we ſee Sir Charles. I expect him before noon.

I am told, madam, that there was a ſkirmiſh. I hope Sir Charles. —

I hope ſo too, Mr. Reeves, interrupted ſhe. I long to ſee my brother as much as you can do to ſee your couſin — But on my apprehenſions, he aſſured me upon his honour, that he was but very ſlightly hurt. Sir Charles is no qualifier, Sir, when he ſtakes his honour, be the occaſion either light or ſerious.

I ſaid, I doubted not but ſhe was very much ſurpriſed at a Lady's being brought in by Sir Charles, and in a dreſs ſo fantaſtic.

I was, Sir. I had not left my chamber: But haſtened down at the firſt word, to receive and welcome the ſtranger. My maid, out of breath, burſt into my room — Sir Charles, madam, beſeeches you this moment to come down. He has ſaved a Lady from robbers (that was her report) a very fine Lady! and is come back with her. He begs that you will come down this inſtant.

I was too much ſurpriſed at my brother's unexpected return, and too much affected with the Lady's viſible grief and terror, to attend to her dreſs, when I firſt went down. She was ſitting, dreadfully trembling, and Sir Charles next her, in a very tender manner, aſſuring her of his and of his ſiſter's kindeſt protection. I ſaluted her, continued the Lady: Welcome, welcome, thrice welcome to this houſe, and to me — She threw herſelf on one knee to me. Diſtreſs had too much humbled her. Sir Charles and I raiſed her to her ſeat. You ſee before you, madam, ſaid ſhe, a ſtrange creature; and looked at her dreſs. Think not hardly, Sir, turning to Sir Charles, her hand claſped and held up, of her whom you have ſo generouſly delivered. Think not hardly of me, madam, turning to me: I am not a bad creature. That vile, vile man! — She could ſay no more.

Charlotte, ſaid my brother, you will make it your firſt care to raiſe the ſpirits of this injured beauty: Your next, to take her directions, and inform her friends of her ſafety.

She wiſhed to be conveyed to town; but looking at her dreſs, I offered her cloaths of mine; and my brother ſaid, if ſhe were very earneſt, and thought herſelf able to go, he

would take horſe, and leave the chariot, and he was ſure that I would attend her thither.

But before ſhe could declare her acceptance of this offer, as ſhe ſeemed joyfully ready to do, her ſpirits failed her, and ſhe ſunk down at my feet.

Sir Charles juſt ſtaid to ſee her come to herſelf; and then — Siſter, ſaid he, the Lady cannot be removed. Let Dr. Holmes be ſent for inſtantly. I know you will give her your beſt attendance. I will be with you before noon to-morrow. The Lady is too low, and too weak, to be troubled with queſtions now. Johnſon will be back from Windſor. Let him take her commands to any of her friends. Adieu, dear madam — (Your couſin, Sir, ſeemed likely to faint again) Support yourſelf. Repeating, You are in ſafe and honourable hands; bowing to her, as ſhe bowed in return, but ſpoke not — Adieu, Charlotte: And away went the beſt of brothers.

And God Almighty bleſs him, ſaid I, where-ever he goes!

Miſs Grandiſon then told me, that the houſe I was in belonged to the Earl of L. who had lately married her elder ſiſter: About three months ago, they ſet out, ſhe ſaid, to pay a viſit to my Lord's eſtate and relations in Scotland, for the firſt time, and to ſettle ſome affairs there: They were expected back in a week or fortnight: She came down but laſt Tueſday, and *that* in order to give directions for every-thing to be prepared for their reception. It was happy for your couſin, ſaid ſhe, that I obtained the favour of my brother's company; and that he was obliged to be in town this morning. He intended to come back to carry me to town this evening. We are a family of love, Mr. Reeves. We are true brothers and ſiſters — But why do I trouble you with theſe things now? We ſhall be better acquainted. I am charmed with Miſs Byron.

She was ſo good as to hurry the breakfaſt; and when it was over, conducted me up ſtairs. She bid me ſtay at the door, and ſtept gently to the bed-ſide, and opening the curtain, I heard the voice of our couſin.

Dear madam, what trouble do I give! were her words.

Still talk of trouble, Miſs Byron! anſwered Miſs Grandiſon, with an amiable familiarity; you will not forbear — Will you promiſe me not to be ſurpriſed at the arrival of your couſin Reeves?

I do

I do promise — I shall rejoice to see him.

Miss Grandison called to me. I approached, and catching my cousin's held-out hand, Thank God, thank God, best beloved of an hundred hearts! said I, that once more I behold you! that once more I see you in safe and honourable hands! — I will not tell you what we have all suffered.

No, don't, said she — You need not — But, O my cousin! I have fallen into the company of angels.

Forbear, gently patting her hand, forbear these high flights, said the kind Lady, or I shall beat my charming patient. I shall not think you in a way to be quite well, till you *descend*.

She whispered me, that the doctor had expressed fears for her head, if she were not kept quiet. Then raising her voice, Your cousin's gratitude, Mr. Reeves, is excessive. You must allow me, smiling, to beat her. When she is well, she shall talk of angels, and of what she pleases.

She then asked me, if I had let her friends in the country know of this shocking affair?

I had suspected Mr. Greville, I said; and had written in confidence to her uncle Selby —

O my poor grandmamma — O my good aunt Selby, and my Lucy — I hope —

Miss Grandison interposed, humorously interrupting — I will have nothing said that begins with O. Indeed, Miss Byron, Mr. Reeves, I will not trust you together — Cannot you have patience —

We both asked her pardon. My cousin desired leave to rise — But these odious cloaths, said she —

If you are well enough, child, replied Miss Grandison, you shall rise, and have no need to see those odious cloaths, as you call them. I told them Mrs. Reeves had sent her some of her cloaths. The portmanteau was ordered to be brought up.

Then Miss Grandison, sitting down on the bed by my cousin, took her hand; and, feeling her pulse, Are you sure, my patient, that you shall not suffer if you are permitted to rise? Will you be calm, serene, easy? Will you banish curiosity? Will you endeavour to avoid recollection?

I will do my endeavour, answered my cousin.

Miss Grandison then rung, and a maid-servant coming up, Jenny, said she, pray give your best assistance to my lovely patient. But be sure don't let her hurry her spirits. I will lead

lead Mr. Reeves into my dreſſing-room. And when you are dreſſed, my dear, we will either return to you here, or expect you join us there, at your pleaſure.

And then ſhe obligingly conducted me into her dreſſing-room; and excuſed herſelf for refuſing to let us talk of intereſting ſubjects. I am rejoiced, ſaid ſhe, to find her more ſedate and compoſed than hitherto ſhe has been. Her head has been greatly in danger. Her talk, for ſome hours, when ſhe *did* talk, was ſo wild and incoherent, and ſhe was ſo full of terror, on every one's coming in her ſight, that I would not ſuffer any-body to attend her but myſelf.

Let me tell you, Mr. Reeves, I am as curious as you can be, to know the whole of what has befallen her. But her heart is tender and delicate. Her ſpirits are low; and we muſt not pull down with one hand, what we build up with the other: My brother alſo will expect a good account of my charge.

I bleſſed her for her goodneſs. And finding her deſirous of knowing all that I could tell her, of our couſins character, family, and lovers, I gave her a brief hiſtory, which extremely pleaſed her. Good God! ſaid ſhe, what a happineſs is it, that ſuch a Lady, in ſuch a diſtreſs, ſhould meet with a man as excellent, and as much admired, as herſelf! My brother, Mr. Reeves, can never marry but he muſt break half a ſcore hearts. Forgive me, that I bring *him* in, whenever any good perſon, or thing, or action, is ſpoken of. Every-body, I believe, who is ſtrongly poſſeſſed of a ſubject, makes every-thing ſeen, heard, or read of, that bears the leaſt reſemblence, turn into and illuſtrate that ſubject.

But here I will conclude this Letter, in order to ſend it by the poſt. Beſides, I have been to much fatigued in body and mind, and my wife has alſo been ſo much diſturbed in *her* mind, that I muſt give way to a call of reſt.

If our couſin has a good day to morrow, and no return of her fits, ſhe propoſes to be in town on Monday. I am to wait on her, and Sir Charles and his ſiſter, at breakfaſt on Monday morning, and to attend her home; where there will be joy indeed, on her arrival.

Pray receive for yourſelf, and make for me to your Lady, and all friends, my compliments of congratulation.

I have

I have not had either leiſure or inclination to enquire after the villain, who has given us all this diſturbance.

Saturday Night.

Ever, ever yours,
ARCHIBALD REEVES.

From Mr. REEVES, *to* GEORGE SELBY, *Eſq.*

In Continuation.

Miſs Grandiſon went to my couſin, to ſee how ſhe bore riſing, ſuppoſing her near dreſſed.

She ſoon returned to me. The moſt charming woman, I think, ſaid ſhe, I ever ſaw! But ſhe trembles ſo, that I have perſuaded her to lie down. I anſwered for you, that you would ſtay dinner.

I muſt beg excuſe, madam. I have an excellent wife. She loves Miſs Byron as her life: She will be impatient to know —

Well, well, well, ſay no more, Mr. Reeves: My brother has redeemed one priſoner, and his ſiſter has taken another: And glad you may be, that it is no worſe.

I bowed, and looked ſilly, I believe.

You *may* look, and beg and pray, Mr. Reeves. When you know me better, you'll find me a very whimſical creature: But you muſt ſtay to ſee Sir Charles. Would you go home to your wife with half your errand? She won't thank you for that, I can tell you, let her be as good a woman as the beſt. But, to comfort you, we give not into every modern faſhion. We dine earlier, than moſt people of our condition. My brother, tho' in the main above ſingularity, will, nevertheleſs, in things he thinks right, be govern'd by his own rules, which are the laws of reaſon and convenience. You are on horſeback; and, were I you, ſuch good news as I ſhould have to carry, conſidering what *might* have happened, would give me wings, and make me fly thro' the air with it.

I was equally delighted and ſurpriſed at her humorous raillery; but could not anſwer a ſingle word. If it be midnight before you will ſuffer me to depart, thought I, I will not make another objection.

While this amiable Lady was thus entertaining me, we heard the trampling of horſes — My brother! ſaid ſhe; I hope! — He comes! pardon the fondneſs of a ſiſter, who ſpeaks from ſenſible effects — A father and brother in one!

Sir Charles entered the room. He addreffed himfef to me in a moft polite manner. Mr. Reeves! faid he, as I underftand from below — Then turning to his fifter. Excufe me, Charlotte. I heard this worthy gentleman was with you: And I was impatient to know how my fair gueft —

Mifs Byron is in a good way, I hope, interrupted fhe, but very weak and low-fpirited. She arofe and dreffed; but I have prevailed on her to lie down again.

Then turning to me, with a noble air, he both welcomed and congratulated me.

Sir Charles Grandifon is indeed a fine figure. He is in the bloom of youth. I don't know that I have ever feen an handfomer or genteeler man. Well might his fifter fay, that if he married, he would break half a fcore hearts. O this vile Pollexfen! thought I, at the moment; Could he draw upon, has he hurt, fuch a man as this?

After pouring out my acknowledgements, in the name of feveral families, as well as in my own, I could not but enquire into the nature of the hurt he had received.

A very trifle! — My coat only was hurt, Mr. Reeves. The fkin of my left fhoulder raked a little, putting his hand upon it.

Thank God, faid I: Thank God, faid Mifs Grandifon — But fo *near!* — O the villain! what might it have been! —

Sir Hargrave, pent up in a chariot, had great difadvantage. My reflexions on the event of yefterday, yield me the more pleafure, as I have, on enquiry, underftood that he will do well again, if he will be ruled. I would not, on any account, have had his inftant death to anfwer for. But no more of this juft now. Give me the particulars of the young Lady's ftate of health. I left her in a very bad way. — You had advice?

Mifs Grandifon gave her brother an account of all that had been done; and of every-thing that had paffed fince he went away; as alfo of the character and excellencies of the Lady whom he had refcued.

I confirmed what fhe faid in my coufin's favour; and he very gratefully thanked his fifter for her care, as a man would do for one the neareft and deareft to him.

We then befought him to give an account of the glorious action, which had reftored to all that knew her, the darling of our hearts.

I have

I will relate all he ſaid, in the firſt perſon, as nearly in his own words as poſſible; and will try to hit the coolneſs with which he told the agreeable ſtory.

"You know, ſiſter, ſaid he, the call I had to town. It "was happy, that I yielded to your importunity to attend "you hither.

"About two miles on this ſide Hounſlow, I ſaw a chariot-"and-ſix driving at a great rate. I alſo had ordered Jerry to "drive pretty faſt.

"The coachman ſeemed inclined to diſpute the way with "mine. This occaſioned a few moments ſtop to both. I "ordered my coachman to break the way. I don't love to "ſtand upon trifles. My horſes were freſh. I had not "come far.

"The curtain of the chariot we met was pulled down. I "ſaw not who was in it. But on turning out of the way, I "knew by the arms it was Sir Hargrave Pollexfen's.

"There was in it a gentleman, who immediately pulled up "the canvaſs.

"I ſaw, however, before he drew it up, another perſon, "wrapt up in a man's ſcarlet cloak.

"For God's ſake! help, help! cried out the perſon: For "God's ſake! help!

"I ordered my coachman to ſtop.

"Drive on, ſaid the gentleman; curſing his coachman: "Drive on when I bid you.

"Help! again cried ſhe, but with a voice as if her mouth "was half ſtopt.

"I called to my ſervants on horſeback to ſtop the poſtillion "of the other chariot. And I bid Sir Hargrave's coachman "proceed at his peril.

"Sir Hargrave called out on the contrary ſide of the chariot "(his canvas being ſtill up on that next me) with vehement "execrations to drive on.

"I alighted, and went round to the other ſide of the "chariot.

"Again the Lady endeavoured to cry out. I ſaw Sir Har-"grave ſtruggle to pull over her mouth an handkerchief, "which was tied round her head. He ſwore outrageouſly.

"The moment ſhe beheld me, ſhe ſpread out both her "hands — For God's ſake —

"Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, ſaid I, by the arms. — You are "engaged, I doubt, in a very bad affair.

"I *am*

"I *am* Sir Hargrave Pollexfen; and am carrying a fugitive "wife — Your *own* wife, Sir Hargrave!

"Yes, by G—, ſaid he; and ſhe was going to elope from "me at a damned Maſquerade — See! drawing aſide the cloak, "detected in the very dreſs!

"O no, no, no! ſaid the Lady —

"Proceed, coachman, ſaid he, and curſed and ſwore —

"Let me aſk the Lady a queſtion, Sir Hargrave.

"You are impertinent, Sir. Who the devil are you?

"Are you, madam, Lady Pollexfen? ſaid I.

"O no! no! no! — was all ſhe could ſay —

"Two of my ſervants came about me; a third held the "head of the horſe on which the poſtillion ſat. Three of Sir "Hargrave's approached on their horſes, but ſeemend as if "afraid to come too near, and parleyed together.

"Have an eye to thoſe fellows, ſaid I. Some baſe work is "on foot. You'll preſently be aided by paſſengers. Sirrah, "ſaid I to the coachman (for he laſhed the horſes on) proceed "at your peril.

"Sir Hargrave then, with violent curſes and threatenings, "ordered him to drive over every one that oppoſed him.

"Coachman, proceed at your peril, ſaid I. Madam will "you —

"O Sir, Sir, Sir, relieve, help me for God's ſake! I am "in a villain's hands! Tricked, vilely tricked, into a villain's "hands. Help, help, for God's ſake!

"Do you, ſaid I, to Frederick, cut the traces, if you cannot "otherwiſe ſtop this chariot. Bid Jerry cut the reins; and "then ſeize as many of thoſe fellows as you can. Leave Sir "Hargrave to me.

"The Lady continued ſcreaming and crying out for help.

"Sir Hargrave drew his ſword, which he had held between "his knees in the ſcabbard; and then called upon his ſervants "to fire at all that oppoſed his progreſs.

"My ſervants, Sir Hargrave, have fire-arms as well as "yours. They will not diſpute my orders. Don't provoke "me to give the word.

"Then addreſſing the Lady, Will you, madam, put your-"ſelf into my protection?

"O yes, yes, yes, with my whole heart — Dear good "Sir, protect me!

"I opened the chariot-door. Sir Hargrave made a paſs at "me. Take *that*, and be damned to you, for your inſo-"lence, ſcoundrel! ſaid he.

"I was aware of his thruſt, and put it by; but his ſword "a little raked my ſhoulder.

"My ſword was in my hand, but undrawn.

"The chariot-door remaining open (I was not ſo ceremo- "nious, as to let down the foot-ſtep to take the gentleman "out) I ſeized him by the collar before he could recover "himſelf from the paſs he had made at me; and with a jerk, "and a kind of twiſt, laid him under the hind-wheel of his "chariot.

"I wrenched his ſword from him, and ſnapped it, and "flung the two pieces over my head.

"His coachman cried out for his maſter. Mine threatened "*his* if he ſtirred. The poſtillion was a boy. My ſervant "had made him diſmount, before he joined the other two, "whom I had ordered aloud jo endeavour to ſeize (but my "view was only to terrify) wretches, who, knowing the bad- "neſs of their cauſe, were before terrified.

"Sir Hargrave's mouth and face were very bloody. I be- "lieve I might hurt him with the pummel of my ſword.

"One of his legs, in his ſprawling, had got between the "ſpokes of his chariot-wheel. I thought that was a fortunate "circumſtance for preventing further miſchief; and charged "his coachman not to ſtir with the chariot for his maſter's "ſake.

"He cried out, curs'd, and ſwore. I believe he was brui- "ſed with the fall. The jerk was violent. So little able to "ſupport an offence, Sir Hargrave, upon his own principles, "ſhould not have been ſo ready to give it.

"I had not drawn my ſword: I hope I never ſhall be pro- "voked to do it in a private quarrel. I ſhould not however, "have ſcrupled to draw it, on ſuch an occaſion as this, had "there been an abſolute neceſſity for it.

"The Lady, though greatly terrified, had diſengaged her- "ſelf from the man's cloak. I had not leiſure to conſider her "dreſs; but I was ſtruck with her figure, and more with her "terror.

"I offered my hand. I thought not now of the foot-ſtep, "any more than I did before: She not of any-thing, as it "ſeemed, but her deliverance.

"I carried the lovely creature round Sir Hargrave's horſes, "and ſeated her in my chariot — Be aſſured, madam, ſaid "I, that you are in honourable hands. I will convey you to "my ſiſter, who is a young Lady of honour and virtue.

"She

"She look'd out at one window, then a the other, in "visible terror, as if fearing still Sir Hargrave. Fear nothing, "said I: I will attend you in a moment. I shut the chariot-"door.

"I then went backward a few paces (keeping, however, "the Lady in my eye) to see what had become of my "servants.

"It seems, that at their first coming up pretty near with "Sir Hargrave's horsemen, they presented their pistols.

"What shall we do, Wilkins, or Wilson, or some such "name, said one of Sir Hargrave's men to another, all three "of them on their defence? Fly for it, answered the fellow. "We may swing for this. I see our master down. There "may be murder.

"Their consciences put them to flight.

"My servants pursued them a little way; but were re-"turning to support their master, just as I had put the Lady "into my chariot.

"I saw Sir Hargrave at a distance, on his legs, supported "by his coachman. He limped; leaned his whole weight "upon his servant; and seemed to be in agonies.

"I bid one of my servants tell him who I was.

"He cursed me, and threatened vengeance. He cursed my "servant; and still more outrageously his own scoundrels, as "he called them.

"I then stept back to my chariot.

"Miss Byron had, thro' terror, sunk down at the bottom "of it; where she lay panting, and could only say, on my "approach, Save me! Save me!

"I re-assured her. I lifted her on the seat; and brought "her to my sister. And what followed, I suppose, Charlotte, "bowing to her, you have told Mr. Reeves.

"We were both about to break out in grateful applauses; "but Sir Charles, as if designing to hinder us, proceeded.

"You see, Mr. Reeves, what an easy conquest this was. "You see what a small degree of merit falls to my share. "The violator's conscience was against him. The consciences "of his fellows were on my side. My own servants are honest "worthy men. They love their master. In a good cause I "would set any three of them against six who were engaged "in a bad one. Vice is the greatest coward in the world, "when it knows it will be resolutely opposed. And what "have good men, engaged in a right cause, to fear?

What

What an admirable man is Sir Charles Grandiſon! — Thus thinking! Thus acting!

I explained to Sir Charles who this Wilſon was, whom the others conſulted, and were directed by; and what an implement in this black tranſaction.

To what other man's protection in the world, Mr. Selby, could our kinſwoman have been obliged, and ſo little miſchief followed?

Sir Hargrave, it ſeems, returned back to town. What a recreant figure, my dear Mr. Selby, muſt he make, even to himſelf! — A villain!

I long to have Miſs Byron's account of this horrid affair. — God grant, that it may not be ſuch a one, as will lay us under a neceſſity — But as our couſin has a great notion of female delicacy — I know not what I would ſay — We muſt have patience a little while longer.

Miſs Grandiſon's eyes ſhone with pleaſure all the time her brother was giving his relation.

I can only ſay, my brother, ſaid ſhe, when he had done, that you have reſcued an angel of a woman; and you have made me as happy by it, as yourſelf.

I have a generous ſiſter, Mr. Reeves, ſaid Sir Charles.

Till I knew my brother, Mr. Reeves, as I now know him, I was an inconſiderate, unreflecting girl. Good and evil which immediately affected not myſelf, were almoſt alike indifferent to me. But he has awakened in me a capacity to enjoy the true pleaſure that ariſes from a benevolent action.

Depreciate not, my Charlotte, your own worth. Abſence, Mr. Reeves, endears. I have been long abroad. Not much above a year returned: But when you know us better, you will find I have a partial ſiſter.

Mr. Reeves will not then think me ſo. But I will go and ſee how my fair patient does.

She went accordingly to my couſin.

O Sir Charles, ſaid I, what an admirable woman is Miſs Grandiſon!

My ſiſter Charlotte, Mr. Reeves, is indeed, an excellent woman. I think myſelf happy in her. But I tell her ſometimes, that I have ſtill a *more* excellent ſiſter. And it is no ſmall inſtance of Charlotte's greatneſs of mind, that ſhe herſelf will allow me to ſay ſo.

Juſt then came in the Ladies. The two charming creatures entered together, Miſs Grandiſon ſupporting my trembling

couſin:

coufin: But fhe had firft acquainted her, that fhe would find Sir Charles in *her* dreffing-room.

She looked indeed lovely, tho' wan, at her firft entrance: But a fine glow overfpread her cheeks, at the fight of her deliverer.

Sir Charles approached her, with an air of calmnefs and ferenity, for fear of giving her emotion. She caft her eyes upon him, with a look of the moft refpectful gratitude.

I will not opprefs my fair gueft with many words! But permit me to congratulate you, as I hope I may, on your recovered fpirits — Allow me, madam —

And he took her almoft motionlefs hand, and conducted her to an eafy chair that had been fet for her. She fat down, and would have faid fomething; but only bowed to Sir Charles, to Mifs Grandifon, and me; and reclined her head againft the chek of the chair.

Mifs Grandifon held her falts to her.

She took them into her own hands, and fmelling to them, raifed her head a little: Forgive me, madam! Pardon me, Sir! — O my coufin, to me — How can I — So oppreffed with obligations! — Such goodnefs! —

And then fhe again reclined her head, as giving up hopelefly the effort fhe made to exprefs her gratitude.

You muft not, madam, faid Sir Charles, fitting down by her, over-rate a common benefit. — Dear Mifs Byron (Permit me to addrefs myfelf to you, as of long acquaintance) by what Mr. Reeves has told my fifter, and both have told me, I muft think yefterday one of the happieft days of my life. I am forry that our acquaintance has begun fo much at your coft: But you muft let us turn this evil appearance into real good. I have two fifters: The world produces not more worthy women. Let me henceforth boaft that I have three: And fhall I not then have reafon to rejoice in the event that has made fo lovely an addition to my family?

Then taking her paffive hand with the tendernefs of a truly affectionate brother, confoling a fifter in calamity, and taking his fifter's, and joining both; Shall I not, madam, prefent my Charlotte to a fifter? And will you not permit me to claim as a brother under that relation? — Our Mifs Byron's Chriftian name, Mr. Reeves?

Harriet, Sir.

My fifter Harriet, receive and acknowledge your Charlotte. My Charlotte —

Mifs

Miſs Grandiſon aroſe and ſaluted my couſin; who looked at Sir Charles with reverence, as well as gratitude; at Miſs Grandiſon with delight; and at me with eyes lifted up. And, after a little ſtruggle for ſpeech; How ſhall I bear this goodneſs! ſaid ſhe — This indeed is bringing good out of evil! — Did I not ſay, my couſin, that I was fallen into the company of angels?

I was afraid ſhe would have fainted.

We muſt endeavour, Mr. Reeves, ſaid Sir Charles to me, to leſſen the ſenſe *our* Miſs Byron has of her paſt danger, in order to bring down to reaſonable limits the notion ſhe has of her obligation for a common relief.

Miſs Grandiſon ordered a few drops on ſugar. — You muſt be orderly, my ſiſter Harriet, ſaid ſhe. Am I not your elder ſiſter? *My* elder ſiſter makes me do what ſhe pleaſes.

Oh! madam! ſaid my couſin —

Call me not *madam*; call me *your Charlotte*. My brother has given me and himſelf a ſiſter; — Will you not own me?

My lips and my heart, I will be ſo bold as to ſay, ever went together: But how — and yet ſo ſweetly invited, My — My — My Charlotte (withdrawing her hand from Sir Charles, and claſping both her arms round Miſs Grandiſon's neck, take your Harriet, perſon and mind — May I be found worthy, on proof, of all this goodneſs!

I ſtayed to dine with this amiable brother and ſiſter. My couſin exerted herſelf, to go down, and ſat at table for one half-hour: But changing countenance, once or twice, as ſhe ſat, Miſs Grandiſon would attend her up, and make her lie down. I took leave of her, at her quitting the table.

On Monday I hope to ſee her once more among us.

If our dear Miſs Byron cannot write, you will perhaps have one Letter more, my dear Mr. Selby, from

Your ever-affectionate
ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Mr. REEVES. *In Continuation.*

Monday Night, Feb. 20.

I will write one more Letter, my dear couſin Selby, and then I will give up my pen to our beloved couſin.

I got to Colnebrooke by nine this morning. I had the pleaſure to find our Miſs Byron recovered beyond my hopes.

G She

She had a very good night on Saturday; and all Sunday, ſhe ſaid, was a cordial day to her from morning till night; and her night was quiet and happy.

Miſs Grandiſon ſtaid at home yeſterday to keep my couſin company. Sir Charles paſſed the greateſt part of the day in the library. The two Ladies were hardly ever ſeparated. My couſin expreſſes herſelf in raptures whenever ſhe ſpeaks of this brother and ſiſter. Miſs Grandiſon, ſhe ſays (and indeed every one muſt ſee it) is one of the frankeſt and moſt communicative of women. Sir Charles appears to be one of the moſt unreſerved of men, as well as one of the moſt polite. He makes not his gueſt uneaſy with his civilities: But you ſee freedom and eaſe in his whole deportment; and the ſtranger cannot doubt but Sir Charles will be equally pleaſed with freedom and eaſe, in return. I had an encouraging proof of the juſtneſs of this obſervation this morning from him, as we ſat at breakfaſt. I had expreſſed myſelf, occaſionally, in ſuch a manner, as ſhewed more reſpect than freedom: My dear Mr. Reeves, ſaid he, like minds will be intimate at firſt ſight. Receive me early into the liſt of your friends; I have already numbered you among mine. I ſhould think amiſs of myſelf, if ſo good a man as I am aſſured Mr. Reeves is, ſhould by his diſtance ſhew a diffidence of me, that would not permit his mind to mingle with mine.

Miſs Grandiſon, my couſin ſays, put her on relating to her, her whole hiſtory; and the hiſtories of the ſeveral perſons and families to whom ſhe is related.

Miſs Byron concluding as well as I, that Sir Charles would rather take his place in the coach than go on horſeback to town; and being ſo happily recovered, as not to give us apprehenſion about her bearing tolerably the little journey; I kept my horſe in our return, and Sir Charles went in the coach. This motion coming from Miſs Byron, I raillied her upon it when I got her home: But ſhe won't forgive me, if ſhe knows that I told you, whoſe the motion was. And yet the dear creature's eyes ſparkled with pleaſure when ſhe had carried her point.

I was at home near half an hour before the coach arrived; and was a welcome gueſt.

My dear Mrs. Reeves told me ſhe had expected our arrival before dinner, and hoped Sir Charles and his ſiſter would dine with us. I hoped ſo too, I told her.

I found

I found there Lady Betty and Miſs Clements a favourite of us all, both impatiently waiting to ſee my couſin.

Don't be jealous, Mr. Reeves, ſaid my wife, if after what I have heard of Sir Charles Grandiſon, and what he has done for us, I run to him with open arms.

I give you leave, my dear, to love him, replied I; and to expreſs your Love in what manner you pleaſe.

I have no doubt, ſaid Lady Betty, that I ſhall break my heart, if Sir Charles takes not very particular notice of me.

He ſhall have my prayers as well as my praiſes, ſaid Miſs Clements.

She is acquainted with the whole ſhocking affair.

When the coach ſtopt, aud the bell rung, the ſervants contended who ſhould firſt run to the door. I welcomed them at the coach. Sir Charles handed out Miſs Byron, I Miſs Grandiſon: Sally, ſaid my couſin, to her raptured maid, take care of Mrs. Jenny.

Sir Charles was received by Mrs. Reeves, as I expected. She was almoſt ſpeechleſs with joy. He ſaluted her: But I think, as I tell her, the firſt motion was hers. He was then obliged to go round; and my couſin, I do aſſure you, looked as if ſhe would not wiſh to have been neglected.

As ſoon as the Ladies could ſpeak, they poured out their bleſſings and thanks to him, and to Miſs Grandiſon; whom, with a moſt engaging air, he preſented to each Lady; and ſhe, as engagingly, ſaluted her ſiſter Harriet by that tender relation, and congratulated them, and Miſs Byron, and herſelf, upon it; kindly beſpeaking a family relation for herſelf, thro' her dear Miſs Byron, were her words.

When we were ſeated, my wife and Lady Betty wanted to enter into the particulars of the happy deliverance, in praiſe of the deliverer: But Sir Charles interrupting them, My dear Mrs. Reeves, ſaid he, you cannot bee too careful of this jewel. Every-thing may be truſted to her own diſcretion; but how can we well blame the man who would turn thief for ſo rich a treaſure? I do aſſure you, my ſiſter Harriet. Do you know, Mrs. Reeves, that I have found my third ſiſter? that if Sir Hargrave will repent, I will forgive him for the ſake of the temptation.

Mrs. Reeves was pleaſed with this addreſs, and has talked of it ſince.

I never can forgive him, Sir, ſaid Miſs Byron, were it but —

That he has laid you under ſuch an obligation, ſaid Miſs Grandiſon, patting her hand with her fan, as ſhe ſat overagainſt her: But huſh, child! You ſaid that before! — And then turning to Mrs. Reeves, Has not our new-found ſiſter a very proud heart, Mrs. Reeves?

And, deareſt Miſs Grandiſon, replied my ſmiling, delighted couſin, did you not aſk that queſtion before?

I did, child, I did, but not of Mrs. Reeves. — A compromiſe, however — Do you talk no more of *obligation*, and I'll talk no more of *pride*.

Charlotte juſtly chides her Harriet, ſaid Sir Charles. What muſt the man have been that had declined his aid in a diſtreſs ſo alarming? Not one word more therefore upon this ſubject.

We were all diſappointed, that this amiable brother and ſiſter excuſed themſelves from dining with us. All I mean of our own family; for Lady Betty and Miſs Clements, not being able to ſtay, were glad *they* did not.

They took leave, amidſt a thouſand grateful bleſſings and acknowledgements; Miſs Grandiſon promiſing to ſee her ſiſter Harriet very ſoon again; and kindly renewing her wiſhes of intimacy.

When they went away, There goes your heart, Miſs Byron, ſaid Mrs. Reeves.

True, anſwered Miſs Byron, if my heart have no place in it for any-thing but gratitude, as I believe it has not.

Miſs Grandiſon, added ſhe, is the moſt agreeable of women —

And Sir Charles, rejoined Mrs. Reeves, archly, is the moſt *diſ*-agreeable of men.

Forbear, couſin, replied Miſs Byron, and bluſhed.

Well, well, ſaid Lady Betty, you need not, my dear, be aſhamed, if it be ſo.

Indeed you need not, joined in Miſs Clements; I never ſaw a finer man in my life. Such a Lover, if one *might* have him —

If, if — replied Miſs Byron — But till *if* is out of the queſtion, ſhould there not be ſuch a thing as diſcretion, Miſs Clements?

No doubt of it, returned that young Lady; and if it *be* to be ſhewn by any woman on earth, where there is ſuch a man as this in the queſtion, and in ſuch circumſtances, it muſt be by Miſs Byron.

Miſs Byron was not ſo throughly recovered, but that her ſpirits began to flag. We made her retire, and at her requeſt excuſed her coming down to dinner.

I told

I told you I had accepted of the offer made by Lady Betty, when we were in dreadful uncertainty, that her steward should make further enquiries about the people at Paddington. Nothing worth mentioning has occurred from those enquiries; except confirming, that the widow and her daughters are not people of bad characters. In all likelihood they thought they should entitle themselves to the thanks of all Miss Byron's friends, when the marriage was completed with a man of Sir Hargrave's fortune.

This vile wretch, I hear, keeps his room; and it is whispered that he is more than half-crazed; insomuch that his very attendants are afraid to go near him. We know not the nature of his hurt; but hurt he is, tho' in a fair way of recovery. He threatens, it seems, destruction to Sir Charles the moment he is able to go abroad. God preserve one of the worthiest and best of men!

Sir Hargrave has turned off all the servants, we are told, that attended him on his shocking but happily-disappointed enterprize.

Miss Byron intends to write to her Lucy by tomorrow's post (if she continue mending) an ample account of all that she suffered from the date of her last Letter, to the hour of her happy deliverance.

Sir Rowland — But let my cousin write to you upon that and other matters. She knows what to say on that subject better than I do.

Mean time I heartily congratulate every one of the dear family upon the return and safety of the darling of so many hearts; and remain, dear Mr. Selby.

Your most faithful and obedient Servant,
ARCHIBALD REEVES.

Miss BYRON, *to Miss* SELBY.

Monday, Feb. 20.

Is it again given me to write to you, my Lucy! and in you, to all my revered friends! To write with chearfulness! To call upon you all to rejoice with me! — God be praised!

What dangers have I escaped! How have my head and my heart been affected! I dare not, as yet, think of the anguish you all endured for me.

With what wretched levity did I conclude my last Letter! Giddy creature, that I was, vain and foolish!

But let me begin my ſad ſtory. Your impatience all this while muſt be too painful. Only let me premiſe, that gaily as I boaſted, when I wrote to you ſo conceitedly, as it might ſeem, of my dreſs, and of conqueſts, and I know not what nonſenſe, I took no pleaſure at the place, in the ſhoals of fools that ſwam after me. I deſpiſed myſelf and them. *Deſpiſed!* was ſhocked at both.

Two Lucifers were among them: But the worſt, the very worſt Lucifer of all, appeared in a Harlequin dreſs. He hopped and ſkipt, and played the fool about me; and at laſt told me, He knew Miſs Byron; and that he was, as he called himſelf, the deſpiſed, the rejected, Sir Hargrave Pollexfen.

He behaved, however, with complaiſance; and I had no apprehenſion of what I was to ſuffer from his villainy.

Mr. Reeves has told you, that he ſaw me into the chair provided for me by my vile new ſervant.

Mr. Reeves has told you every-thing about the chair, and the chairmen. How can I deſcribe the miſgivings of my heart when I firſt began to ſuſpect treachery! But when I undrew the curtains, and found myſelf further deluded by another falſe heart, whoſe help I implored, and in the midſt of fields, and ſoon after the lights put out, I pierced the night air with my ſcreams, till I could ſcream no more. I was taken out in fits: And when I came a little to my ſenſes, I found myſelf on a bed, three women about me, one at my head, holding a bottle to my noſe, my noſtrils ſore with hartſhorn, and a ſtrong ſmell of burnt feathers; but no man near me.

Where am I? Who are you, madam? And who are you? Where am I? Were the queſtions I firſt aſked.

The women were a mother and two daughters. The mother anſwered. You are not in bad hands.

God grant you ſay truth! ſaid I.

No harm is intended you; only to make you one of the happieſt of women. We would not be concerned in a bad action.

I hope not: I hope not: Let me engage your pity, madam. You ſeem to be a mother. Theſe young gentlewomen, I preſume, are your daughters. Save me from ruin; I beſeech you, madam: Save me from ruin, as you wold your daughters.

Theſe young women *are* my daugthers. They are ſober and modeſt women. No ruin is intended you. One of the

richeſt

richeſt and nobleſt men in England is your admirer. He dies for you. He aſſures me that he intends honourable marriage to you. You are not engaged, he ſays: And you muſt and you ſhall be his. You may ſave murder, madam, if you conſent. He reſolves to be the death of any Lover whom you encourage.

This muſt be the vile contrivance of Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, immediately cried I out: Is it not? Is it not? Tell me; I *beg* of you to tell me.

I aroſe, and ſat on the bed-ſide; and at that moment in came the vile, vile Sir Hargrave.

I ſcreamed out. He threw himſelf at my feet. I reclined my head on the boſom of the elderly perſon, and by hartſhorn and water they had much ado to keep me out of a fit. Had he not withdrawn; had he kept in my ſight; I ſhould certainly have fainted. But holding up my head, and ſeeing only the women, I revived: And began to pray, to beg, to offer rewards, if they would facilitate my eſcape; or procure my ſafety: But then came in again the hated man.

I beg of you, Miſs Byron, ſaid he, with an an air of greater haughtineſs than before, to make yourſelf eaſy, and hear what I have to ſay. It is in your own choice, in your own power, to be what you pleaſe, and to make *me* what you pleaſe. Do not therefore needleſly terrify yourſelf. You ſee I am a determined man, Ladies you may withdraw —

Not and leave me here!—And as they went out, I puſhed by the mother, and between the daughters, and followed the foremoſt into the parlour; and then ſunk down on my knees, wrapping my arms about her. O ſave me! ſave me! ſaid I.

The vile wretch entered. I left her, and kneeled to him I knew not what I did. I remember, I ſaid, wringing my hands, If you have mercy; If you have compaſſion; let me now, now, I beſeech you, Sir, this moment, experience your mercy.

He gave them ſome motion, I ſuppoſe, to withdraw (for by that time the widow and the other daughter were in the parlour;) and they all three retired.

I have beſought *you*, madam, and on my *knees* too, to ſhew *me* mercy; but none would you ſhew me, inexorable Miſs Byron! Kneel, if you will; in your turn kneel, ſupplicate, pray; you cannot be more in earneſt, than I was. Now are the tables turned.

Barbarous man! ſaid I, riſing from my knees. My ſpirit was raiſed: But it as inſtantly ſubſided. I beſeech you, Sir Hargrave, in a quite frantic way, wringing my hands, and coming near him, and then running to the window, and then to the door (without meaning to go out at either, had they been open; for whither could I go?) and then again to him; Be not, I beſeech you, Sir Hargrave, cruel to me. I never was cruel to any-body. You know I was civil to you; I was *very* civil —

Yes, yes, and very determined. You called me no names, I call you none, Miſs Byron. You were very civil. Hitherto I have not been uncivil. But remember, madam — *I don't hit your fancy*, madam!

Can you be a malicious man, Sir Hargrave?

You don't like my morals, madam!

And is this the way, Sir Hargrave, are theſe the means you take, to convince me that I ought to like them?

Well, madam, you ſhall prove the mercy in me you would not ſhew. You ſhall ſee that I cannot be a malicious man; a revengeful man: And yet you have raiſed my pride. You ſhall find me a *moral* man.

Then, Sir Hargrave, will I bleſs you from the bottom of my heart.

But you know what will juſtify me in every eye for the ſteps I have taken. Be mine, madam. Be legally mine. I offer you my honeſt hand. Conſent to be Lady Pollexfen —. No puniſhment, I hope — Or, take the conſequence.

What, Sir! juſtify by ſo poor, ſo *very* poor a compliance, ſteps that you have ſo baſely taken! — Take my life, Sir: But my hand and my heart are my own: They never ſhall be ſeparated.

I aroſe from my knees, trembling; and threw myſelf upon the window-ſeat, and wept bitterly.

He came to me. I looked on this ſide and on that, wiſhing to avoid him.

You cannot fly, madam. You are ſecurely mine: And mine ſtill more ſecurely you ſhall be. Don't provoke me: Don't make me deſperate. By all that's Good and Holy —

He caſt his eyes at my feet; then at my face; then threw himſelf at my feet, and embraced my knees with his odious arms.

I was terrified. I ſcreamed. In ran one of the daughters — Good Sir! Pray, Sir! — Did you not ſay you would be honourable?

Her

Her mother followed her in — Sir, Sir! In my houſe — Thank God, thought I, the people here are better than I had reaſon to apprehend they were. But, O my Lucy, they ſeemed to believe, that marriage would make amends for every outrage.

Here let me conclude this Letter. I have a great deal more to ſay.

Miſs BYRON. *In Continuation.*

What a plague, ſaid the wretch to the women, do you come in for? I thought you knew your own Sex better than to mind a woman's ſqualling. They are always ready, ſaid the odious fellow, to put us in mind of the occaſion we ought to give them for crying out. I have not offered the leaſt rudeneſs —

I hope not, Sir. I hope my houſe — So ſweet a creature —

Dear bleſſed, bleſſed woman (frantic with terror, and mingled joy, to find myſelf in better hands than I expected — Standing up, and then ſitting down, I believe at every ſentence) Protect me! Save me! Be my advocate; Indeed I have not deſerved this treacherous treatment. Sir Hargrave may have better and richer wives than I: Pray prevail upon him to ſpare me to my friends, for *their* ſake. I will forgive him for all he has done.

Nay, dear Lady, if Sir Hargrave will make you his lawful and true wife, there can be no harm done, ſurely.

I will, I will, Mrs. Awberry, ſaid he. I have promiſed, and I will perform. But if ſhe ſtand in her own light — She expects nothing from my *morals* — If ſhe ſtand in her own light; and looked fiercely —

God protect me! ſaid I; God protect me!

The gentleman is without, Sir, ſaid the woman. O how my heart at that moment ſeemed to be at my throat! What gentleman! thought I: Some one come to ſave me! — O no! —

And inſtantly entered the moſt horrible-looking clergyman that I ever beheld.

This, as near as I can recollect, is his deſcription — A vaſt tall, big-boned, ſplay footed man. A ſhabby gown; as ſhabby a wig; an huge red pimply face; and a noſe that hid half of it, when he looked on one ſide, and he ſeldom looked fore-right when I ſaw him. He had a dog's-eared common-

prayer book in his hand, which once had been gilt; opened, horrid ſight! at the page of matrimony!

Yet I was ſo intent upon making a friend, when a man, a clergyman, appeared, that I heeded not, at his entrance, his frightful viſage, as I did afterwards. I puſhed by Sir Hargrave, turning him half round with my vehemence, and made Mrs. Awberry totter; and throwing myſelf at the clergyman's feet, Man of God, ſaid I, my hands claſped, and held up; Gentleman! Worthy man! — A good clergyman muſt be all this! — If ever you had children! ſave a poor creature! — Save me from violence! Give not your aid to ſanctify a baſe action.

The man ſnuffled his anſwer through his noſe. He ſquinted upon me, and took my claſped hands, which were buried in his huge hand: Riſe, madam! Kneel not to me! No harm is intended you. One queſtion, only: Who is that gentleman before me, in the ſilver-laced cloaths? What is his name?

He is Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, Sir: A wicked, a very wicked man, for all he looks ſo!

The vile wretch ſtood ſmiling, and enjoying my diſtreſs.

O madam! A very hon-our-able man! bowing, like a ſycophant, to Sir Hargrave.

And who pray, madam, are you? What is your name?

Harriet Byron, Sir: A poor innocent creature, (looking at my dreſs) though I make ſuch a vile appearance — Good Sir, your pity! And I ſunk down again at his feet.

Of Northamptonſhire, madam? You are a ſingle woman! Your uncle's name —

Is Selby, Sir. A very good man — I will reward you, Sir, as the moſt grateful heart —

All is fair: All is above-board: All is as it was repreſented. I am above bribes, madam. You will be the happieſt of women before day-break — *Good people!* — The three women advanced.

Then I ſaw what an ugly wretch he was!

Sir Hargrave advanced. The two horried creatures raiſed me between them. Sir Hargrave took my ſtruggling hand: And then I ſaw another ill-looking man enter the room, who I ſuppoſe was to give me to the hated man.

Dearly beloved, began to read the ſnuffling monſter —

O my Lucy! Does not your heart ake for your Harriet? Mine has ſeemed to turn over and over, round and round,

I don't

I don't know how, at the recital. — It was ready to choak me at the time.

I muſt break off for a few minutes.

Miſs Byron. *In Continuation.*

I was again like one frantic. Read no more! ſaid I; and in my phrenſy, daſhed the book out of the miniſter's hand, if a miniſter he was. I beg your pardon, Sir, ſaid I; but you muſt read no further. I am baſely betrayed hither. I cannot, I will not, be his.

Proceed, proceed, ſaid Sir Hargrave, taking my hand by force; virago as ſhe is, I will own her for my wife — Are *you* the *gentle*, the *civil* Miſs Byron, madam? looking ſneeringly in my face.

Alas! my Lucy, I was no virago: I was in a perfect phrenſy: But it was not an unhappy phrenſy; ſince in all probability it kept me from falling into fits; and fits, the villain had ſaid, ſhould not ſave me.

Dearly beloved, again ſnuffled the wretch. O my Lucy! I ſhall never love theſe words. How may odious circumſtances invert the force of the kindeſt words! Sir Hargrave ſtill detained my ſtruggling hand.

I ſtamped, and threw myſelf to the length of my arm, as he held my hand. No *dearly beloved's*, ſaid I. I was juſt beſide myſelf. What to ſay, what to do, I knew not.

The cruel wretch laughed at me; *No dearly beloved's!* repeated he: Very comical, faith! and laughed again: But proceed, proceed, doctor.

We are gathered together here in the ſight of God, read he on.

This affected me ſtill more. I adjure you, Sir, to the miniſter, by that God in whoſe ſight, you read, we are gathered together, that you proceed no further. I adjure you, Sir Hargrave, in the ſame tremendous Name, that you ſtop further proceedings. My life take: With all my heart, take my life: But my hand never, never, will I join with yours.

Proceed, doctor: Doctor, pray proceed, ſaid the vile Sir Hargrave.

The man who ſtood aloof (the flieſt, ſodden-faced creature I ever ſaw) came nearer — To the queſtion, doctor, and to my part, if you pleaſe! — Am not I her father? — To the queſtion, doctor, if you pleaſe! — The gentlewomen will prepare her for what is to follow.

O thou

O thou *man!* Of heart the moſt obdurate and vile! And will ye, looking at every perſon, one hand held up (for ſtill the vile man griped the other quite benumbed hand in his iron paw) and adjuring each, Will ye ſee this violence done to a poor young creature? — A ſoul, gentlewomen, you may have to anſwer for. . I *can* die. Never, never, will I be his.

Let us women talk to the Lady by ourſelves, Sir Hargrave. Pray your honour, let us talk to her by ourſelves.

Ay, ay, ay, ſaid the parſon, by all means: Let the Ladies talk to one another, Sir. She may be brought to conſider.

He let go my hand. The widow took it. And was leading me out of the room — Not up ſtairs, I hope, madam, ſaid I.

You ſhan't then, ſaid ſhe. Come, Sally; come, Deb; let us women go out together.

They led me into a little room adjoining to the parlour: And then, my ſpirits ſubſiding, I thought I ſhould have fainted away. I had more hartſhorn and water poured down my throat.

When they had brought me a little to myſelf, they pleaded with me Sir Hargrave's great eſtate. — What are riches to me? They cannot purchaſe peace of mind: I want not riches.

They pleaded his honourable Love — I my invincible Averſion.

He was a handſome man — The moſt odious in my eyes of the human ſpecies. Never, never, ſhould my conſent be had to ſanctify ſuch a baſeneſs.

My danger! And that they ſhould not be able to ſave me from worſe treatment —

How! — *Not able!* — Ladies, madam, is not this your own houſe? Cannot you raiſe a neighbourhood? Have you no neighbours? A thouſand pounds will I order to be paid into your hands for a preſent before the week is out; I pledge my honour for the payment; if you will but ſave me from a violence, that no worthy woman can ſee offered to a diſtreſſed young creature! — A thouſand pounds! — Dear Ladies! Only to ſave me, and ſee me ſafe to my friends!

The wretches in the next room, no doubt, heard all that paſſed. In at that moment came Sir Hargrave: Mrs. Awberry, ſaid he, with a viſage ſwelled with malice, young Ladies, we keep you up; we diſturb you. Pray retire to your own

reſt:

reſt: Leave me to talk with this perverſe woman. She is mine.

Pray, Sir Hargrave, ſaid Mrs. Awberry —

Leave her to *me*, I ſay: — Miſs Byron, you *ſhall* be mine. Your Grevilles, madam, your Fenwicks, your Ormes, when they know the pains and the expence I have been at, to ſecure you, ſhall confeſs me their ſuperior — Shall confeſs —

In wickedneſs, in cruelty, Sir, you are every man's ſuperior.

You talk of cruelty, Miſs Byron! triumphing over ſcores of proſtrate Lovers, madam! You remember your treatment of me, madam! kneeling, like an abject wretch, at your feet! Kneeling for pity! But no pity could touch your heart, madam! — Ungrateful, proud girl! — Yet am I not humbling you: Take notice of that: I am not humbling you: I am propoſing to exalt you, madam.

Vile, vile, debaſement! ſaid I.

Madam, *pray*, madam, ſaid the widow to me, conſider what you are about, and whom you refuſe. Can you have a handſomer man? Can you have a man of greater fortune? Sir Hargrave means nothing but what is honourable. You are in his power —

In *his* power, madam! returned I: I am in *yours*. You are miſtreſs of this houſe. I claim the protection of it. Have you not neighbours? *Your* protection I put myſelf under. Then claſping my arms about her, Lock me up from him till you can have help to ſecure to you the privilege of your own houſe; and deliver me ſafe to my friends, and I will ſhare my fortune with your two daughters.

The wicked man took the mother and youngeſt daughter each by her hand, after he had diſengaged the former from my claſping arms, and led them to the door. The elder followed them of her own accord. They none of them ſtruggled againſt going. I begged, prayed, beſought them not to go; and, when they did, would have thruſt myſelf out with them. But the wretch, in ſhutting them out, ſqueezed me dreadfully, as I was half in, half out; and my noſe guſhed out with blood.

I ſcreamed: He ſeemed frighted: But inſtantly recovering myſelf — So, ſo, you have done your worſt! — You have killed me, I hope. I was out of breath, my ſtomach was very much preſſed, and one of my arms was bruiſed. I have the marks ſtill; for he clapt to the door with violence, not

not knowing, to do him juſtice, that I was ſo forward in the door-way.

I was in dreadful pain. I talked half wildly, I remember, I threw myſelf in a chair — So, ſo, you have killed me, I hope — Well, now I hope, now I hope, you are ſatisfied. Now may you moan over the poor creature you have deſtroyed: For he expreſſed great tenderneſs and conſternation; and I, for my part, felt ſuch pains in my boſom, that having never felt ſuch before, I really thought I was bruiſed to death: repeating my fooliſh So, ſo. — But I forgive you ſaid I — Only, Sir, call to the gentlewomen, Sir — Retire, Sir, Let me have my own Sex only about me. My head ſwam; my eyes failed me; and I fainted quite away.

Miſs Byron. *In Continuation.*

I underſtood afterwards that he was in the moſt dreadful conſternation. He had faſtened the door upon me and himſelf; and for a few moments was not enough preſent to himſelf to open it. Yet crying out upon his God to have mercy upon him, and running about the room, the women haſtily rapped at the door. Then he ran to it, opened it, curſed himſelf, and beſought them to recover me, if poſſible.

They ſaid I had death in my face: They lamented over me: My noſe had done bleeding: But, careful of his own ſafety in the midſt of his terror, he took my bloody handkerchief; if I did not recover, he ſaid, *that* ſhould not appear againſt him; and he haſten'd into the next room, and thruſt it into the fire; by which were ſitting, it ſeems, the miniſter and his helper, over ſome burnt brandy.

O gentlemen! cried the wretch, nothing can be done to-night. Take this; and gave them money. The Lady is in a fit. I wiſh you well home.

The younger daughter reported this to me afterwards, and what follows: They had deſired the maid, it ſeems, to bring them more firing, and a jug of ale; and they would ſit in the chimney-corner, they ſaid, till peep of day: But the ſame young woman who was taken off from her errand, to aſſiſt me, finding me, as they all thought, not likely to recover, ran in to them, and declared, that the Lady was dead, certainly dead; and what, ſaid ſhe, will become of us all? This terrified the two men. They ſaid, It was then time for them to be gone. Accordingly, taking each of them another dram, they ſnatched up their hats and ſticks, and away they hurried; hoping, the

doctor

doctor ſaid; that, as they were innocent, and only meant to ſerve the gentleman, their names, whatever happened, would not be called in queſtion.

When I came a little to myſelf, I found the three women only with me. I was in a cold ſweat, all over ſhivering. There was no fire in that room: They led me into the parlour, which the two men had quitted; and ſat me down in an elbow chair; for I could hardly ſtand, or ſupport myſelf; and chafed my temples with Hungary-water.

The mother and elder ſiſter left me ſoon after, and went to Sir Hargrave. I can only gueſs at the reſult of their deliberations by what followed.

The younger ſiſter, with compaſſionate frankneſs, anſwered all my queſtions, and let me know all the above particulars. Yet ſhe wonder'd that I could refuſe ſo handſome and ſo rich a man as Sir Hargrave.

We were broken in upon, as I was intending to aſk more queſtions when the elder ſiſter called out the younger: And inſtantly came in Sir Hargrave.

He took a chair, and ſat down by me, one leg thrown over the knee of the other; his elbow upon that knee, and his hand ſupporting his bow'd-down head; biting his lips; looking at me, then from me, then at me again, five or ſix times, as in malice.

At laſt I broke ſilence. I thought I would be as mild as I could, and not provoke him to do me further miſchief. Well have you done, Sir Hargrave, to commit ſuch a violence upon a poor young creature that never did nor thought you evil!

I pauſed. He was ſilent.

What diſtraction have you given to my poor couſin Reeves! How my heart bleeds for them!

I ſtopt. He was ſtill ſilent.

I hope, Sir, you are ſorry for the miſchief you have done me; and for the pain you have given to my friends! — I hope, Sir —

Curſed! ſaid he.

I ſtopt, thinking he would go on: But he ſaid no more; only changing his poſture; and then reſuming it.

Theſe people, Sir, ſeem to be honeſt people. I hope you deſigned only to terrify me. Your bringing me into no worſe company is an aſſurance to me that you meant better, than —

Devils all! interrupted he —

I thought

I thought he was going on; but he grinned, ſhook his head, and then again reclined it upon his hand.

I forgive you, Sir, the pain you have given me. — But my friends — As ſoon as day breaks (and I hope that is not far off) I will get the women to let my couſin Reeves —

Then up he ſtarted — Miſs Byron, ſaid he, you are a *woman;* a *true* woman — And held up his hand, clenched. I knew not what to think of his intention.

Miſs Byron, proceeded he, after a pauſe, you are the moſt conſummate hypocrite that I ever knew in my life: And yet I thought that the beſt of you all could fall into fits and ſwoonings whenever you pleaſed.

I was now ſilent. I trembled.

Damned fool! aſs! blockhead! *woman's* fool! — I could *curſe* myſelf for ſending away the parſon. I thought I had known ſomething of womens tricks — But yet your arts, your hypocriſy, ſhall not ſerve you, madam. What I failed in *here*, ſhall be done *elſewhere.*

I wept. I *could not* then ſpeak.

Can't you go into fits again? Can't you? ſaid the barbarian.

God deliver me, prayed I to myſelf, from the hands of this madman!

I aroſe, and as the candle ſtood near the glaſs, I ſaw in it my vile figure, in this abominable habit, to which, till then, I had paid little attention. O how ſcorned I myſelf!

Pray, Sir Hargrave, ſaid I, let me *beg* that you will not terrify me further. I will forgive you for all you have hitherto done, and place it to my own account, as a proper puniſhment for conſenting to be thus marked for a vain and fooliſh creature. Your abuſe, Sir, give me leave to ſay, is low and unmanly: But in the light of a puniſhment I will own it to be all deſerved: And let here my puniſhment end, and I will thank you, and forgive you with my whole heart.

Your fate is *determined*, Miſs Byron.

Juſt then came in a ſervant-maid with a capuchin, who whiſpered ſomething to him: To which he anſwered, *That's well* —

He took the capuchin; the maid withdrew; and approached me with it. I ſtarted, trembled, and was ready to faint. I caught hold of the back of the elbow chair.

Your fate is determined, madam, repeated the ſavage — Here, put this on — Now fall into fits again — Put this on!

Pray, Sir Hargrave —

And

And pray, Miſs Byron: What has not been completed here, ſhall be completed in a ſafer place; and that in my own way — Put this on, I tell you. Your compliance may yet befriend you.

Where are the gentlewomen?.— Where are —

Gone to reſt, madam — John, Frank, called he out.

In came two men-ſervants.

Pray, Sir Hargrave — Lord protect me — Pray, Sir Hargrave — Where are the gentlewomen? — Lord protect me!

Then running to the door, againſt which one of the men ſtood. — Man, ſtand out of the way, ſaid I. But he did not. He only bowed.

I called as loud as my fears would let me.

At laſt came in the elder ſiſter — O madam! good young gentlewoman! I am glad you are come, ſaid I.

And ſo am I, ſaid the wicked man. — Pray, Miſs Sally, put on this Lady's capuchin.

Lord bleſs me, for why? for what? I have no capuchin!

I would not permit her to put it on, as ſhe would have done.

The ſavage then wrapt his arms about mine, and made me ſo very ſenſible by his force, of the pain I had had by the ſqueeze of the door, that I could not help crying out. The young woman put on the capuchin whether I would or not.

Now, Miſs Byron, ſaid he, make yourſelf eaſy; or command a fit, it is all one! My end will be better ſerved by the latter. — Miſs Sally, give orders.

She ran out with the candle. Frank, give me the cloak, ſaid Sir Hargrave.

The fellow had a red cloak on his arm. His barbarous maſter took it from him. To your poſts, ſaid he.

The two men withdrew in haſte. Now, my deareſt life, ſaid he, with an air of inſult, as I thought, you command your fate, if you are eaſy.

He threw the cloak about me.

I begged, prayed, would have kneeled to him: But all was in vain: The tyger-hearted man, muffled me up in it, and by force carried me thro' a long entry to the foredoor. There was ready a chariot-and-ſix; and that Sally was at the door with a lighted candle.

I called out to her. I called out for her mother; for the other ſiſter. I beſought him to let me ſay but ſix words to the widow.

But no widow was to appear; no younger ſiſter: She was perhaps more tender-hearted than the elder: And in ſpite of all my ſtruggles, prayers, reſiſtance, he lifted me into the chariot.

Men on horſeback were about it. I thought *that* Wilſon was one of them; and ſo it proved. Sir Hargrave ſaid to that fellow, You know what tale to tell, if you meet with impertinents. And in he came himſelf.

I ſcreamed. Scream on, my dear, upbraidingly ſaid he; and barbarouſly mocked me, imitating, low wretch! the bleating of a ſheep (Could you not have killed him for this, my Lucy?) Then rearing himſelf up, Now am I Lord of Miſs Byron! exulted he.

Still I ſcreamed for help; and he put his hand before my mouth, tho' vowing honour, and ſuch ſort of ſtuff; and, with his unmanly roughneſs, made me bite my lip. And away laſhed the coachman with your poor Harriet.

Miſs Byron. *In Continuation.*

As the chariot drove by houſes, I cried out for help once or twice, at ſetting out. But under pretence of preventing my taking cold; he tied an handkerchief over my face, head, and mouth, having firſt muffled me up in the cloak; preſſing againſt my arm with his whole weight, ſo that I had not my hands at liberty. And when he had done, he ſeized them, and held them both in his left hand, while his right-arm thrown round me, kept me faſt on the ſeat. And except that now-and-then my ſtruggling head gave me a little opening, I was blinded.

But at one place on the road, juſt after I ſcreamed, and made another effort to get my hands free, I heard voices, and immediately the chariot ſtopt. Then how my heart was filled with hope! But, alas! it was but momentary. I heard one of his men ſay (that Wilſon I believe) The beſt of huſbands, I aſſure you, Sir; and ſhe is the worſt of wives.

I ſcreamed again. Ay, ſcream and be d—n'd, I heard ſaid in a ſtanger's voice, if that be the caſe. Poor gentleman! I pity him with all my heart. And immediately the coachman drove on again.

The vile wretch laughed; That's *you*, my dear, and hugged me round. *You* are the d—n'd wife. And again he laughed. By my ſoul I am a charming contriver!

I was

I was ready to faint ſeveral times. I begged for air: And when we were in an open road, and I ſuppoſe there was nobody in ſight, he vouchſafed to pull down the blinding handkerchief, but kept it over my mouth; ſo that except now and-then, that I ſtruggled it aſide with my head I could only make a murmuring kind of noiſe.

The curtain of the fore-glaſs was pulled down, and generally the canvas on both ſides drawn up. But I was ſure to be made acquainted when we came near houſes, by his care again to blind and ſtifle me up.

A little before we were met by my deliverer, I had, by getting one hand free, unmuffled myſelf ſo far as to ſee (as I had gueſſed once or twice before by the ſtone pavements) that we were going thro' a town; and then I again vehemently ſcreamed. But he had the cruelty to thruſt an handkerchief into my mouth, ſo that I was almoſt ſtrangled; and my mouth was hurt, and is ſtill ſore, with that and his former violence of the like nature.

Indeed, he now-and-then made apologies for the cruelty, to which, he ſaid, he was compelled, by my invincible obſtinacy, to have recourſe. I was ſorely hurt, he ſaid, to be the wife of a man of his conſideration!

At one place the chariot drove out of the road, over rough ways, and little hillocks, as I thought by its rocking; and then, it ſtopping, he let go my hands, and endeavoured to ſooth me. He begged I would be pacified, and offered, if I would forbear crying out for help, to leave my eyes unmuffled all the reſt of the way. But I would not, I told him, give ſuch a ſanction to his barbarous violence.

On the chariot's ſtopping, one of his men came up, and put an handkerchief into his maſter's hands, in which were ſome cakes and ſweet-meats; and gave him alſo a bottle of ſack, with a glaſs. Sir Hargrave was very urgent with me to take ſome of the ſweet-meats, and to drink a glaſs of the wine: But I had neither ſtomach nor will to touch either.

He eat himſelf very cordially. God forgive me, I wiſhed in my heart, there were pins and needles in every bit he put in his mouth.

He drank two glaſſes of the wine. Again he urged me. I ſaid, I hoped, I had eat and drank my laſt.

The chariot had not many minutes got into the great road again, over the like rough and ſometimes plaſhy ground, when

it ſtopt on a diſpute between the coachman, and the coachman of another chariot-and-ſix, as it proved.

Sir Hargrave had but juſt drawn my handkerchief cloſer to my eyes, when this happened. Hinder not my tears from flowing, ſaid I; ſtruggling to keep my eyes free, the cloak enough muffling me, and the handkerchief being over my mouth; ſo that my voice could be but juſt heard by him, as I imagine.

He looked out of his chariot, to ſee the occaſion of this ſtop; and then I found means to diſengage one hand.

I heard a gentleman's voice directing his own coachman to give way.

I then puſhed up the handkerchief with my diſengaged hand, from my mouth, and pulled it down from over my eyes, and cried out for help: Help, for God's ſake.

A man's voice (it was my deliverer's, as it happily proved) bid Sir Hargrave's coachman proceed at his peril.

Sir Hargrave, with terrible oaths and curſes, ordered him to proceed, and to drive thro' all oppoſition.

The gentleman called Sir Hargrave by his name; and charged him with being upon a bad deſign.

The vile wretch ſaid, he had only ſecured a runaway wife, eloped to, and intending to elope from, a maſquerade, to her adulterer: He put aſide the cloak, and appealed to my dreſs.

I cried out, No, no, no, five or ſix times repeated; but could ſay no more at that inſtant, holding up then both my diſengaged hands for protection.

The wicked man endeavoured to muffle me up again, and to force the handkerchief, which I had then got under my chin, over my mouth; and brutally curſed me.

The gentleman would not be ſatisfied with Sir Hargrave's ſtory. He would ſpeak to *me.* Sir Hargrave called him impertinent, and other names, and aſked, Who the devil he was? with rage and contempt. — The gentleman, however, aſked me, and with an air that promiſed deliverance, if I were Sir Hargrave's wife.

No, no, no, no, — I could only ſay.

But you may better conceive, than I can expreſs, the terror I was in, when Sir Hargrave drew his ſword, and puſhed at the gentleman with ſuch words as denoted (for I could not look that way) he had done him miſchief. But when I found my oppreſſor, pulled out of the chariot, by the brave, the gallant man (which was done with ſuch force, as made the

chariot

chariot rock) and my protector ſafe; I was as near fainting with joy, as before I had been with terror. I had ſhaken off the cloak, and untied the handkerchief.

He carried me in his arms (I could not walk) to his own chariot.

I heard Sir Hargrave curſe, ſwear, and threaten. I was glad, however, he was not dead.

Mind him not, madam, fear him not, ſaid Sir Charles Grandiſon (You know his noble name, my Lucy!) Coachman, drive not over your maſter: Take care of your maſter; or ſome ſuch words he ſaid, as he lifted me into his own chariot. He came not in, but ſhut the chariot-door, as ſoon as he had ſeated me.

He juſt ſurveyed, as it were, the ſpot, and bid a ſervant let Sir Hargrave know who he was; and then came back to me.

Partly thro' terror, partly thro' weakneſs, I had ſunk to the bottom of the chariot. He opened the door, entered, and, with all the tenderneſs of a brother, ſoothed me, and lifted me on the ſeat once more. He ordered his coachman to drive back to Colnebrooke. In accents of kindneſs, he told me, that he had there at preſent the moſt virtuous and prudent of ſiſters, to whoſe care he would commit me, and then proceed on his journey to town.

How irreſiſtibly welcome to me was his ſupporting arm, thrown round me, as we *flew* back, compared to that of the vile Sir Hargrave!

Mr. Reeves has given you an account, from the angelic ſiſter — O my Lucy, they are a pair of angels!

I have written a long, long Letter, or rather five Letters in one, of my diſtreſſes, of my deliverance: And, when my heart is ſtronger, I will ſay more of the perſons, as well as minds, of this excellent brother and his ſiſter.

But what ſhall I do with my gratitude? O my dear, I am *overwhelmed* with my gratitude: I can only expreſs it in ſilence before them. Every look, if it be honeſt to my heart, however, tells it: Reverence mingles with my gratitude — Yet there is ſo much eaſe, ſo much ſweetneſs, in the behaviour of both — O my Lucy! Did I not find that my veneration of both is equal; did I not, on examination, find, that the amiable ſiſter is as dear to me, from her experienced tenderneſs, as her brother from his remembered bravery, in ſhort, that I love the ſiſter, and revere the brother; I ſhould be afraid of my gratitude.

I have over-written myſelf. I am tired. O my grand-mamma, you have never yet, while I have been in London, ſent me your ever-valued bleſſing under your own hand: Yet, I am ſure I had it; and *your* bleſſings, my dear uncle and aunt Selby; and your prayers, my Lucy, my Nancy, and all my Loves; elſe my deliverance had not perhaps followed my preſumptuous folly, in going dreſſed out, like the fantaſtic wretch I appeared to be, at a vile, a fooliſh maſquerade.— How often, throughout the ſeveral ſtages of my diſtreſs, and even in my deliverance, did I turn my eye *to* myſelf, and *from* myſelf, with the diſguſt that made a part, and that not a light one, of my puniſhment!

Pray let not any-body unneceſſarily be acquainted with this ſhocking affair; particulary neither Mr. Greville, nor Mr. Fenwick. It is very probable, that they (eſpecially Mr. Greville) would be for challenging Sir Hargrave, were it only on a ſuppoſition that it would give him an intereſt in me in the *eye of the world*. You know that Mr. Greville watches for all opportunities to give himſelf conſequence with me.

Were any farther miſchief to happen to any-body, I ſhould be grieved beyond meaſure. Hitherto I have reaſon to think, that a tranſaction ſo ſhocking is not very unhappily concluded. May the vile man ſit himſelf down ſatisfied, and I ſhall be willing to do ſo too; provided I never more behold his face.

Mr. Reeves will ſend you with the above pacquet, a Letter from Sir Charles Grandiſon, incloſing one from that vile Wilſon. I can write no more juſt now, and they will ſufficiently explain themſelves.

Adieu, my deareſt Lucy. I need not ſay how much I am, and will ever be,

Your faithful and affectionate

HARRIET BYRON.

Sir GRANDISON, *to* ARCHIB. REEVES, *Eſq.*

Dear Sir, *Canterbury, Feb.* 22.

The incloſed long Letter is juſt now brought to me. I pretend not to judge of the writer's penitence. Yet his confeſſions ſeem ingenuous; and he was not under any obligation to put them on paper.

As

As I presume that you will not think it adviseable to make the *ineffectual* attempt upon Miss Byron public by a prosecution, perhaps your condescending to let the man's sister know, that her brother, if in earnest, may securely pursue the honest purposes he mentions, may save the poor wretch from taking such courses as might be fatal, not only to himself, but to innocent persons, who otherwise may suffer by his being made desperate.

The man, as you will see by his Letter, if you had not a still *stronger* proof, has abilities to do mischief. He has been in bad hands, as he tells us, from his youth upwards, or he might have heen an useful member of society. He is a young man; and if yet he could be made *so*, his reformation will take from the number of the profligate, and add to that of the hopeful; and who knows how wide the circle of his acquaintance is, and how many of them may be influenced by his example either way? If he marry the not-dishonest young woman, to whom he seems to be contracted, may not your lenity be a means of securing a whole future family on the side of moral honesty?

His crime, as the attempt was frustrated, is not capital: And, not to mention the service of such an evidence as this, should Sir Hargrave seek for a legal redress, as he sometimes weakly threatens, my hope makes me see a further good that may be brought about by this man's reformation: Wicked masters cannot execute their base views upon the *persons* of the innocent, without the assistance of wicked servants. What a nest of vipers may be crushed at once, or, at least, rendered unhurtful, by depriving the three monsters he names of the aid of such an agent? Men who want to save appearances, and have estates to forfeit, will sometimes be honest of necessity, rather than put themselves into the power of *untried* villains.

You will be so good as to make my compliments to your Lady, and to *our* lovely ward. You see, Sir, that I join myself with you in the honour of that agreable relation.

I hope the dear Lady has perfectly recovered her health and spirits. I am, good Mr. Reeves.

Your most faithful and obedient Servant,

CHARLES GRANDISON.

To the Honourable Sir, CHARLES GRANDISON, *Bart.*

Saturday Feb. 18.

In what an odious light muſt that wretch appear before the worthieſt of men, who cannot but abhor himſelf!

I am the unhappy man who was hired into the ſervice of the beſt of young Ladies! Whom I was the means of betraying into the power of Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, from the Ball in the Hay-market on Thurſday night laſt.

Your honour has made yourſelf an *intereſt* in Miſs Byron's fate, as I may ſay, by your powerful protection. Pardon me if I give you ſome account of myſelf, and of tranſactions which perhaps will otherwiſe never be known: And this in juſtice to all round.

My parentage was honeſt: My education was above my parentage. I ſet out with good principles: But I fell into a bad ſervice. I was young, and of a good natural diſpoſition; but had not virtue enough to reſiſt a temptation: I could not ſay No, to an unlawful thing, when my principals commanded my aſſent.

I was, at *firſt* ſetting out, by favour of friends, taken as clerk to a merchant. In proceſs of time I tranſacted his buſineſs at the Cuſtom-houſe. He taught me to make light of oaths of office; and this by degrees made me think light of all moral obligations, and laid the foundation of my ruin.

My maſter's name was Bagenhall. He died; and I was to ſeek. His brother ſucceeded to his fortune, which was very large: He was brought up to no buſineſs: He was a gentleman: His ſeat is near Reading.

He employed me in mean offices, till his pander died (he is a very profligate man, Sir!); and then he *promoted* me to a *ſtill meaner.*

In this way, I grew a ſhameleſs contriver. He introduced me to Sir Hargrave Pollexfen, and to Mr. Merceda, a Portugeſe Jew. In the ſervice of theſe three maſters, good heaven forgive me! what villainies was I not the means of perpetrating! Yet I never was ſo hardened, but I had temporary remorſes. But theſe three gentlemen would never let me reſt from wickedneſs: Yet they kept me poor and neceſſitous, as the only means to keep me what they called *honeſt;* for they had often reaſon to think, that had I had any other means of ſubſiſtence, I would have been *really* honeſt.

I was now Mr. Bagenhalls conſtant ſervant. Sir Hargrave and Mr. Merceda uſed to borrow me: But I muſt ſay Sir Hargrave is an innocent man to the other two. They careſſed me, I ſpeak it to my ſhame, as a man fit for their turn. I had contrivance; temper; I knew ſomething of every-body. But my ſiſter knows my frequent compunctions; and that I hated the vile courſe I was in. She uſed to lecture me enough. She is a good woman.

Will your honour have patience with me a little longer.

Sir Hargrave on the ſeventh of this month came to my maſter Bagenhall at Reading, with whom he had double buſineſs: One was to take a bond and judgment of him (Sir Hargrave is no better than an uſurer:) Mr. Bagenhall has lived a moſt extravagant life: The other was to borrow me. Mr. Merceda had a ſcheme on foot at the ſame time, which he was earneſt to engage me in; but it was too ſhocking; and Mr. Bagenhall came into Sir Hargrave's.

Sir Hargrave told them, he deſigned nothing *more* than a violation, if he could get my aſſiſtance, of the moſt beautiful woman in the world. And, Sir, to ſee the villainy of the other two; they both, unknown to each other, made propoſals to me, to trick Sir Hargrave, and to get the Lady, each for himſelf.

But to *me*, Sir Hargrave ſwore, that he was fully reſolved to leave this wicked courſe of life. Bagenhall and Merceda, he ſaid, were devils; and he would marry, and have no more to ſay to them. All that was in his view was honeſt marriage. He ſaid he had never been in the Lady's company but once, and that was the day before at Lady Betty Williams's. He ſaid he went thither, knowing ſhe was to be there; for having for ſome time had it in his head to marry, this was the Lady he had pitched upon in his mind, from the character he had of her from every mouth at the Northampton races.

Now, ſaid he, I ſhall have ſome difficulty to obtain her, notwithſtanding my fortune is ſo great; for every one who ſees her is in love with her; And he named ſeveral Gentlemen who laid cloſe ſiege to her.

She brought a ſervant up with her, ſaid he: who hones after the country, and is actually gone, or ſoon will. Her couſin enquires of every one after a proper ſervant for her. You, Wilſon, ſaid he, are handſome and genteel: He was pleaſed to ſay ſo. You have a modeſt humble look: You know

all the duties of a ſervant: Get yourſelf entertained, and your fortune is made for life, if by your means I obtain the Lady. I have already tendered myſelf, ſaid he. Perhaps ſhe will have me in a few days. I don't expect to be denied, if ſhe be diſengaged, at it is ſaid ſhe is. If you can get into her ſervice, you will find out every-thing. This is all that is to be done: But you muſt never mention my name, nor ever know any thing of me, as I go and come.

Sir Hargrave declared, that his heart was *burnt up* with the Love of the Lady: And if he ſucceded you will, ſaid he, as my Lady's ſervant, be mine of courſe; you ſhall never wear a livery; and you ſhall be my gentleman, till I can get a place for you in the Cuſtoms. This, may it pleaſe your honour, he knew I had long aimed at, and it had been often promiſed by himſelf, and my other two maſters; and was their firſt promiſe when they wanted to engage me in any of their ſchemes; tho' they never thought more of it when the ſervice was over. If I got but myſelf engaged, I was, on the day I entered into my Lady's ſervice, to have as an earneſt ten guineas.

Encouraged by ſuch promiſes (and the project being an honeſter one than ever Sir Hargrave, or either of the other two, had ſought to engage me in) I offered my ſervice to my Lady; and, on Mr. Bagenhall's writing a good character of me, was accepted.

I could have been happy in the ſervice of this Lady, all the days of my life. She is all goodneſs: All the ſervants, every-body, gentle and ſimple, adored her: But ſhe, unexpectedly, refuſing to have Sir Hargrave, and he being afraid that one of her three or four Lovers would *cut him out*, he reſolved to take more violent meaſures than he had at firſt intended.

If any man was ever mad in Love, it was Sir Hargrave. But then he was as mad with anger to be refuſed. Sir Hargrave was ever thought to be one of the proudeſt men in England: And he complained that my Lady uſed him worſe than ſhe did any-body elſe. But it was not *her* way to uſe any-body ill; I ſaw that.

Nevertheleſs he was reſolved to ſtrike a *bold ſtroke for a wife*, as were his words from the title of a play: And between us we ſettled the matter in one night! For I had found means to get out unknown to the family.

It

It will be treſpaſſing too much upon your honour's patience, to be very particular in our contrivances. I will be as brief as poſſible.

My Lady was to go to a Maſquerade. I got into the knowledge of every thing how and about it. The maids were as full of the matter as their maſter and miſtreſſes.

It was agreed to make the chairmen fuddled. Two of *Mr. Merceda's footmen* were to undertake the taſk. Brandy was put into their liquor to haſten them.

They were ſoon overcome. The weather was cold: They drank briſkly, and were laid up ſafe. I then hired two chance chairmen, and gave them orders as had been contrived.

I had twenty guineas given me in hand for my encouragement; in which were included the promiſed ten.

I had, when I was my firſt maſter Bagenhall's clerk, made acquaintance with ſeveral clerks of the Cuſtomhouſe, particularly with one Awberry, a ſober modeſt man; who has two ſiſters; to one of whom I am contracted, and always for two years paſt, intended to make my wife, as ſoon as I ſhould be in any way to maintain her. The mother is a widow. All of them are very honeſt people.

Mr. Awberry the brother being aſſured by me (and I was well aſſured of it myſelf, and had no doubt about it) that marriage was intended; and knowing Sir Hargrave's great eſtate (and having indeed ſeen Sir Hargrave on the occaſion, and received his proteſtations of honour) engaged his mother and ſiſters in it; and the reſult, as to them and me, was, that I was to receive, as ſoon as the knot was tied, an hundred guineas beſides the twenty; and moreover an abſolute promiſe of a place; and twenty pounds a year till I got it; and then my marriage with young Mrs. Awberry was to follow.

The widow has an annuity of thirty pounds which, with her ſon's ſalary, keeps them above want.

She lives at Paddington. There is a back-door and garden, at it happens, convenient to bring any-body in, or carry any-body out, ſecretly; and hither it was reſolved, if poſſible, that the Lady ſhould be brought, and a Fleet parſon and his clerk ready ſtationed, to perform the ceremony.

Sir Hargrave doubted not (tho' he was fruitful in contrivances, and put many others in practice) but he ſhould be detected if he carried the Lady to his own houſe. And as he was afraid that the chairmen (notwithſtanding ſeveral other artful

artful contrivances) would be able to find out the place they carried her to, he had ordered his chariot-and-fix to be at the widow Awberry's by fix in the morning, with three fervants on horfeback, armed, and a horfe and piftols befides. After marriage he was refolved to go to his houfe on the foreft, but not to ftay there; but to go to Mr. Merceda's houfe near Newberry, where he doubted not but he fhould be fecret till he thought fit to produce the Lady, as Lady Pollexfen: And often, very often, did he triumph on the victory he fhould obtain over her other Lovers, and over her own proud heart, as he would have it to be.

The parfon, Sir, came: The clerk was there: But what with fits, prayers, tears, and one thing or other (at one time the Lady being thought irrecoverable; having received fome unintended hurt in her ftruggling to get out of a door, as I heard it was) Sir Hargrave in terror difmiffed the parfon; and refolved to carry the Lady (who by that time was recovered) in the chariot to his feat at Windfor; and then, ftaying there only to marry, go to Newberry; and from thence break out by degrees, as the matter fhould be taken.

My Lady fcreamed, refifted, and did all that woman could do, to get free: And more than once, people who heard her cry out for help were put a wrong fcent: And had we not met with your honour (who would fee with your own eyes, and hear with your own ears) the affair had been all over in the way Sir Hargrave wifhed, and was at fo much pains and expence to effect. For, Sir, the chariot generally drove fo faft, that before paffengers could have *refolved* whether to interfere or not, we fhould have been out of fight or reach.

Sir Hargrave is in the greateft rage with us all, becaufe we ftood not better by him. He refufes any favour to me, and threatens to piftol me, the moment he fees me. That's to be my reward.

A coach-and-four was ordered to carry the widow and her two daughters to Reading, to the New Inn there, where they were to refide for a week or fo, till all was blown over, and that they might be out of the way of anfwering queftions: And my *brother* Awberry, as I call him, and hope to make him (for he is a very honeft man) was to go to them there.

And there, in all probability, had Sir Hargrave fucceeded, and been as good as his word, fhould I have been the hufband

of

of as tender-hearted a young woman as any in the pariſh ſhe lives in.

Here is a very long Letter, may it pleaſe you, Sir. I have ſhortened it however as much as I could: But in hatred to myſelf, and the vile ways I have, by exceſs of good-nature, and by meeting with wicked maſters, been drawn into — For the clearing of my ſiſter's character, who lives in credit among her neighbours, and of every other perſon who might otherwiſe have been ſuſpected — In juſtice to Mrs. Awberry's, and her two daughters, and her ſon's characters — And in juſtice *ſo far* to Sir Hargrave's, as that he intended marriage — In juſtice, I ſay, to all theſe perſons, I thought proper thus to give you, Sir, all that I knew relating to this wicked tranſaction. And if, may it pleaſe your Honour, I were to be taken up, I could ſay no more before a magiſtrate; except this, which I had like to have forgot; which is, that had it not been for me, ſome miſchief might have been done, between Sir Hargrave's ſervants and yours, if not to your honour's perſon.

All that I moſt humbly beg, is, the pardon of ſo ſweet a Lady. I have choſen, ever-to-be-honoured Sir, to write to you, whoſe goodneſs is ſo generally talked of, and who have ſo nobly redeemed and protected her. Mr. Reeves, I know, has ſuffered too much in his mind to forgive me. He is a worthy gentleman. I am ſorry for the diſturbance I have given him. I have hopes given me, that I ſhall get employment on the Keys, or as a tide-waiter extraordinary.

Pleaſe the Lord, I will never, never more, be the tool of wicked maſters. All I wiſh for is, to be able to do juſtice to the love of an honeſt young woman; and I am reſolved, whether ſo enabled or not, to ſtarve, rather than to go any more, no, not for a ſingle hour, into the ſervice of the iniquitous gentlemen I have ſo often named in this long Letter.

If I might be aſſured, that I may purſue unmoleſted, any honeſt calling, ſo as that I may not be tempted or driven into unhappy courſes, my heart would be at reſt.

There might have been murder in this affair: That ſhocks me to think of. O Sir, good, excellent, brave, and the moſt worthy of gentlemen, you have given to *me* as great a deliverance, as you have to the *Lady:* Yea, greater; for mine may be a deliverance, if I make a proper uſe of it, of ſoul as

well

well as body. Which God grant, as alſo your honours health and proſperity, to the prayers of

Your Honour's ever-devoted
Humble Servant,
WILLIAM WILSON.

I thought I had ſomething elſe to ſay! Something it is of *high* importance: Your life is threatened, Sir: God preſerve your precious life.

ACCOUNT OF A TRAGICAL INCIDENT IN FRANCE. 1765. *)

A land-holder of Caſtres, by name Sirven, had three daughters: as this family is of the proteſtant religion, the youngeſt of his daughters was taken by force out of his Wife's arms, put into a Convent, nnd whipped, by way of teaching her her catechiſm. The Girl run mad, and threw herſelf into a well, at about a league's diſtance from her father's houſe. On this, the zealots of religion made not the leaſt doubt of its being the father, mother, and ſiſters of the child, that had drowned her. It had paſſed currently among the Roman Catholics of the Province, that one of the capital points of the proteſtant Religion was, that fathers and mothers are bound to hang, drown, or cut the throats of any of their Children they may ſuſpect of having any inclination towards the Romiſh religion. This was preciſely at the very time that the Calas's were in irons, and that the ſkaffold was preparing for their execution.

The news of the Girl's being drowned, came directly then to Toulouſe. "Ay (ſaid they) here's a freſh inſtance of a father's and mother's murdering their Child." The outcry was general; the fury of the public was augmented upon it; Calas was broke upon the wheel; Sirven, his wife, and his daughters, ordered to be apprehended. Sirven, frightened, had only the time to fly with all his ſick family. Deſtitute of all aid, they where forced to walk on foot over ſteep hills, at that time covered with ſnow. One of his daughters was delivered, admidſt the ice, of a child, which, dying as it was, ſhe carried in

*) Voltaire's Letter to M. D'Am-- 1765. 12.

in her arms, herſelf hardly alive. At length, they got into the road that leads to Switzerland.

The ſame chance that brought to me the children of Calas, directed alſo to me Sirven. Figure to yourſelf, my friend, four ſheep accuſed by butchers of having devoured a lamb: This is what I ſaw; but it is impoſſible for any deſcription to do juſtice to ſo much innocence, and ſo much diſtreſs. What ought I to do? Or what would you have done in my place? is it enough to groan only over ſuch abuſes of human nature? I took the liberty of writing to the Preſident of Languedoc, but he was not at Toulouſe. I got one of your friends to preſent a petition to the Vice-chancellor. In the mean while, near Caſtres, the father, the mother, and the two daughters, were executed in effigy; their eſtate confiſcated, their goods deſpoiled, the ruin was complete. Behold here a virtuous, decent, innocent family delivered up to ſhame and beggary among ſtrangers. It is true, they found pity, but how cruel it is to be objects of pity as long as they live! The anſwer, however, ſent me to my application, was, that they might poſſibly obtain their pardon.

DESCRIPTION OF A DWARF WHICH WAS KEPT IN THE PALACE OF THE LATE KING OF POLAND. *)

The parents of this dwarf were healthy, ſtrong peaſants; who affirmed, that at the time of his birth, he ſcarcely weighed a pound and a quarter. It is not known what were then his dimenſions, but one may judge they where very ſmall as he was preſented on a plate to be baptized, and for a long time had a woden-ſhoe for his bed.

His mouth, though well proportioned to the reſt of his body, was not large enough to receive the nipple of his mother; he was ſuckled therefore by a goat, and ſhe performed the part of nurſe admirably well. When ſix months old he had the ſmallpox, and recovered without any other aſſiſtance than the care of his mother and the milk of the Goat. At the age of eighteen months he could articulate ſome words. At two years, he could ſupport himſelf upon his legs, and walk almoſt without

*) Buffon and D'aubenton's Natural Hiſtory T, XV.

without aſſiſtance; a pair of ſhoes were then made for him, which were no more than an inch and half in length.

He was attacked by ſeveral diſeaſes; but there were no marks of any other diſeaſe upon the ſkin beſides the ſmall-pox. — He was now ſix years of age: hitherto his food had been garden-ſtuff, bacon and potatoes; his height was about fifteen inches, and he did not weigh more than thirteen pounds; his perſon was agreable and well proportioned, he was in perfect health, but there was little appearance of intellect. — At this time the King of Poland ordered him to Luneville, gave him the name of *Bébé*, and kept him in his palace. Bébé thus exchanged the condition of a peaſant for the luxuries of a court; but he experienced no change either in his body or his mind.

He had no ſenſe of religion; was incapable of reaſoning; could learn neither muſic nor dancing; was ſuſceptible however of paſſions, particularly anger, jealouſy, and voluptuouſneſs — When ſixteen years old, he was only twenty-nine inches in height; he was ſtill healthy and well proportioned; but at this time his ſtrenght began to decreaſe, the ſpine became crooked, the head fell forwards, the legs were enfebled, one ſhoulderblade projected, the noſe was greatly enlarged; *Bébé* loſt his gaiety, and became a valetudinarian; and yet his ſtature was increaſed four inches in the four ſucceeding years —

M. le Comte de Treſſan, foretold that this dwarf would die of old age before he was thirty; and in effect ſo it was, for at twenty-one he was ſhrunk and decrepit; and at twenty-two, it was with difficulty that he could make an hundred ſteps ſucceſſively. — In his twenty third year, he was attacked with a fever, and fell into a kind of a lethargy; he had ſome intervals, but ſpoke with great difficulty: for the five laſt days, his ideas ſeemed to be more clear than when he was in health. This diſeaſe ſoon proved fatal. — At the time of his death, he was meaſured thirty-three inches.

REMARKS ON THE PRESENT STATE OF THE TRADE OF MASSACHUSETS-BAY, &c. *)

The other governments of New England, **) ſixty or ſeventy years ago, imported no Engliſh goods, or next to none, directly from England; they were ſupplied by the Maſſachuſets trader. Now although our trade with great Britain, upon the whole, is ſuppoſed to cauſe no addition to our wealth, yet, at leaſt ſo far as we are the channel for conveying ſupplies of goods to the other colonies for their conſumption, a benefit undoubtedly accrues. New-Hampſhire, by their convenient ſituation, were induced to become their own importers in a great meaſure ſome years before the alteration of our currency.

They made their returns by ſhipping lumber, &c. eaſier than we did. At preſent they probably import Engliſh goods equal to their conſumption. Connecticut, until we aboliſhed our bills of credit and theirs with them, continued their trade with us for Engliſh goods, but ſoon after turned great part of their trade to New-York, and ſome perſons became importers from England. They ſoon diſcovered their error. The produce of New-York is ſo much the ſame with that of Connecticut that the Maſſachuſets market will always be the beſt. The importer finds it more difficult, to make his returns to England from Connecticut, than from the Maſſachuſets. Connecticut trade therefore ſoon returned to the ſtate it had formerly been in.

Rhode-Island, in part, became their own importers alſo, which they ſtill continue.

For the other colonies on the continent, between South-Carolina and the Maſſachuſets, there never has been any conſiderable trade. The chief benefit from that colony has been the affording freights for our ſhips in the European trade.

North-Carolina, Virginia, Maryland, the Jerſeys and Penſylvania, until within twenty or thirty years, uſed to furniſh us with proviſions for which we paid them in Weſt-India and ſometimes Engliſh goods and with our own produce and manufactures. Philadelphia of late is become the mart for the grain

*) Governor Hutchinſon's Hiſtory of the Colony of Maſſachuſets-Bay. Vol. 2. Lond. 1767. 8.

**) Viz: Connecticut, Rhode-Island and New-Hampſhire.

grain of great part of Maryland, which they manufacture into flour and ſupply the Maſſachuſets, Rhode-Island and New-Hampſhire, and take little or no pay in return but Money and bills of Exchange. It ſeems agreed that the ſouthern colonies as far as Virginia are deſigned by nature for grain countries. It behoves us therefore, either like the Dutch for the other nations in Europe, to become carriers for them with our ſhipping, or to contrive ſome articles of produce or manufacture for barter or exchange with them, rather than in vain to attempt raiſing to more advantage than they do, what nature has peculiarly formed them for.

Our trade with the Weſt-India Islands was much more profitable to us, from the beginning of King Williams to the end of Queen Anne's war with France, than at any time ſince. Ever ſince the peace of Utrecht it has been continually growing worſe. Barbadoes required then, more northern produce than it does now. The other Islands, except Jamaica, have very little increaſed their demand. From the growth of the northern colonies and the new methods of living, the produce of the Islands is more than double the price it uſed to be. Perhaps tea and coffee, alone, cauſe as great conſumption of ſugar as all other uſes, to which it was applied, did formerly.

The produce of the northern colonies is as low in the Islands as ever it was. Formerly their demand for northern produce not only afforded us in return, rum, ſugar and molaſſes ſufficient, for our own conſumption, but left a ſurplus which, in war time eſpecially, every year gave freight to ſhips from Boſton to England, and paid our debts there or procured a ſupply of goods from thence, whereas, at this day, the whole ſupply of northern produce to the Britiſh Islands will not pay for one half the Weſt-India goods conſumed or uſed in the northern colonies.

The trade to the Dutch colonies, it is true, is ſince increaſed, and our goods from time to time find their way into the French Islands, ſometimes through the Dutch, at other times, when French neceſſity calls for them, by permiſſion or other contrivances, and by this means we are able to procure the Weſt-India goods we want for our conſumption over and above what we can obtain in pay for our produce from our own Islands. Britain herſelf ſuffers, with her northern colonies, and pays dearly by the advanced price of ſugar, rum, &c. The Weſt-Indians, notwithſtanding, are continually endea-

vouring

vouring to reſtrain our trade with the foreign Islands and colonies. If they could take of our produce as much as we have occaſion for of theirs it would appear leſs unreaſonable, or if, by our trade with the foreign colonies, the price of the produce of our own Islands had fallen below the former rates they might have colour for complaint; but when the vent for northern produce by means of the great increaſe of the northern colonies, bears no proportion, from any one of them, to what it did formerly, and yet the produce of the Islands is double the price it was formerly, and their eſtates raiſed to more than five times the value, it muſt be unreaſonable to burden not only the inhabitants of the northern colonies but of Great Britain alſo with a ſtill farther advanced price of Weſt-India goods, and all to aggrandize the Weſt-India planters. Such a burden would infallibly be the effect of a rigid execution of the laws reſtraining or incumbering our trade with the French and Dutch colonies. But this is not all. If our trade with the foreign colonies be ſuppreſſed and our ſupplies of Weſt-India goods are confined to our own Islands, the balance above what they require of our produce, muſt be paid them in Silver and Gold or exchange upon England, either of which muſt leſſen our returns to England, and will probably leſſen our conſumption of their manufactures.

Charlevoix ſays: the French of Canada live well if they can get fine cloaths; if not, they retrench from the table to adorn the perſon. I think the engliſh coloniſts would rather abate from their dreſs than from their punch, tea, coffee, &c.

If the queſtion be, which is moſt for the intereſt of the Britiſh dominions in general, to reſtrain the French American trade or to give it all poſſible encouragement, it muſt be given in favour of encouragement. The ſpeedy ſettlement of this vaſt continent is generally ſuppoſed to be advantageous to Great Britain. Every new houſe, new farm and new ſubject adds to the conſumption of Britiſh manufactures. Nothing more contributes to this ſpeedy ſettlement than a vent for the lumber, a great help in clearing the lands near the ſea and upon navigable rivers, and for proviſions, the produce of ſettlements when made. But, on the other hand, admit that raiſing the price of Weſt-India produce tends to increaſe the number of plantations in the Islands, yet thoſe plantations, although more valuable, will never bear any proportion in number to the plantations and ſettlements upon the continent,

I 2 and

and the increase of white subjects will be still less in proportion. Blacks eat and drink nothing and wear next to nothing of British manufacture.

There has been a great alteration in our trade with Great Britain. At the beginning of this period, and till within 30 or 40 years past, merchants and manufacturers in England shipped goods upon their own accounts, which were sold here upon commission, and although there was appearance of profit from the sales, yet, by the loss upon returns, most adventurers in a course of years were great losers. Discerning persons in London, when they saw a man going deep into trade to the colonies, would pronounce him short lived.

The trade is now upon a more certain footing for the people of England. Few goods are sent to be sold upon commission. The manufacturer depends upon the Merchant in England for his pay. The merchant receives his commission and generally agrees with his correspondent, for whom he is in advance, in the colonies, that after six or nine months credit, if payment be not made, interest shall be allowed.

Bad debts must be expected more or less upon all extensive trade. Perhaps they are not more frequent in the colonies than among the like number of traders in England.

The cod and whale fishery are in a more flourishing state than formerly. The vessels employed in cod fishing have been more numerous, but they were small shallops, and one of the schooners now employed in that fishery takes as much fish in a season as two shallops used to do.

The French are supposed to maintain a Fishermann at less expence than the English. Be it so, the English catch and make their fish at less expence than the French notwithstanding. Five or six well-fed Marble-head or Cape-Ann men catch as much fish as ten or twelve meagre Frenchmen in the same time. The French find their account in taking what they call their muid or mud-fish when the English cannot. This is owing to the vent which the French markets afford for that sort of fish. In what they call a *sedentaire* and we a short fishery we shall always outdo them, unless the ports of the other nations in Europe as well as those of the French should be shut against us. If every family in Britain should make one dinner in a week upon New-England codfish it would cause an amazing increase of the consumption of British manufactures.

It

It is certain that before the war of 1744 the French fiſhery declined. They uſed to go from Louisbourg to Canſo and buy the Engliſh fiſh for the French European markets, becauſe it came cheaper to them, than they could catch and make it.

The increaſe of the conſumption of oil by lamps as well as by divers manufactures in Europe has been no ſmall encouragement to our whale fiſhery. The flouriſhing ſtate of the Island of Nantuket muſt be attributed to it. The cod and whale fiſhery, being the principal ſource of our returns to Great-Britain, are therefore worthy not only of provincial but national attention.

Formerly the trade to Newfoundland was valuable. The increaſe of the northern colonies has carried from us great part of the ſupplies we uſed to make. Our late-began commerce with Nova-Scotia is valuable, but will not compenſate for this loſs.

The manufacture of pot-aſh promiſes great benefit to the colonies. It is to be wiſhed, they may meet with no diſcouragement. Frauds in package and adulteration cannot be of any long continuance. The leaſt that can be done by every government, where it is manufactured, is a law to compel every perſon to ſet his name and the name of the town where he lives upon the caſk in which he packs his pot-aſh. This will go a great way towards preventing fraud. Should the Ruſſia traders combine to underſell thoſe who import from America, yet it will be conſidered that the Ruſſia trade is drawing every year from the nation a large balance in bullion, whereas the increaſe of imports from the colonies only tends to an increaſe of national exports, and the body of the nation will combine againſt the Ruſſia traders.

I remember one advantage from paper money. Upon the depreciation, from time to time, the wages of ſeamen and the rate at which coaſting veſſels and others were hired, did not immediately riſe in proportion to the riſe of ſilver and exchange with London and other parts of the world. We were thus led to employ our veſſels as carriers to and from many parts of the continent, the Weſt-Indies and Europe, becauſe we let them upon cheaper freight and hire, than any other colony would do. The war in 1744 gave a twin to this part of buſineſs, but we may learn from what happened then, whithout any premediated plan or deſign, what we are capable of, viz. navigating our veſſels, eſpecially if further

 improve-

improvements be made in the conftruction of them, with fo little expence as, like the Dutch in Europe, to become carriers for America. The advantage, in this particular inftance of the reduction of the price of labour fhews us what improvements might be made in other branches of trade and manufacture, if ever it fhould be recluced in proportion to the price in Europe, compared with the price of the neceffaries of life. It was hard parting with a free open trade to all parts of the world which the Maffachufets carried on before the prefent charter. The principal acts of parliament were made many years before, but there was no cuftomhoufe eftablifhed in the colony, nor any authority anxious for carrying thofe acts into execution. It was feveral years after the new charter, before it was generally obferved. If we are under no other obligations, we certainly enjoy and cannot fubfift without the protection of our mother country over our trade at fea, our perfonal eftate afhore, the territory itfelf, our liberties and lives. It is owing, in a great meafure, to the taxes, duties and excifes, the confequences of an enormous load of debt, that the manufactures in England come dearer to us, than thofe of other countries. Great part of this debt was incurred by our immediate protection. Shall we think much of fharing in the burden when whe have been fo great fharers in the benefit? There is no way in which we can more effectually contribute to the national relief than by fubmitting to regulations and reftraints upon our trade, and yet no way in which we fhould be fo little fenfible of it.

It has been the general voice that our trade to Great-Britain fhould be contracted, and that our inhabitants fhould be employed in the fame kind of manufactures we import from thence, the materials for moft of which we have or may have within ourfelves.

The great creator of the univerfe in infinite wisdom has fo formed the earth that different parts of it, from the foil, climate &c. are adapted to different produce, & he fo orders and difpofes the genius, temper, numbers and other circumftances relative to the inhabitants as to render fome employments peculiarly proper for one country, and others for another, and by this provifion a mutual intercourfe is kept up between the different parts of the Globe. It would be folly in a Virginian to attempt a plantation of rice for the fake of having all he confumes from the produce of his own labour, when South-Carolina, by nature, is peculiarly defigned for rice,

rice, and capable of ſupplying one half of the world. Old countries, ſtocked with people, are ordinarily beſt adapted to manufactures. Would it be the intereſt of New-England, whilſt thin of people, to turn their attention from the whale, cod, mackerel and herring fiſhery, their lumber trade and ſhip building, which require but few hands compared with many other ſorts of buſineſs, to ſuch manufactures as are now imported from Great-Britain, or to take their ſons from clearing the land and turning an uncultivated wilderneſs into pleaſant & profitable fields, and ſet them to ſpinning, weaving and the like employments? I do not mean to diſcourage any perſons who cannot improve their time to greater advantage, from employing themſelves and families, in any branch of manufacture whatſoever. Idleneſs is the certain parent of vice. Induſtry, introduced, will ordinarily tend to produce a change of manners. A general philanthropy will induce us to delight in and contribute to the happineſs of every part of the human race, by which we ourſelves are no ſufferers; the ſtate from whence we ſprang and upon which we ſtill depend for protection, may juſtly expect to be diſtinguiſhed by us, and that we ſhould delight in and contribute to its proſperity, beyond all other parts of the globe.

AN ACCOUNT OF ALGIERS. *)

This place, which for ſeveral ages hath braved the greateſt powers of *Chriſtendom*, is not above a mile and a half in circuit, tho' computed to contain about 2000 *Chriſtian* ſlaves, 15000 *Jews*, and 100000 *Mahometans*, of which only thirty (at moſt) are *Renegadoes*. It is ſituated upon the declivity of a hill, that faces the north and northeaſt; whereby the houſes riſe ſo gradually above each other, that there is ſcarce one in the whole city, but what, in one or other of thoſe directions, hath a full view of the ſea. The walls are weak and of little defence, unleſs where they are further ſecured by ſome additional fortification. The ditch, which formerly ſurrounded the city, is almoſt entirely filled up.

*) D. Shaw's Travels or obſervations relating to ſeveral parts of Barbary and the Levant. Ed. 2. Lond. 1757. gr. 4.

Towards the ſea, it is better fortified, and capable to make a more ſtrenuous defence. For the embraſures, in this direction, have all braſs guns and in good order. The battery of the *Mole Gate*, upon the eaſt angle of the city, is mounted with long pieces of ordinance, one of which hath ſeven cylinders, each of them three inches in diameter. Half a furlong to the W. S. W. of the harbour, is the battery of *Fiſher's Gate*, or *the Gate of the Sea*, which conſiſting of a double row of cannon, commands the entrance into the port, and the road before it.

The port is of an oblong figure, a hundred and thirty fathom long, and eighty broad. The eaſtern mound of it, which was formerly *the Iſland*, is well ſecured by ſeveral ſtrong fortifications. The *Round Caſtle*, (built by the *Spaniards* whilſt they were maſters of *the Iſland*) and the two remote batteries, (erected within this century) are ſaid to be *bomb-proof*; and have each of them their lower embraſures mounted with thirty ſix pounders. But the middle battery, which appears to be the oldeſt, is of the leaſt defence. As none of the fortifications are aſſiſted with either mines or advanced works: and as the ſoldiers, who are to guard and defend them, cannot be kept up to any regular courſes of duty and attendance, a few reſolute battalions, protected by a ſmall ſquadron of ſhips, would have no great difficulty to make themſelves quickly maſters of the very ſtrongeſt.

The hills and valleys round about *Algiers* are every where beautified with gardens and country ſeats, whither the inhabitants of better faſhion retire, during the ſummer ſeaſon. The country ſeats are little white houſes, ſhaded by a variety of fruit trees and evergreens; whereby they afford a gay and delightful proſpect towards the ſea. The gardens are well ſtocked with melons, fruits and pot herbs of all kinds; and what is chiefly regarded in theſe hot climates, each of them enjoys as well as the city a great command of excellent water, from many rivulets and fountains.

The government of the *Algerines*, which differs little from that of *Tunis*, conſiſts of the *Dey*, and a common council, compoſed of the thirty *Tiah Baſhees*, tho' the *Mufti*, the *Cady*, and the whole ſoldiery ſometimes, are called upon to aſſiſt. All affairs of moment ought to be agreed upon by this aſſembly before they paſs into laws. But for ſome years there has been little account made of this body; and they have been convened only to conſent to meaſures before concerted in the

cabinet

council. As the *Dey* is chosen out of the army, each order, even the moſt inferiour, having an equal right and title to that dignity, every bold and aſpiring ſoldier, tho' taken yeſterday from the plough, may be conſidered as heir apparent to the throne, and lyes under no neceſſity to wait 'till ſickneſs or old age remove the preſent incumbent: It is enough that he is able to protect himſelf with the ſame cymiter, which he has had the hardineſs to ſheath in the bowels of his predeceſſor; rarely one in ten having the fortune to die without a muſket ball or a cymiter. However this factious and diſcontended humour ſeems, at preſent, to be ſome what purged and allayed, by the many ſeaſonable executions, that have been lately made of theſe aſpiring members.

The whole force of *Algiers*, in *Turks* and *Cologlies*, is computed, at preſent, to be about ſix thouſand five hundred; two thouſand whereof are ſuppoſed to be old, and excuſed from duty; and of the four thouſand five hundred that remain, one thouſand are conſtantly employed in relieving annually their garriſons, whilſt the reſt are either to arm out their cruiſers, or elſe form the three flying camps, which are ſent out every ſummer under the command of the provincial *Viceroys*. To the *Turkiſh* troops we may join about two thouſand *Zwowah*, as the *Mooriſh* horſe and footmen are called, which are kept in conſtant pay, and being all of them hereditary enemies to the *Turks*, are little conſidered in the real ſafeguard of the government. The method obſerved in keeping this large and populous kingdom in obedience, is not ſo much by force of arms, as by diligently obſerving the old political maxim, *divide* and *command*. For the provincial *Viceroys* are very watchful over the motions of the *Arabian* tribes, who are under their ſeveral diſtricts and juriſdictions; aud as theſe are in continual jealouſies and diſputes with one another, the *Beys* have nothing to do but keep up the ferment. There are a number of *Arabian* and *African* tribes, who, if their neighbours ſhould obſerve a neutrality, would be too hard for the whole army of *Algiers*, notwithſtanding each *Turk* values himſelf as a match for twenty *Arabs*.

To make up deficiencies in the army, their cruiſing veſſels are ſent out, every five or ſix years, to the *Levant* for recruits, which generally conſiſt of ſhepherds, outlaws, and perſons of the meaneſt condition. Yet, after they have been a little inſtructed by their fellow ſoldiers, and have got caps to their heads, ſhoes to their feet, and a pair of knives to their girdle,

they quickly begin to affect grandeur and majesty, expect to be saluted with the title of (*Effendi*) *your Grace*, and look upon the most considerable citizens as their slaves, and the consuls of the allied nations as their footmen. *Mahomet Bashaw*, who was *Dey* when I arrived at *Algiers*, was not ashamed to own his extraction, in a notable dispute he had once with the deputy consul of a neighbouring nation; *My mother*, says he, *sold sheep's feet, and my father neat's tongues, but they would have been ashamed to have exposed to sale so worthless a tongue as yours.*

But, besides these *Levant-Turks*, the *Dey* may, at his pleasure, and especially upon any emergency, enroll the *Cologlies*, as they call the sons of such soldiers, who have been permitted to marry at *Algiers*; tho' since they made an nnsuccessful attempt upon the government, they have been excluded from the honour of being *Dey*, *Aga* of the *Janizaries*, and other considerable employments.

The officers that command this small army, (and it would be the same if it amounted to its former complement of twelve thousand) are the *Aga* or general, thirty *Tiah Bashees* or colonels, eight hundred *Bulluck Bashees* or capitains, and about half that number of *Oda Bashees* or lieutenants. The method of arriving at these posts, is not by money and interest, but by age and seniority, the oldest soldier being advanced upon the death of his captain, &c. &c. tho' by the permission of the *Dey*, a younger soldier may purchase the rank of an elder, the latter degrading himself in return.

The yearly taxes of this great and fertile kingdom bring not more into the treasury than 300000 dollars: But it is computed, that the eighth part of prizes, the effects of persons dying without children, the contributions from the independent *Kaides*, and the frequent *Aver-eas*, and oppressions, may bring in as much more. To compensate this, the pay is but small, the youngest soldier receiving only 406 *Aspers*, every two months, and the eldest, or those in full pay, no more than 5800; whereof 696 make a dollar. Besides the pay, such *Tab* and *Bulluck Bashees* as are unmarried, have each of them eight loaves of bread a day, and the *Oda Bashees* and private soldiers, who are in the same condition, have four; each loaf being about five ounces in weight, and three *Aspers* in value.

In

In the ordinary diſtribution of juſtice, there is in this, as in all other *Turkiſh* governments, an officer whom they call the *Cady*, who is obliged to attend at the court of juſtice once or twice a day, where he hears and determines the ſeveral ſuits and complaints that are brought before him. But as bribery is too often charged upon the *Cady*, all affairs of moment are laid before the *Dey*, or maſter of the horſe. At all theſe tribunals, the cauſe is quickly decided, nothing more being required than the proof of what is alledged; ſo that a matter of debt, treſpaſs, or of the higheſt crimes will be finally decided, and the ſentence executed *in leſs than an hour.*

In caſes of debt, the debtor is uſually detained in priſon, 'till the (*Chouſes*) bayliffs have ſeized upon this effects and ſold them. If the ſale amounts to more than the debt, then the *overplus* is returned; if it comes ſhort, he is nothwithſtanding releaſed, and no future demands are made upon him. Leſs offences are puniſhed with the *Baſtinado:* The offender is to receive ſo many ſtrokes (ſometimes two or three hundred) on his buttocks or the ſoles of his feet, with ſticks of the thickneſs of ones little finger. For clipping or debaſing the publick coin, the old *Egyptian* puniſhment is inflicted, which is to cut off the hands of the tranſgreſſor. Whatſoever *Jew* or *Chriſtian* ſubject is guilty of murder or any other capital crime, he is to be carried without the gates of the city, and burnt alive: But the *Moors* and *Arabs* are either impaled for the ſame crime, or hung up by the neck, over the battlements of the city, or elſe thrown upon the hooks that are fixed in the walls below, where ſometimes they hang, in the moſt exquiſite agonies and torments, thirty or forty hours. before they expire. The *Turks* are not puniſhed in publick, like other offenders; but are, out of reſpect to their characters, ſent to the houſe of the *Aga*, where, according to the quality of the miſdemeanour, they are baſtinadoed or ſtrangled. Out of modeſty likewiſe to the ſex, when the women offend, they are not expoſed to the populace, but ſent to ſome private houſe of correction; or, if the crime is capital, they are then tyed up in a ſack, carried out into the ſea, and drowned. The weſtern *Moors* ſtill uſe the barbarous puniſhment of ſawing aſunder the tranſgreſſor. For which purpoſe they prepare two boards, of the ſame length and breadth with the unfortunate perſon,

and

and having tyed him betwixt them, they proceed to the execution, by beginning at the head.

The naval force of this *Regency*, for two centuries, has been, at one time or other, a terror to all the trading nations of *Christendom*. With relation therefore to *Christian* Princes, this government has alliance with us, the *French*, the *Dutch*, and the *Swedes*. Great application has been often made, by the *Port*, in behalf of the *Emperor's* subjects; though all their interceſſions have hitherto proved ineffectual, notwithſtanding the *Algerines* acknowledge themſelves to be the vaſſals of the *Grand Seignor*, and, as ſuch, ſhould comply. The *Swedes* purchaſed their peace at the rate of 70,000 dollars: and, as theſe cruiſers rarely meet with veſſels of that nation, it has been hitherto diſcourſed of as a great myſtery. The ſucceſs which the *Dutch* met with, during a war of twelve years, to deſtroy a few of their veſſels; the magnificent preſent of naval ſtores that was promiſed, upon ratifying the peace; together with the natural timorouſneſs of the Dey, leſt, by further loſſes, he ſhould be recknon'd unfortunate (a dangerous character in this country for a commander) were the chief and concurring reaſons for extending their friendſhip to that nation. It is certain that the greateſt part of the ſoldiers, and the ſea officers in general, very ſtrenuouſly oppoſed it; urging, that it would be in vain to arm out their veſſels, when they had peace with the three trading nations; that their loſs was inconſiderable, when compared with the riches obtained by the war; concluding with a very expreſſive *Arabian* proverb. that ſuch perſons *ought never to ſow, who are afraid of the ſparrows*: As the younger ſoldiers cannot well ſubſiſt without the money that ariſes from their ſharges in prices, there has been no ſmall murmuring at the little ſucceſs they have lately met with. And it is very probable (as a little time perhaps will diſcover) that the very moment any conſiderable addition is made to their fleet, nay, perhaps, without any further augmentation, the preſent Dey will be obliged to leſſen the number of his alliances, from thoſe very principles which, a few years ago, engaged his predeceſſor to increaſe them.

The *Algerines* have certainly a great eſteem and friendſhip for our nation; and, provided there could be any ſecurity in a government, that is guided by chance and humour, more than by counſel and mature deliberation, it is very probable that, which of the trading nations ſoever they may think fit to quarrel with, we have little to apprehend. The *Dutch* are

are very induſtrious in cultivating a good underſtanding with them, by making an anual preſent; a method hitherto very prevalent and ſuccefsful: whilſt, on the other hand, the *French* may influence them as much, by putting them in mind of the execution which their bombs did formerly to this city, and of a later inſtance of their reſentment at *Tripoli*. But as there is rarely any great prudence in uſing high words and menaces at *Algiers*, it is certain, provided the *Algerines* are to be ſway'd with fear, that we have as much intereſt in Sir *Edward Spragg's* expedition at *Bou jeiah*. as the *French* can have in that of the Marquis *d'Eſtrees* at *Algiers*. Notwithſtanding likewiſe all the arguments that may be urged in behalf of *Marſeilles* and *Toulon*, theſe people are not to be perſuaded but that *Minorca* and *Gibraltar* are in a more convenient ſituation to give them diſturbance. But reaſon and argument will not always be good politics at this court, where the firſt miniſter is the cook, and where an inſolent ſoldiery have too often the command. In critical junctures, therefore, the ground is to be maintained by the nice management and addreſs of the conſul; by knowing how to make proper application to the particular paſſions of thoſe who have the Dey's ear; by flattering one, placing a confidence in another, and eſpecially by making a proper uſe of thoſe invincible arguments, *money*, *kaf-tans* and *gold watches*. For according to an old and infallible obſervation, *Give a* Turk *money with one hand, and he will permit his eyes to be plucked out by the other*.

Such was the political ſtate and condition of this Regency, when I left it, *A. D.* 1732. How long it may continue ſo will be hard to determine; becauſe, what little there is here of juſtice, honeſty, or public faith, proceeds rather from fear and compulſion, than from choice and free election. For the acknowledgment is very juſt, which *Ali Baſhaw*, a late Dey, made to Conſul *Cole*, upon complaining of the injuries that our veſſels met with from his cruiſers: The *Algerines*, ſays he, *are a company of rogues, and I am their captain*.

AN

AN ACCOUNT OF THE DEATH OF JOHN REINHOLD PATKUL. *)

JOHN REINHOLD PATKUL was born of a noble ſamily in *Livonia*, a northern province belonging to the crown of *Sweden*. The *Livonians* having been ſtript of their privileges, and great part of their eſtates by *Charles* XI, *Patkul* was deputed to make their complaint, which he did with ſuch eloquence and courage, that the king, laying his hand upon his ſhoulder, ſaid, *You have ſpoken for your country as a brave man ſhould, and I eſteem you for it.*

Charles, however, who added the baſeneſs of hypocriſy to the ferocity of a tyrant, was determined to puniſh the zeal and honeſty which he thought fit to commend, and a few days afterwards cauſed *Patkul* to be declared guilty of high treaſon, and comdemned to die. *Patkul*, however, found means to eſcape into *Poland*, where he continued till *Charles* was dead. He hoped that his ſentence would have been then reſerved, as it had been declared unjuſt, even by the tyrant that procured it; but being diſappointed in this expectation, he applied to *Auguſtus*, king of *Poland*, and ſollicited him to attempt the conqueſt of *Livonia* from the *Swedes*, which, he ſaid, might be eaſily effected, as the people were ready to ſhake their yoke, and the king of *Sweden* was a child incapable of compelling their ſubjection.

Auguſtus poſſeſſed himſelf of *Livonia*, in conſequence of this propoſal, and afterwards, when *Charles* XII. entered the province to recover it, *Patkul* commanded in the *Saxon* army againſt him. *Charles* was victorious, and *Patkul*, ſome time afterwards, being diſguſted at the haughty behaviour of Gen. *Flemming*, *Auguſtus*'s favourite, entered into the ſervice of the Czar, with whom *Auguſtus* was in ſtrict alliance, and a little before *Charles* compelled *Auguſtus* to abdicate the throne of *Poland*, and his ſubjects to elect *Staniſlaus* in his ſtead. The Czar ſent *Patkul*, with the title of his ambaſſador in *Saxony*, to prevail with *Auguſtus* to meet him at *Grodno*, that they might confer on the ſtate of their affairs.

This conference took place, and immediately afterwards the Czat went from *Grondo*, to quell a rebellion in *Aſtracan*. As ſoon

*) Anecdotes of J. R. Patkul, now firſt printed from a Manuſcript Account written by the Lutheran Clergyman who attended him in his preparation for his Death &c. Lond. 1761. 8.

ſoon as the Czar was gone, *Auguſtus*, to the ſurprize of all *Europe*, ordered *Patkul*, who was then at *Dresden*, to be ſeized as a ſtate criminal.

By this injurious and unprecedented action *Auguſtus* at once violated the law of nations, and weakened his own intereſt; for *Patkul* was not only an ambaſſador, but an ambaſſador from the only power that could afford him protection. The cauſe, however, was this; *Patkul* had diſcovered that *Auguſtus*'s miniſters were to propoſe a peace to *Charles* upon any terms, and had therefore formed a deſign to be before hand with him, and procure a ſeparate peace between *Charles* and his new maſter the Czar. The deſign of *Patkul* was diſcovered, and to prevent its ſucceſs *Auguſtus* ventured to ſeize his perſon, aſſuring the Czar that he was a traitor, and had betrayed them both.

Auguſtus was ſoon after reduced to beg a peace of *Charles* at any rate, and *Charles* granted it upon certain conditions, one of which was that he ſhould deliver up *Patkul*. This condition reduced *Auguſtus* to a very diſtreſsful dilemma; the Czar, at this very time, reclaimed *Patkul* as his ambaſſador, and *Charles* demanded, with threats, that he ſhould be put into his hands. *Auguſtus*, therefore, contrived an expedient by which he hoped to ſatisfy both; he ſent ſome guards to deliver *Patkul*, who was priſoner in the caſtle of *Koenigſtein*, to the *Swediſh* troops; but by ſecret orders, privately diſpatched, he commanded the governor to let him eſcape. The governor, tho' he received this order in time, yet diſappointed its intention by his villainy and his avarice; he knew *Patkul* to be very rich, and, having it now in his power to ſuffer him to eſcape with impunity, he demanded of *Patkul* a large ſum for the favour; *Patknl* refuſed to buy that liberty, which he made no doubt would be gratuitouſly reſtored, in conſequence of the Czar's requiſition and remonſtrance, and, in the mean time, the *Swediſh* guards arrived with the order for his being delivered up to them.

By this party he was firſt carried to *Charles*'s head quarters at *Altranſtadt*, where he continued three months bound to a ſtake with a heavy chain of iron; he was then conducted to *Caſimir*, where *Charles* ordered him to be tryed, and he was by his judges found Guilty. His ſentence depended upon the king, and after having been kept a priſoner ſome months, under a guard of *Mayerfeldt*'s regiment, uncertain of his fate, he was on the 28th of *September* 1707, towards the evening, delivered

delivered into the cuſtody of a regiment of dragoons, commanded by Col. *Nicolas Hielm.* On the next day, the 29th, the colonel took the chaplain of his regiment aſide, and telling him that *Patkul* was to die the next day, ordered him to acquaint him with his fate, and prepare him for it. About this very time he was to have been married to a *Saxon* lady of great quality, virtue, and beauty, a circumſtance which renders his caſe ſtill more affecting. What followed, in conſequence of the Colonel's order to the miniſter will be related in his own words:

Immediately after evening-ſervice I went to his priſon, where I fonnd him lying on his bed. The firſt compliments over, I entered upon the melancholy duty of my profeſſion, and turning to the officer who had him in charge, told him the colonel's orders were, that I ſhould be alone with his priſoner.

The officer having withdrawn, *Patkul*, graſping both my hands in his, cry'd out, with moſt affecting anxiety and diſtreſs, My dear paſtor! What are you to declare? what am I to hear?

I bring you, replied I, the ſame tidings that the prophet brought to king *Hezekiah*, *Set thine houſe in order for thou muſt die.* To-morrow, by this time, thou ſhalt be no longer in the number of the living! At this terrible warning, he bowed himſelf upon his bed, and burſt into tears.

I attempted to comfort him, by ſaying, that he muſt, without all doubt, have often meditated on this ſubject: *Yes, cried he, I know, alas! too well, that we muſt all die; but the death prepared for me will be cruel, and inſupportable.*

I aſſured him, that the manner of his death was to me totally unknown; but, believing that he would be prepared for it, I was ſure his ſoul ſhould be received into the number of happy ſpirits. Here he roſe up, and folding his hands together, *Merciful God! let me then die the death of the righteous!* A little after, with his face inclined to the wall, where ſtood his bed, he broke out into this ſoliloquy: *Auguſtus! O Auguſtus, what muſt be thy lot one day? Muſt thou not anſwer for all the crimes thou haſt committed?*

He then obſerved that he was driven out from his country, by a ſentence againſt his life pronounced for doing what the king himſelf encouraged him to do, ſaying to him one day, in terms of much kindneſs, *Patkul*, maintain the rights of your country like a man of honour, and with all the ſpirit

you

you are capable of. That flying into an enemy's country was alſo unavoidable, as the country of an ally would not have afforded him protection; but that he was in *Saxony* a wretched exile, not a counſellor, or adviſer; that, before his arrival, every thing was already planned; the alliance with *Muſcovy* ſigned, and the meaſures with *Denmark* agreed upon.

My inclinations, ſaid he, after a pauſe, were always to ſerve *Sweden*, tho' the contrary opinion has prevailed. The elector of *Brandenburg* owed his title of king of *Pruſſia* to the ſervices I did him, and when, in recompenſe, he would have given me a conſiderable ſum of money, I thanked him, and rejected the offer; adding, that the reward I moſt wiſhed for, was to regain the king of *Sweden's* favour by his interceſſion. This he promiſed, and tried every poſſible method to ſucceed, but without ſucceſs. After this I laboured ſo much for the intereſt of the late emperor in his *Spaniſh* affairs, that I brought about what ſcarce any other man could have effected: The Emperor, as an acknowledgment gave me an aſſignment for 50,000 crowns, which I humbly laid at his feet, and only implored his imperial majeſty's recommendation of me to my king's favour: This requeſt he immediately granted, and gave his orders accordingly, but in vain. Yet, not to loſe any opportunity, I went to *Moſcow* while the *Swediſh* ambaſſadors were at that court, but even the mediation of the Czar had no effect. After that I diſtributed among the *Swediſh* priſoners at *Moſcow*, at leaſt 100,000 crowns, to ſhow the ardent deſire I had, by all ways, to regain the favour of their ſovereign. Would to heaven I had been equally in earneſt to obtain the grace of God. — At theſe words another ſhower of tears fell from his eyes, and he remained for ſome moments ſilent, and overwhelmed with grief.

I uſed my beſt endeavours to comfort him, with the aſſurance that this grace would not be denied him, provided he ſpent the few hours ſtill left, in earneſtly imploring it; for the door of heaven's mercy was never ſhut, tho' that of men might be cruelly ſo. *This*, replied he, *this is my conſolation; for thou art God and not man to be angry for ever.*

He then inveighed bitterly againſt *Auguſtus*, and reproached himſelf for having any connection with a wretch who was wholly deſtitute of all faith and honour, an atheiſt, without piety, and without virtue.

While he was at *Warsaw*, said he, and heard the king was advancing to attack him, he found himself extremely distressed. He was absolutely without money, and therefore obliged to dismiss some of his troops. He had recourse to my assistance, and intreated me, for the love of God, to borrow whatever sum I could. I procured him 400,000 crowns; 50,000 of which, the very next day, he squandered on trinkets, and jewels, which he gave in presents to some of his women. I told him plainly my thoughts of the matter; and by my importunity prevailed, that the *Jews* should take back their toys, and return the money they had been payd for them. The ladies were enraged; and he swore that I should, one time or other, suffer for what I had done; there indeed he kept his word. Would to God he had always done so with those he employed!

I now left him for a short time, and at seven in the evening I returned; and the officer being retired, he accosted me, with a smiling air, and an appearance of much tranquillity: — Welcome, dear Sir, the weight that lay heavy on my heart is removed, and I already feel a sensible change wrought in my mind. I am ready to die; death is more eligible than the solitude of a long imprisonment. Would to heaven only, that the kind of it were less cruel. Can you, my dear Sir, inform me in what manner I am to suffer? I answered, that it had not been communicated to me; but that I imagined it would pass over without noise, as only the colonel and myself had notice of it.

That, reply'd he, I esteem as a favour, but have you seen the sentence? Or must I die, without being either heard or condemned? My apprehensions are of being put to intollerable tortures. I comforted him in the kindest manner I could; but he was his own best comforter from the word of God, with which he was particularly acquainted; quoting, among many other passages, the following, in Greek, *We must enter into the kingdom of heaven thro' many tribulations.*

He then called for pen and ink, and intreated me to write down what he should dictate. I did so, as follows:

Testamentum, or my last Will, as to the disposition of my effects after my death.

I. *His majesty, king* Augustus, *having first examined his conscience thoroughly, will be so just as to pay back to my relations the sum he owes me; which, being liquidated, will amount*

amount to 50,000 *crowns; and as my relations are here in ſervice of* Sweden, *that monarch will probably obtain it for them.*

At this he ſaid, Let us ſtop here a little; I will quickly return to finiſh this will; but now let us addreſs ourſelves to God by prayer. Prayers being ended, "Now, cry'd he, I find myſelf yet better, yet in a quieter frame of mind. Oh! were my death leſs dreadful, with what pleaſure would I expiate my guilt by embracing it! —

Yes, cry'd he, after a pauſe, I have friends in different places, who will weep over my deplorable fate. What will the mother of the king of *Pruſſia* ſay? What will be the grief of the Counteſs *Levolde*, who attends on her? But what thoughts muſt ariſe in the boſom of HER, tho whom my faith is plighted? Unhappy woman! the news of my death will be fatal to her peace of mind. My dear paſtor, may I venture to beg one favour of you?,, I aſſured him he might command every ſervice in my power: "Have the goodneſs then, ſaid he, preſſing my hand, the moment I am no more, to write — Alas! how will you ſet about it? a letter to Madam *Einſiedelern*, the lady I am promiſed to — Let her know that I die her's; inform her fully of my unhappy fate! Send her my laſt and eternal farewell! My death is in truth diſgraceful; but my manner of meeting it will, I hope, by heaven's and your aſſiſtance, render it holy and bleſſed. This news will be her only conſolation. Add farther, dear Sir, that I thanked her with my lateſt breath, for the ſincere affection ſhe bore me: May ſhe live long and happy: This is my dying wiſh.,, — I gave him my hand in promiſe that I would faithfully perform all he deſired.

Afterwards he took up a book: "This, ſaid he, is of my own writing. Keep it in remembrance of me, and as a proof of my true regard for religion. I could wiſh it might have the good fortune to be preſented to the king, that he may be convinced, with what little foundation I have been accuſed of Atheiſm.,, Taking it from his hand I aſſured him, that my colonel would not fail to preſent it, as ſoon as opportunity offered.

The reſt of his time was employed in prayer, which he went thro' with a very fervent devotion.

On the 30th of *September* I was again with him at four in the morning. The moment he heard me, he aroſe, and rendering thanks to God, aſſured me he had not ſlept ſo ſoundly

ſor a long time. We went to prayers, and in truth his piety, and devout frame of mind, were worthy of admiration.

About ſix he ſaid he would begin his confeſſion, before the din and clamour of the people without could riſe to diſturb his thoughts. He then kneeled down, and went thro' his confeſſion in a manner truly edifying.

The ſun beginning to appear above the horizon, he looked out of the window, ſaying, *Salve feſta dies!* This is my wedding-day. I looked, alas! for another, but this is the happier; for to day ſhall my ſoul be introduced into the aſſembly of the bleſſed!

He then aſked me, whether I yet knew in what way he was to die? I anſwered, that I did not. He conjured me, not to forſake him; for that he ſhould find in my company ſome conſolation even in the midſt of tortures.

Caſting his eye on the paper that lay on the table, *This will, ſaid he, can never be finiſhed.* I aſked him, whether he would put his name to what was already written? *No, replied he, with a deep ſigh, I will write that hated name no more. My relations will find their account in another place; ſalute them from me.*

He then addreſſed himſelf again to God in prayer, and continued his devotions till the lieutenant entered to conduct him to the coach. He wrapped himſelf up in his cloak, and went forward a great pace, guarded by 100 horſemen. Being arrived at the place of execution, we found it ſurrounded by 300 foot ſoldiers; but at the ſight of the *ſtakes* and *wheels*, his horror is not to be deſcribed. Claſping me in his arms, *Beg of God, he exclaimed, that my ſoul may not be thrown into deſpair, amidſt theſe tortures!* I comforted, I adjured him to fix his thoughts on the death of *Jeſus Chriſt*, who, for our ſins, was nailed to a croſs.

Being now on the ſpot where he was to ſuffer, he bid the executioner to do his duty well, and put into his hands ſome money, which he got ready for that purpoſe. He then ſtretched himſelf out upon the wheel; and while they were ſtripping him naked, he begged me to pray that God would have mercy on him, and bear up his ſoul in agony. I did ſo; and turning to all the ſpectators, ſaid to them. "Brethren, join with me in prayer for this unhappy man. *Yes, cry'd he, aſſiſt me all of you with your ſupplications to heaven.*

Here

Here the executioner gave him the firſt ſtroke. His cries were terrible. O *Jeſus! Jeſus, have mercy upon me.* This cruel ſcene was much lengthened out, and of the utmoſt horror; for as the headſman had no ſkill in his buſineſs, the unhappy victim received upwards of 15 different blows, with each of which were intermixed the moſt piteous groans, and invocations of the name of God. At length, after two ſtrokes given on the breaſt, his ſtrength and voice failed him. In a faultring dying tone, he was juſt heard to ſay, *Cut off my head!* and the executioner ſtill lingering, he himſelf placed his head on the ſcaffold: After four ſtrokes with an hatchet, the head was ſeparated from the body, and the body quartered. Such was the end of the renowned *Patkul;* and may God have mercy on his ſoul!

LORENS HAGAR,
Chaplain of a Regiment.

THE STORY OF LE FEVER. *)

It was ſome time in the ſummer of that year, in which *Dendermond* was taken by the allies, — which was about ſeven years before my father came into the country, — and about as many, after the time, that my uncle *Toby* and *Trim* had privately decamped from my father's houſe in town, in order to lay ſome of the fineſt ſieges to ſome of the fineſt fortified places in *Europe* — when my uncle *Toby* was one evening getting his ſupper, with *Trim* ſitting behind him at a ſmall ſideboard, that the landlord of a little inn in the village came into the parlour with an empty phial in his hand, to beg a glaſs or two of ſack: 'This for a poor gentleman, — I think of the army, ſaid the landlord, who has been taken ill at my houſe four days ago, and has never held up his head ſince, or had a deſire to taſte any thing, till juſt now, that he has a fancy for a glaſs of ſack and a thin toaſt, — *I think,* ſays he, taking his hand from his forehead, *it would comfort me.* ——

— If I could neither beg, borrow, or buy ſuch a thing, — added the landlord — I would almoſt ſteal it for the poor gentle-

*) The Life and Opinions of Triſtram Shandy (by Mr. Sterne) Lond. 1763-66. 9 Vol. S. Altenburg 1772. 6 Vol. 8.

gentleman, he is ſo ill. — I hope in God he will ſtill mend, continued he, — we are all of us concerned for him.

Thou art a good-natured ſoul, I will anſwer for thee, cried my uncle *Toby;* and thou ſhalt drink the poor gentleman's health in a glaſs of ſack thyſelf, — and take a couple of bottles, with my ſervice, and tell him he is heartily welcome to them, and to a dozen more, if they will do him good.

Though I am perſuaded, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, as the landlord ſhut the door, he is a very compaſſionate fellow — *Trim*, — yet I cannot help entertaining a high opinion of his gueſt too; there muſt be ſomething more than common in him, that in ſo ſhort a time ſhould win ſo much upon the affections of his hoſt: — And of his whole family, added the corporal, for they are all concerned for him. — Step after him, ſaid my uncly *Toby*, — do *Trim*, — and aſk if he knows his name.

— I have puite forgot it, truly, ſaid the landlord, coming back into the parlour with the corporal, — but I can aſk his ſon again: ——— Has he a ſon with him then? ſaid my uncle *Toby*. — A boy, replied the landlord, of about eleven or twelve years of age; — but the poor creature has taſted almoſt as little as his father; he does nothing but mourn and lament for him night and day. — He has not ſtirred from the bed-ſide theſe two days.

My uncle *Toby* laid down his knife and fork, and thruſt his plate from before him, as the landlord gave him the account; and *Trim*, without being ordered, took away without ſaying one word.

Trim! ſaid my uncle *Toby*, I have a project in my head, as it is a bad night, of wrapping myſelf up warm in my roquelaure, and paying a viſit to this poor gentleman. — Your honour's roquelaure, replied the corporal, has not once been had on, ſince the night before your honour received your wound, when we mounted guard in the trenches before the gate of St. *Nicholas;* — and, beſides, it is ſo cold and rainy a night, that what with the roquelaure, and what with the weather, 'twill be enough to give your honour your death, and bring on your honour's torment in your groin. I fear ſo; replied my uncle *Toby*, but I am not at reſt in my mind, *Trim*, ſince the account the landlord has given me. — I wiſh I had not known ſo much of this affair, — added my uncle *Toby*, — or that I had hnown more of it: ——— How ſhall we manage it? Leave it, an't pleaſe your honour, to me, quoth

quoth the corporal; I'll take my hat and ſtick and go to the houſe and reconnoitre, and aćtt accordingly; and I will bring your honour a full account in an hour. — Thou ſhalt go, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, and here's a ſhilling for thee to drink with his ſervant. — I ſhall get it all out of him, ſaid the corporal, ſhutting the door.

It was not till my uncle *Toby* haud knocked the aſhes out of his third pipe, that corporal *Trim* returned from the inn, and gave him the following acconnt:

I deſpaired at firſt, ſaid the corporal, of being able to bring back any intelligence to your honour, about the lieutenant and his ſon; for when I aſked where his ſervant was, from whom I made myſelf ſure of knowing every thing which was proper to be aſked, — I was anſwered, that he had no ſervant with him; — that he had come to the inn with hired horſes, which, upon finding himſelf unable to proceed, (to join, I ſuppoſe, the regiment) he had diſmiſſed the morning after he came. — If I get better, my dear, ſaid he, as he gave his purſe to his ſon to pay the man, — we can hire horſes from hence. — But alas! the poor gentleman wil never get from hence, ſaid the landlady to me, — for I heard the death-watch all night long; and when he dies, the youth, his ſon, will certainly die with him; for he is broken-hearted already.

I was hearing this account, continued the corporal, when the youth came into the kitchen, to order the thin toaſt the landlord ſpoke of; — but I will do it for my father myſelf, ſaid the youth. — Pray let me ſave you the trouble, young gentleman, ſaid I, taking up a fork for the purpoſe, and offering him my chair to ſit down upon by the fire, whilſt I did it. — I believe, Sir, ſaid he, very modeſtly, I can pleaſe him beſt myſelf. — I am ſure, ſaid I, his honour will not like the toaſt the worſe for being toaſted by an old ſoldier. — The youth took hold of my hand, and inſtantly burſt into tears. — Poor youth! ſaid my uncle *Toby*, — he has been bred up from an infant in the army; and the name of a ſoldier, *Trim*, ſounded in his ears like the name of a friend; — I wiſh I had him here.

— I never, in the longeſt march, ſaid the corporal, had ſo great a mind to my dinner, as I had to cry with him for company: — What could be the matter with me, an't pleaſe your honour? Nothing in the world, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle

Toby, blowing his noſe, — but that thou art a good-natured fellow.

When I gave him the toaſt, continued the corporal, I thought it was proper to tell him I was Captain *Shandy's* ſervant, and that your honour, (though a ſtranger) was extremely concerned for his father; — and that if there was any thing in your houſe, or cellar — (And thou might'ſt have added my purſe too, ſaid my uncle *Toby*) — he was heartily welcome to it: — He made a very low bow, (which was meant to your honour) but no anſwer, — for his heart was full — ſo he went up ſtairs with the toaſt; — I warrant you, my dear, ſaid I, as I opened the kitchen-door, your father will be well again. — Mr. *Yorick's* curate was ſmoaking a pipe by the kitchen-fire, — but ſaid not a word good or bad to comfort the youth. — I thought it wrong, added the corporal. — I think ſo too, ſaid my uncle *Toby*.

When the lieutenant had taken his glaſs of ſack and toaſt, he felt himſelf a little revived, and ſent down into the kitchen, to let me know, that in about ten minutes he ſhould be glad if I would ſtep up ſtairs, — I believe, ſaid the landlord, he is going tho ſay his prayers, — for there was a book laid upon the chair by his bed ſide, and as I ſhut the door, I ſaw his ſon take up a cuſhion. —

I thought, ſaid the curate, that you gentlemen of the army, Mr. *Trim*, never ſaid your prayers at all. — I heard the poor gentleman ſay his prayers laſt night, ſaid the landlady, very devoutly, and with my own ears, or I could not have believed it. — Are you ſure of it? replied the curate. — A ſoldier, an't pleaſe your reverence, ſaid I, prays as often (of his own accord) as a parſon; — and when he is fighting for his king, and for his own life, and for his honour too, he has the moſt reaſon to pray to God, of any one in the whole world. — 'Twas well ſaid of thee, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*. — But when a ſoldier, ſaid I, an't pleaſe your reverence, has been ſtanding for twelve hours together in the trenches, up to his knees in cold water, — or engaged, ſaid I, for months together in long and dangerous marches; — harraſſed, perhaps, in his rear to-day; — harraſſing others to-morrow; — detached here; — countermanded there; — reſting this night out upon his arms; beat up in his ſhirt the next; — benumbed in his joints; — perhaps without ſtraw in his tent to kneel on; — ſays his prayers *how* and *when* he can. I believe, ſaid I, — for I was

piqued, quoth the corporal, for the reputation of the army, — I believe an't pleaſe your reverence, ſaid I, that when a ſoldier gets time to pray — he prays as heartily as a parſon, — tho' not with all his fuſs and hypocriſy. — Thou ſhould'ſt not have ſaid that, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, — for God only knows who is a hypocrite, and who is not. —

When I went up, continued the corporal, into the lieutenant's room, which I did not do till the expiration of the ten minutes, — he was lying in his bed with his head raiſed upon his hand, with his elbow upon the pillow, and a clean white cambrick handkerchief beſide it: — The youth was juſt ſtooping down to take up the cuſhion, upon which I ſuppoſed he had been kneeling, — the book was laid upon the bed, — and as he roſe, in taking up the cuſhion with one hand, he reached out his other to take it away at the ſame time. — Let it remain, there, my dear, ſaid the lieutenant.

He did not offer to ſpeak to me, till I had walked up cloſe to his bed-ſide: — If you are Capt. *Shandy's* ſervant, ſaid he, you muſt preſent my thanks to your maſter, with my little boy's thanks along with them, for his courteſy to me; — if he was of *Levens's* — ſaid the lieutenant. I told him your honour was — then, ſaid he, I ſerved three campaigns with him in *Flanders*, and remember him, — but 'tis moſt likely, as I had not the honour of any acquaintance with him, that he knows nothing of me. — You will tell him, however, that the perſon his good nature has laid under obligations to him, is one *Le Fever*, a lieutenant in *Angus's* — but he knows me not, — ſaid he, a ſecond time, muſing; — poſſibly he may my ſtory — added he — pray tell the captain, I was the enſign at *Breda*, whoſe wife was unfortunately killed with a muſket ſhot, as ſhe lay in my arms in my tent. — I remember the ſtory, an't pleaſe your honour, ſaid I, very well. — Do you ſo? ſaid he, wiping his eyes with his handkerchief, — then well may I. — In ſaying this, he drew a little ring out of his boſom, which ſeemed tied with a black ribband about his neck, and kiſs'd it twice — here, *Billy*, ſaid he, — the boy flew acroſs the room to the bed ſide, — and falling down upon his knee, took the ring in his hand, and kiſſed it too, — then kiſſed his father, and ſat down upon the bed and wept.

I wiſh ſaid my uncle *Toby*, with a deep ſigh, — I wiſh, *Trim*, I was aſleep.

Your honour, replies the corporal, is too much concerned; — ſhall I pour your honour out a glaſs of ſack to your pipe? — Do, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*.

I remember, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, ſighing again, the ſtory of the enſign and his wife, with a circumſtance his modeſty omitted; — and particularly well that he, as well as ſhe upon ſome account or other, (I forgot what) was univerſally pitied by the whole regiment; — but finiſh the ſtory thou art upon: — 'Tis finiſhed already, ſaid the corporal, — for I could ſtay no longer, — ſo wiſhed his honour a good night; young *Le Fever* roſe from off the bed, and ſaw me to the bottom of the ſtairs, and as we went down together, told me, they came from *Ireland*, and were on their route to join the regiment in *Flanders*. — But alas! ſaid the corporal, — the lieutenant's laſt day's march is over. — Then what is to become of his poor boy? cried my uncle *Toby*. But *Trim*, when thou madeſt an offer of my ſervices to *Le Fever*, as ſickneſs and travelling are expenſive, and thou knoweſt he was but a poor lieutenant, with a ſon to ſubſiſt as well as himſelf, out of his pay, — why didſt thou not make an offer to him of my purſe; — and when thou offeredſt him whatever was in my houſe, — why didſt thou not offer him my houſe too: — A ſick brother officer ſhould have the beſt quarters, *Trim*, and if we had him with us, in a fortnight or three weeks he might march. — He will never march, an't pleaſe your honour, in this world, ſaid the corporal: — — He will march; ſaid my uncle *Toby* riſing up from the ſide of the bed, with one ſhoe off: — An't pleaſe your honour in this world, ſaid the corporal, he will never march, but to his grave: — He ſhall march, cried my uncle *Toby*, marching the foot which had a ſhoe on, though without advancing an inch, — he ſhall march to his regiment. — He cannot ſtand it, ſaid the corporal: — he ſhall be ſupported, ſaid my uncle *Toby*; — he'll drop at laſt, ſaid the corporal, and what will become of his boy? — He ſhall not drop, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, firmly. — A-well-o'day, — do what we can for him, ſaid *Trim*, maintaining his point, — the poor ſoul will die: — He ſhall not die, by G —, cried my uncle *Toby*.

— The *accuſing ſpirit* which flew up to heaven's chancery with the oath, bluſhed as he gave it in; — and the *recording angel* as he wrote it down, dropp'd a tear upon the word, and blotted it out for ever.

— My

— My uncle *Toby* went to his bureau, — put his purſe into his breeches pocket, and having ordered the corporal to go early in the morning for a phyſician, — he went to bed and fell aſleep. —

My uncle *Toby*, roſe up an hour before his wonted time, and entering the lieutenant's room, without preface or apology, ſat himſelf down upon the chair by the bed-ſide, and independently of all modes and cuſtoms, opened the curtain in the manner an old friend and brother officer would have done it, and aſked him how he did, — how he had reſted in the night, — what was his complaint, — where was his pain, — and what he could to do help him: — and without giving him time to anſwer any of the enquiries, went on and told him of a little plan which he had been concerting with the corporal the night before for him.

— You ſhall go home directly, *Le Fever*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, to my houſe, — and we'll ſend for a doctor to ſee what's the matter, and we'll have an apothecary, — and the corporal ſhall be your nurſe; — and I'll be your ſervant, *Le Fever*.

— The blood and ſpirits of *Le Fever*, which were waxing cold and ſlow within him, and were retreating to their laſt citadel, the heart, — rallied back, — the film forſook his eyes for a moment, — he looked up wiſhfully in my uncle *Toby's* face, — then caſt a look upon his boy, — and that *ligament*, fine as it was, — was never broken. —

Nature inſtantly ebb'd again, — the film returned to its place, — the pulſe flutter'd—ſtopp'd—went on—throb'd—ſtopp'd again—moved—ſtopp'd—ſhall I go on? — No.

— All that is neceſſary to be added is as follows: —

That my uncle *Toby*, with young *le Fever* in his hand, attended the poor lieutenant, as chief mourners, to his grave. —

When my uncle *Toby* had turned every thing into money, and ſettled all accounts betwixt the agent of the regiment and *Le Fever*, and betwixt *Le Fever* and all mankind, — there remained nothing more in my uncle *Toby's* hands, than an old regimental coat and a ſword; ſo that my uncle *Toby* found little or no oppoſition, from the world in taking adminiſtration. The coat my uncle *Toby* gave the corporal; — wear it, *Trim*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, as long as it will hold together, for the ſake of the poor lieutenant — and this, — ſaid my uncle *Toby*, taking up the ſword in his hand, and drawing it out of the ſcabbard as he ſpoke—and this, *Le Fever*, I'll ſave for

for thee, 'tis all the fortune, continued my uncle *Toby*, hanging it upon a crook, and pointing to it, — 'tis all the fortune, my dear *Le Fever*, which God has left thee; but if he has given thee a heart to fight thy way with it in the world, — and thou doeſt it like a man of honour, — 'tis enough for us.

As ſoon as my uncle *Toby* had laid a foundation, and taught him to inſcribe a regular polygon in a circle, he ſent him to a public ſchool, where, excepting *Whitſuntide* and *Chriſtmas*, at which times the corporal was punctually diſpatched for him, — he remained to the ſpring of the year ſeventeen; when the ſtory of the Emperor's ſending his army into *Hungary* againſt the *Turks*, kindling a ſpark of fire in his boſom, he left his *Greek* and *Latin* without leave, and throwing himſelf upon his knees before my uncle *Toby*, begged his father's ſword, and my uncle *Toby's* leave along with it, to go and try his fortnne under *Eugene.* — Twice did my uncle *Toby* forget his wound, and cry out, *Le Fever!* I will go with thee, and thou ſhalt fight beſide me — and twice he laid his hand upon his groin, and hung down his head in ſorrow and diſconſolation.

My uncle *Toby* took down the ſword from the crook, where it had hung untouched ever ſince the lieutenant's death, and delivered it to the corporal to brighten up; — and having detained *Le Fever* a ſingle fortnight to equip him, and contract for his paſſage to *Leghorn*, — he put the ſword in his hand, — if thou art brave, *Le Fever*, ſaid my uncle *Toby*, this will not fail thee, — but fortune, ſaid he, muſing a little, — fortune may — and if ſhe does, — added my uncle *Toby*, come back again to me, *Le Fever*, and we will ſhape thee another courſe.

The greateſt injury could not have oppreſſed the heart of *Le Fever* more than my uncle *Toby's* paternal kindneſs; — he parted from my uncle *Toby*, as the beſt of ſons from the beſt of fathers — both dropped tears — and as my uncle *Toby* gave him his laſt kiſs, he ſlipped ſixty guineas, tied up in an old purſe of his father's, in which was his mother's ring, into his hand, — and bid God bleſs him.

Le Fever got up to the imperial army juſt time enough to try what metal his ſword was made of, at the defeat of the *Turks* before *Belgrade;* but a ſeries of unmerited miſchances had purſued him from that moment, and trod cloſe upon his heels for four years together after: he had withſtood theſe

buffe-

buffetings to the laſt, till ſickneſs overtook him at *Marſeilles*, from whence he wrote my uncle *Toby* word, he had loſt his time, his ſervices, his health, and, in ſhort, every thing but his ſword; — and was waiting for the firſt ſhip to return back to him.

ACCOUNT OF THE CARDINAL XIMENES. *)

The ſingular character of this man, and the extraordinary qualities which marked him out for that office, at ſuch a juncture, merit a particular deſcription. He was deſcended of an honourable, not of a wealthy family; and the circumſtances of his parents, as well as his own inclinations, having determined him to enter into the church, he early obtained benefices of great value, and which placed hin in the way of the higheſt preferment. All theſe, however, he renounced at once; and after undergoing a very ſevere novitiate, aſſumed the habit of St. Francis in a monaſtery of obſervantine friars, one of the moſt rigid orders in the Romiſh church. There he ſoon became eminent for his uncommon auſterity of manners, and for thoſe exceſſes of ſuperſtitious devotion, which are the proper characteriſtics of the monaſtic life. But notwithſtanding theſe extravagancies, to which weak and enthuſiaſtic minds alone are uſually prone, his underſtanding, naturally penetrating and deciſive, retained its full vigour, and acquired him ſuch great authority among his own order, as raiſed him to be their provincial. His reputation for ſanctity ſoon procured him the office of father confeſſor to the queen Iſabella, which he accepted with the utmoſt reluctance. He preſerved in a court the ſame auſterity of manners, which had diſtinguiſhed him in the cloiſter. He continued to make all his journies on foot; he ſubſiſted only upon alms; his acts of mortification were as ſevere as ever; and his pennances as rigorous. Iſabella, pleaſed with her choice, confered on him not long after, the archbiſhoprick of Toledo, which, next to the papacy, is the richeſt dignity in the church of Rome.

This

*) Wm. Robertſon's Hiſtory of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V. London 1759. 4. Baſil. 1788. 4 V. 8.

This honour he declined with a firmneſs, which nothing but the authoritative injunction of the pope was able to overcome. Nor did this height of promotion change his manners. Though obliged to diſplay in public that magnificence which became his ſtation, he himſelf retained his monaſtic ſeverity. Under his pontifical robes he conſtantly wore the coarſe frock of St. Francis, the rents in which he uſed to patch with his own hands. He at no time uſed linen; but was commonly clad in hair-cloth. He ſlept always in his habit, moſt frequently on the ground, or on boards, rarely in a bed. He did not taſte any of the delicatiſes with appeared at his table. But ſatisfied himſelf with that ſimple diet which the rule of his order preſcribed. Notwithſtanding theſe peculiarities, ſo contrary to the manners of the world he poſſeſſed a thorough knowledge of its affairs; and no ſooner was he called by his ſtation, and by the high opinion which Ferdinand and Iſabella entertained of him, to take a principal ſhare in the adminiſtration, than he diſplayed talents for buſineſs, which rendered the fame of his wiſdom equal to that of his ſanctity. Bold and original in all his plans, his political conduct flowed from his real character, and partook both of its virtues and its defects. His extenſive genius ſuggeſted to him ſchemes, vaſt and magnificent. Conſcious of the integrity of his intentions, he purſued theſe with unremitting and undaunted firmneſs. Accuſtomed from his early youth to mortify his own paſſions, he ſhewed little indulgence towards thoſe of other men. Taught by his ſyſtem of religion to check even his moſt innocent deſires, he was the enemy of every thing which he could affix the name of elegance and pleaſure; and, though free from any ſuſpicion of cruelty, he diſcovered in all his commerce with the world a ſevere inflexibility of mind, and auſterity of character, peculiar to the monaſtic profeſſion, and which can ſcarce be conceived in a country where that is unknown.

Account of the famous battle of Pavia in 1525 where King FRANCIS I. was taken prisoner. *)

The imperial generals found the French so strongly entranched, that notwithstanding the powerful motives which urged them on, they hesitated long before they ventured to attack them; but at last the necessities of the besieged, and the murmurs of their own soldiers obliged them to put every thing to hazard. Never did armies engage with greater ardour, or with an higher opinion of the importance of the battle they were going to fight; never were troops more strongly animated with emulation, national antipathy, mutual resentment, and all the passions which inspire obstinate bravery. On the one hand, a gallant young monarch, seconded by a generous nobility, and followed by subjects to whose natural impetuosity, indignation at the opposition they had encountered, added new force, contended for victory and honour. On the other side, troops more completely disciplined, and conducted by generals of greater abilities, fought from necessity, with courage heightened by despair. The Imperialists however, were unable to resist the first efforts of the French valour, and their firmest battalions began to give way. But the fortune of the day was quickly changed. The Swiss in the service of France, unmindful of the reputation of their country for fidelity and martial glory, abandoned their post in a cowardly manner. *Leyva*, with his garrison, sallied out and attacked the rear of the French, during the heat of the action, with such fury as threw it into confusion; and *Pescara* falling on their cavalry, with the Imperial horse, among whom he had prudently intermingled a considerable number of Spanish foot, armed with the heavy muskets then in use, broke this formidable body by an unusual method of attack against which they were wholly unprovided. The rout became universal; and resistance ceased in almost every part, but where the king was in person, who fought now, not for fame or victory, but for safety. Though wounded in several places, and thrown from his horse which was killed under him, *Francis* defended

*) Robertson's History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles V.

defended himſelf on foot with an heroic courage. Many of his braveſt officers gathering round him, endeavouring to ſave his life at the expence of their own, fell at his ſeet. Among theſe was *Bonnivet*, the author of this great calamity, who alone died unlamented. The king exhauſted with fatigue, and ſcarce capable of farther reſiſtance; was left almoſt alone, expoſed to the fury of ſome Spaniſh ſoldiers, ſtrangers to his rank, and enraged at his obſtinacy. At that moment came up *Pomperant*, a French gentleman, who had entered together with *Bourbon* into the Emperor's ſervice, and placing himſelf by the ſide of the monarch againſt whom he had rebelled, aſſiſted in protecting him from the violence of the ſoldiers; at the ſame time beſeeching him to ſurrender to *Bourbon*, who was not far diſtant. Imminent as the danger was which now ſorrounded *Francis*, he rejected with indignation the thoughts of an action which would have afforded ſuch matter of triumph to his traiterous ſubject; and calling for *Lannoy*, who happened likewiſe to be near at hand, gave up his ſword to him; which he, kneeling to kiſs the king's hand, received with profound reſpect; and taking his own ſword from his ſide, preſented it to him, ſaying, that it did not become ſo great a monarch to remain diſarmed in the preſence of one of the Emperor's ſubjects.

Ten thouſand men fell on this day, one of the moſt fatal France had ever ſeen. Among theſe were many noblemen of the higheſt diſtinction, who choſe rather to periſh than to turn their backs with diſhonour. Not a few were taken priſoners, of whom the moſt illuſtrious was *Henry D'Albret*, the unfortunate king of Navarre.

A ſmall body of the rear-guard made its eſcape under the command of the duke *Alenſon;* the feeble garriſon of Milan on the firſt news of the defeat, retired without being purſued, by another road; and in two weeks after the battle, not a Frenchman remained in Italy.

Lannoy, though he treated *Francis* with all the outward marks of honour due to his rank and character, guarded him with the utmoſt attention. He was ſolicitous, not only to prevent any poſſibility of his eſcaping, but afraid that his own troops might ſeize his perſon, and detain it as the beſt ſecurity for the payment of their arrears. In order to provide againſt both theſe dangers, he conducted *Francis*, the day after the battle, to the ſtrong caſtle of Pizzichitone near Cremona, committting him to the cuſtody of Don *Ferdinand Alarcon*, general

general of the Spanish infantry, an officer of great bravery, and of strict honour, but remarkable for that severe and scrupulous vigilance which such a trust required.

Meanwhile *Francis*, who formed a judgment of the Emperor's dispositions by his own, was extremely desirous that *Charles* should be informed of his situation, fondly hoping that from his generosity or sympathy, he would obtain speedy relief. The Imperial generals were no less impatient to give their sovereign an early account of the decisive victory which they had gained, and to receive his instructions with regard to their future conduct. As the most certain and expeditious method of conveying intelligence to Spain, at that season of the year, was by land, *Francis* gave the Commendador *Pennalosa*, who was charged with *Lannoy's* dispatches, a passport to travel through France.

Charles received the account of this signal and unexpected success that had crowned his arms, with a moderation, which if it had been real, would have done him more honour than the greatest victory. Without uttering one word expressive of exultation, or of intemperate joy, he retired immediately into his chapel, and having spent an hour in offering up his thanksgivings to heaven, returned to the presence-chamber, which by that time was filled with grandees and foreign Ambassadors, assembled in order to congratulate him: he accepted of their compliments with a modest deportment; he lamented the misfortune of the captive king, as a striking example of the sad reverse of fortune, to which the most powerful monarchs are subject; he forbad any public rejoicings, as indecent in a war carried on among Christians, reserving them until he should obtain a victory equally illustrious over the Infidels; and seemed to take pleasure in the advantage he had gained, only as it would prove the occasion of restoring peace to Christendom.

Charles, however, had already begun to form schemes in his own mind, which little suited such external appearances. Ambition, not generosity, was the ruling passion in his mind; and the victory at *Pavia* opened such new and unbounded prospects of gratifying it, as assured him with irresistible force: but it being no easy matter to execute the vast designs which he meditated, he thought it necessary, while proper measures were taking for that purpose, to affect the greatest moderation, hoping under that veil to conceal his real intentions from the other princes of Europe.

Meanwhile France was filled with conſternation. The King himſelf had early tranſmitted an account of the rout at *Pavia* in a letter to his mother delivered by *Pennaloſa*, which contained only theſe words, "Madam, all is loſt, except our honour.„ Thoſe who ſurvived, when they arrived from Italy, brought ſuch a melancholy detail of particulars as made all ranks of men ſenſibly feel the greatneſs and extent of the calamity.

After the moſt unfeeling and unprincely treatment of his royal captive, *Charles* at length ſet him at liberty, having firſt made him ſign a rigorous treaty.

By this treaty, *Charles* flattered himſelf that he had not only effectually humbled his rival, but that he had taken ſuch precautions as would for ever prevent his re-attaining any formidable degree of power. The opinion, which the wiſeſt politicians formed concerning it, was very different; they could not perſuade themſelves that *Francis*, after obtaining his liberty, would execute theſe articles againſt which he had ſtruggled ſo long, and to which even amidſt the horrors of captivity he had conſented with ſuch reluctance. Ambition and reſentment, they knew, would conſpire in prompting him to violate the hard conditions, to which he had been conſtrained to ſubmit; nor would arguments and caſuiſtry be wanting to repreſent that which was ſo manifeſtly advantageous, to be neceſſary and juſt. If one part of Francis's conduct had been known, at that time, this opinion might have been founded, not in conjecture, but in certainty. A few hours before he ſigned the treaty, he aſſembled ſuch of his counſellors as were then in Madrid, and having exacted from them a ſolemn oath of ſecrecy, he made a long enumeration in their preſence of all the diſhonourable arts, as well as unprincely rigour, which the Emperor had employed in order to enſnare and intimidate him. For that reaſon, he took a formal proteſt in the hands of notaries, that his conſent to the treaty ſhould be conſidered as an involuntary deed, and be deemed null and void. By this diſingenuous artifice, for which even the treament he had met with was no apology, *Francis* endeavoured to ſatisfy his honour and conſcience in ſigning the treaty, and to provide at the ſame time a pretext on which to break it.

CHA-

CHARACTER OF THE EMPEROR CHARLES V. *)

As *Charles* was the firſt prince of the age in rank and dignity, the part which he acted, whether we conſider the greatneſs, the variety, or the ſucceſs of this undertakings, was the moſt conſpicuous. It is from an attentive obſervation of his conduct, not from the exaggerated praiſes of the Spaniſh hiſtorians, or the undiſtinguiſhing cenſure of the French, that a juſt idea of *Charles's* genius and abilities is to be collected. He poſſeſſed qualities ſo peculiar, as ſtrongly mark his character, and not only diſtinguiſh him from the princes who were his contemporaries, but account for that ſuperiority over them which he ſo long maintained. In forming his ſchemes, he was by nature, as well as by habit, cautions and conſiderate.

Born with talents, which unfolded themſelves ſlowly, and were late in attaining maturity, he was accuſtomed to ponder every ſubject that demanded his conſideration with a careful and deliberate attention. He bent the whole force of his mind towards it, and dwelling upon it with a ſerious application, undiverted by pleaſure, and hardly relaxed by any amuſement, he revolved it, in ſilence, in his own breaſt.

He then communicated the matter to his miniſters, and after hearing their opinions, took his reſolution with a deciſive firmneſs, which ſeldom follows ſuch ſlow conſultations. In conſequence of this, *Charles's* meaſures, inſtead of reſembling the deſultory and irregular ſallies of *Henry VIII.* or *Francis I.* hat the appearance of a conſiſtent ſyſtem, in which all the parts were arranged, the effects were foreſeen, and the accidents were provided for. His promptitude in execution was no leſs remarkable than his patience in deliberation. He conſulted with phlegm, but he acted with vigour; and did not diſcover greater ſagacity in his choice of the meaſures which it was proper to purſue, than fertility of genius in finding out the means for rendering his purſuit of them ſucceſsful. Though he had naturally ſo little of the material turn, that during the moſt ardent and buſtling period of life, he remained in the cabinet inactive, yet when he choſe at length to appear at the head of his army, his mind was ſo formed for vigorous

*) Robertſon's Hiſtory &c.

vigorous exertions in every direction, that he acquired such knowledge in the art of war, and such talents for command, as rendered him equal in reputation and success to the most able generals of the age. But Charles possessed, in the most eminent degree, the science which is of the greatest importance to a monarch, that of knowing men, and of adapting their talents to the various departments which he allotted to them. From the death of *Chievres* to the end of his reign, he employed no general in the field, no minister in the cabinet, no ambassador to a foreign court, no governor of a province, whose abilities were inadequate to the trust reposed in them. Though destitute of that bewitching affability of manners, which gained *Francis* the hearts of all who approached his person, he was no stranger to the virtues which secure fidelity and attachment. He placed unbounded confidence in his generals; he rewarded their services with munificence; he neither envied their fame, nor discovered any jealousy of their power. Almost all the generals who conducted his armies may be placed on a level with those illustrious personages, who have attained the highest eminence of military glory; and his advantages over his rivals are to be ascribed so manifestly to the superior abilities of the commanders whom he set in opposition to them, that this might seem to detract, in some degree, from his own merit, if the talent of discovering and employing such instruments were not the most undoubted proof of a capacity for government.

There were, nevertheless, defects in his political character which must considerably abate the admiration due to his extraordinary talents. *Charles*'s ambition was insatiable, and though there seems to be no foundation for an opinion prevalent in his own age, that he had formed the chimerical project of establishing an universal monarchy in Europe, it is certain that his desire of being distinguished as a conqueror involved him in continual wars, which exhausted and oppressed his subjects, and left him little leisure for giving attention to the interior police and improvement of his kingdoms, the great objects of every prince who makes the happiness of his people the end of his government. *Charles*, at a very early period of life, having added the Imperial crown to the kingdoms of Spain, and to the hereditary dominions of the houses of Austria and Burgundy, this opened to him such a vast field of enterprize, and engaged him in schemes so complicated as well as arduous, that feeling his power to be unequal to the execution of these, he had often recourse to low, artifices unbecoming

unbecoming his ſuperior talents, and ſometimes ventured on ſuch deviations from integrity as were diſhonourable in a great prince. His inſidious and fraudulent policy appeared more conſpicuous, and was rendered more odious, by a compariſon with the open and undeſigning character of his contemporaries Francis I. and Henry VIII. This difference, though occaſioned chiefly by the diverſity of their tempers, muſt be aſcribed, in ſome degree to ſuch an oppoſition in the principles of their political conduct as affords ſome excuſe for this defect in *Charles*'s behaviour, though it cannot ſerve as a juſtification of it. *Francis* and *Henry* ſeldom acted but from the impulſe of their paſſions, and ruſhed headlong towards the object in view. *Charles*'s meaſures being the reſult of cool reflection, were diſpoſed into a regular ſyſtem, and carried on upon a concerted plan. Perſons, who act in the former manner naturally purſue the end in view without aſſuming any diſguiſe, or diſplaying much addreſs. Such as hold the latter courſe, are apt, in forming as well as in executing their deſigns, to employ ſuch refinements, as always lead to artifice in conduct, and often degenerate into deceit.

A SATIRICAL DESCRIPTION OF LONDON AND BATH. *)

In *London*, I am pent up in frowzy lodgings, where there is not room enough to ſwing a cat; and I breathe the ſteams of endleſs putrefaction; and theſe would, undoubtedly, produce a peſtilence, if they were not qualified by the groſs acid of ſea-coal, which is itſelf a pernicious nuiſance to lungs of any delicacy of texture: but even this boaſted corrector cannot prevent thoſe languid, ſallow looks, that diſtinguiſh the inhabitants of London from thoſe ruddy ſwains that lead a country-life — I go to bed after midnight, jaded and reſtleſs from the diſſipations of the day — I ſtart every hour from my ſleep, at the horrid noiſe of the watchman bawling the hour through every ſtreet, and thundering at every door; a ſet of uſeleſs fellows, who ſerve no nother purpoſe but

*) The Expedition of Humphry Clinker by the Author of Roderic Random, (*Dr. Smollet*) Lond. 1771. 3 Vol. 12. Altenb. 2 Vol. 15.

but that of diſturbing the repoſe of the inhabitants; and by five o'clock I ſtart out of bed, in conſequence of the ſtill more dreadful alarm made by the country carts, and noiſy ruſtics bellowing green peaſe under my window. If I would drink water, I muſt quaff the mawkiſh contents of an open aqueduct, expoſed to all manner of defilement; or ſwallow that which comes from the river Thames, impregnated with all the filth of London and Weſtminſter. — Mud and mire are the leaſt offenſive parts of the concrete, which is compoſed of all the drugs, minerals, and poiſons, uſed in mechanics and manufactures, enriched with the putrefying carcaſes of beaſts and men; and mixed with the ſcourings of all the waſh-tubs, kennels, and common ſewers, within the bills of Mortality.

This is the agreeable potation, extolled by the Londoners, as the fineſt water in the univerſe. — As to the intoxicating potion, ſold for wine, it is a vile, unpalatable, and pernicious ſophiſtication, balderdaſhed with cyder, corn-ſpirit, and the juice of ſloes. In an action at law, laid againſt a carman for having ſtaved a caſk of port, it appeared from the evidence of the cooper, that there were not above five gallons of real wine in the whole pipe, which held above a hundred, and even that had been brewed and adulterated by the merchant at Oporto. The bread I eat in London, is a deleterious paſte, mixed up with chalk, allum, and bone aſhes; inſipid to the taſte, and deſtructive to the conſtitution. The good people are not ignorant of this adulteratien; but they prefer it to wholeſome bread, becauſe whiter than the mean of corn: it is thus they ſacrifice their taſte and their health, and the lives of their tender infants, to a moſt abſurd gratification of a miſ-judging eye; and the miller, or the baker, is obliged to poiſon them and their families, in order to live by his profeſſion. The ſame monſtrous depravity appears in their veal, which is bleached by repeated bleedings. and other villainous arts, till there is not a drop of juice left in the body, and the poor animal is paralytic before it dies; ſo void of all taſte, nouriſhment, and ſavour, that a man might dine as comfortably on a white fricaſee of kidſkin gloves, or chip-hats from Leghorn.

As they have diſcharged the natural colour from their bread, their butchersmeat, and poultry, their cutlets, ragouts, fricaſees, and ſauces of all kinds; ſo they inſiſt upon having the complexion of their pot-herbs mended, even at the hazard of

of their lives. Perhaps, you will hardly believe they can be ſo mad as to boil their greens with braſs half-pence, in order to improve their colour; and yet nothing is more true — Indeed, without this improvement in the colour, they have no perſonal merit. They are produced in an artificial ſoil, and taſte of nothing but the dunghills, from whence they ſpring. My cabbage, cauliflowers, and aſparagus in the country, are as much ſuperior in flavour to thoſe that are ſold in Covent-garden, as my heath mutton is to that of St. James's market; which, in fact, is neither lamb nor mutton, but ſomething betwixt the two, gorged in the rank fens of Lincoln and Eſſex, pale, coarſe, and frowzy — As for the pork, it is the fleſh of an abominable carnivorous animal, fed with horſe-fleſh and diſtillers grains; and the poultry is all rotten, in conſequence of a fever, occaſioned by the infamous practice of ſewing up the gut, that they may be the ſooner fattened in coops, in conſequence of this cruel retention.

On the fiſh, I need ſay nothing in this hot weather, but that it comes ſixty, ſeventy, fourſcore, and a hundred miles by land carriage: a circumſtance ſufficient, without auy comment, to turn a Dutchman's ſtomach, even if his noſe was not ſaluted in every alley with the ſweet flavour of *freſh* mackarel, ſelling by retail. — This is not the ſeaſon for oyſters; nevertheleſs, it may not be amiſs to mention, that the right Colcheſter are kept in ſlimepits, occaſionally overflowed by the ſea; and that the green colour, ſo much admired by the voluptuaries of this metropolis, is occaſioned by the vitriolic ſcum, which riſes on the ſurface of the ſtagnant and ſtinking water. Our rabits are bred and fed in the poulterer's cellar, where they have neither air nor exerciſe, conſequently they muſt be firm in fleſh, and delicious in flavour; and there is no game to be had for love or money.

It muſt be owned, that Covent-garden affords ſome good fruit; which, however, is always engroſſed by a few individuals of over-grown fortune, at an exorbitant price; ſo that little elſe than the refuſe of the market falls to the ſhare of the community; and that is diſtributed by ſuch filthy hands, as I cannot look at without loathing. It was but yeſterday that I ſaw a dirty barrow-bunter in the ſtreet, cleaning her fruit with her own ſpittle; and, who knows but ſome fine lady

of St. James's pariſh might admit into her delicate mouth thoſe very cherries, which had been rolled and moiſtened between the chops of a St. Giles's huckſter — I need not dwell upon the pallid, contaminated maſh, which they call ſtrawberries, ſoiled and toſſed by greaſy paws through twenty baſkets cruſted with dirt; and then preſented with the worſt milk, thickened with the worſt flour into a bad likeneſs of cream: but the milk itſelf ſhould not paſs unanalyſed, the produce of faded cabbage-leaves and ſour draff, lowered with hot water, frothed with bruiſed ſnails, carried thro' the ſtreets in open pails, expoſed to foul rinſings, diſcharged from doors and windows, over-flowings from mudcarts, ſpatterings from coach-wheels, dirt and traſh chucked into it by roguiſh boys for the joke's ſake, &c.

I ſhall conclude this catalogue of London dainties, with the table-beer, guiltleſs of hops and malt, vapid and nauſeous: much fitter to facilitate the operation of a vomit, than to quench thirſt and promote digeſtion; the tallowy rancid maſs, called butter, manufactured with candle greaſe and kitchen-ſtuff; and their freſh eggs imported from France and Scotland — Now, all theſe enormities might be remedied with a very little attention of the police, or civil regulation; but the wiſe patriots of London have taken it into their heads, that all regulation is inconſiſtent with liberty; and that every man ought to live in his own way, without reſtraint — Nay, as there is not ſenſe enough left among them to be diſcompoſed by the nuiſances I have mentioned, they may, for aught I care, wallow in the mire of their own pollution.

Bath is ſo much altered, that I can ſcarce believe it is the ſame place that I frequented about thirty years ago. Methinks I hear you ſay, "Altered it is, without doubt; but then it is altered for the better; a truth which, perhaps, you would own without heſitation, if you yourſelf was not altered for the worſe.„ The reflexion may, for aught I know, be juſt. The inconveniencies which I overlooked in the high day of health, will naturally ſtrike with exaggerated impreſſion on the irritable nerves of on invalid, ſurpriſed by premature old age, and ſhattered with long ſuffering — But, I believe, you will not deny, that this place, which nature and providence ſeemed to have intended as a reſource from diſtemper and diſquiet, is become the very center of racket and diſſiptation

ſipation. Inſtead of that peace, tranquility and eaſe, ſo neceſſary to thoſe who labour under health, weak nerves, and irregular ſpirits; here we have nothing but noiſe, tumult, and hurry; with the fatigue and ſlavery of maintaining a ceremonial, more ſtiff, formal, and oppreſſive, than the etiquette of a German elector. A national hoſpital it may be; but one would imagine, that none but lunatics are admitted; and, truly, I will give you leave to call me ſo, if I ſtay much longer at Bath. — But I ſhall take another opportunity to explain my ſentiments at greater lenght on this ſubject — I was impatient to ſee the boaſted improvements in architecture, for which the upper parts of the town have been ſo much celebrated, and t'other day I made a circuit of all the new buildings. The ſquare, though irregular, is, on the whole, pretty well laid out, ſpacious, open, and airy; and, in my opinion, by far the moſt wholeſome and agreeable ſituation in Bath, eſpecially the upper ſide of it; but the avenues to it are mean, dirty, dangerous, and indirect. Its communication with the baths, is through the yard of an inn, where the poor trembling valetudinarian is carried in a chair, betwixt the heels of a double row of horſes, wincing under the curry-combs of grooms and poſtilions, over and above the hazard of being obſtructed, or overturned by the carriages which are continually making their exit or their entrance — I ſuppoſe after ſome chairmen ſhall have been maimed, and a few lives loſt by thoſe accidents, the corporation will think, in earneſt, about providing a more ſafe and commodious paſſage. The Circus is a pretty bauble, contrived for ſhew, and looks like Veſpaſian's amphitheatre turned outſide in. If we conſider it in point of magnificence, the great number of ſmall doors belonging to the ſeparate houſes, the inconſiderable height of the different orders, the affected ornaments of the architrave, which are both childiſh and miſplaced, and the areas projecting into the ſtreet, ſurrounded with iron rails, deſtroy a good part of its effect upon the eye; and, perhaps, we ſhall find it ſtill more defective, if we view it in the light of convenience. The figure of each ſeparate dwelling-houſe, being the ſegment of a circle, muſt ſpoil the ſymmetry of the rooms, by contracting them towards the ſtreet windows, and leaving a larger ſweep in the ſpace behind. If, inſtead of the areas and iron rails, which ſeem to be of very little uſe, there had been a corridore with arcades all round, as in Covent-Garden, the appearance of the whole would have been more magnificent

and ſtriking; thoſe arcades would have afforded an agreeable covered walk, and ſheltered the poor chairmen and their carriages from the rain, which is here almoſt perpetual. At preſent, the chairs ſtand ſoaking in the open ſtreet, from morning to night, till they become ſo many boxes of wet leather, for the benefit of the guty and rheumatic, who are tranſported in them from place to place. Indeed, this is a ſhocking inconvenience that extends over the whole city; and, I am perſuaded, it produces infinite miſchief to the delicate and infirm; even the cloſe chairs, contrived for the ſick, by ſtanding in the open air, have their frize linings impregnated, like ſo many ſpunges, with the moiſture of the atmoſphere, and thoſe caſes of cold vapour muſt give a charming check to the perſpiration of a patient, piping hot from the Bath, with all his pores wide open.

But, to return to the Circus; it is inconvenient from its ſituation, at ſo great a diſtance from all the markets, baths, and places of public entertainment. The only entrance to it, through Gay-ſtreet, is ſo difficult, ſteep, and ſlippery, that, in wet weather, it muſt be exceedingly dangerous, both for thoſe that ride in carriages, and thoſe that walk a-foot; and when the ſtreet is covered with ſnow, as it was for fifteen days ſucceſſively this very winter, I don't ſee how any individual could go either up or down, without the moſt imminent hazard of broken bones. In blowing weather, I am told, moſt of the houſes in this hill are ſmothered with ſmoke, forced down the chimneys, by the guſts of wind reverberated from the hill behind, which (I apprehend likewiſe) muſt render the atmoſphere here more humid and unwholeſome than it is in the ſquare below; for the clouds, formed by the conſtant evaporation from the baths and river in the bottom, will, in their aſcent this way, be firſt attracted and detained by the hill that riſes cloſe behind the Circus, and load the air with a perpetual ſucceſſion of vapours: this point, however, may be eaſily aſcertained by means of an hygrometer, or a paper of ſalt of tartar expoſed to the action of the atmoſphere. The ſame artiſt, who planned the Circus, has likewiſe projected a Creſcent; when that is finiſhed, we ſhall probably have a ſtar; and thoſe who are living thirty years hence, may, perhaps, ſee all the ſigns of the Zodiac exhibited in architecture at Bath. Theſe, however fantaſtical, are ſtill deſigns that denote ſome ingenuity and knowledge in the architect; but the rage of building has laid hold on ſuch a number of

adventurers

adventurers, that one sees new houses starting up in every out-let and every corner of Bath; contrived without judgment, executed without solidity, and stuck together, with so little regard to plan and propriety, that de different lines of the new rows and buildings interfere with, and intersect one another in every different angle of conjunction. They look like the wreck of streets and squares disjointed by an earthquake, which hath broken the ground into a variety of holes and hillocks; or, as if some Gothic devil had stuffed them altogether in a bag, and left them to stand higgledy piggledy, just as chance directed. What sort of a monster Bath will become in a few years, with those growing excrescences, may be easily conceived: but the want of beauty and proportion is not the worst effect of these new mansions; they are built so slight, with the soft crumbling stone found in this neighbourhood, that I should never sleep quietly in one of them, when it blowed (as the sailors say) a capful of wind; and, I am persuaded, that my hind, Roger Williams, or any man of equal strenght, would be able to push his foot through the strongest part of their walls, without any great exertion of his muscles. All these absurdities arise from the general tide of luxury, which hath overspread the nation, and swept away all, even the very dregs of the people. Every upstart of fortune, harnessed in the trappings of the mode, presents himself at Bath, as in the very focus of observations — Clerks and factors from the East Indies, loaded with the spoil of plundered provinces; planters, negrodrivers, aud hucksters, from our American plantations, enriched they know not how; agents, commissaries, and contractors who, have fattened, in two successive wars, on the blood of the nation; usurers, brokers, and jobbers of every kind; men of low birth, and no breeding, have found themselves suddenly translated into a state of affluence, unknown to former ages; and no wonder that their brains should be intoxicated with pride, vanity, and presumption. Knowing no other criterion of greatness, but the obstination of wealth, they discharge their affluence without taste or conduct, through every channel of the most absurd extravagance; aud all of them hurry to Bath, because here, without any further qualification, they can mingle with the princes and nobles of the land. Even the wives and daughters of low tradesmen, who, like shovel-nosed sharks, prey upon the blubber of those uncouth whales of fortune, are infected with the same rage of displaying

their

their importance; and the flighteft indifpofition ferves them for a pretext to infift upon being conveyed to Bath, where they may hobble country dances and cotillons, with 'fquires, counfellors, and clergy. Thefe delicate creatures from Bedfordbury, Crutched-Friars, and Botolph lane, cannot breathe in the grofs air of the Lower Town, or conform to the vulgar rules of a common lodging-houfe; the hufband, therefore, muft provide an entire houfe, or elegant apartments in the new buildings. Such is the compofition of what is called the fafhionable company at Bath; where a very inconfiderable proportion of genteel people are loft in a mob of impudent plebeians, who have neither underftanding nor judgment, nor the leaft idea of propriety and decorum; and feem to enjoy nothing fo much as an opportunity of infulting their betters.

Thus the number of people, and the number of houfes continue to increafe; and this will ever be the cafe, till the ftreams that fwell this irrefiftible torrent of folly and extravagance, fhall either be exhaufted, or turned into other channels, by incidents and events which I do not pretend to forefee. This, I own, is a fubject on which I cannot write with any degree of patience; for the mob is a monfter I never could abide, either in his head, tail, midriff, or members: I deteft the whole of it, as a mafs of ignorance, prefumption, malice, and brutality; and, in this term of reprobation, I include, without refpect of rank, ftation, or quality, all thofe of both fexes, who affect its manners, and court its fociety."

A CONCISE VIEW OF THE CLIMATE TRADE AND SOIL OF BARBADOS. *)

Nature hath been bountiful to fortify the coaft of Barbados and rendering the great Eaft part of that Island inacceffible to fhips of fifty tons and upwards. An extenfive reef of rocks runs from the fouth point easterly to the northward. The other part of the coaft the inhabitants have at a very great expence fortified by erecting forts and batteries within gunfhot of each other: the repairs and maintenance of which amount,

*) A fhort Hiftory of Barbados. Lond. 1768. 8.

amount, to a great charge: an expence ſo heavy to the country, that it is to be hoped the Government of Great Britain will ſome time or other by their aſſiſtance alleviate.

The Plantations of Barbados oppreſſed by taxes, impoveriſhed by miſmanagement and loaded by the great and neceſſary expences of their management, yield not now the profit they formerly afforded, nothwithſtanding the high eſtimation Europeans may ſet upon Weſt-India eſtates, yet it is an indiſputable fact, that the landed intereſt of Barbados (that is throughout the whole Iſland) does not clear communibus annis four per cent; eſtimating the principal at what land uſually ſells for: the deſtruction of the woods of that Iſland, though it renders the country more healthful, hath decreaſed the quantity of rain and hath been thereby detrimental to the planters. The ſoil of Barbados is in general fruitful, but very different in ſeveral parts of the Iſland; and frequently in the ſame eſtate ſome ſpots afford a heavy clay ſoil, other a light ſand; ſome a dark heavy, others a light red earth: ſome parts wet and ſwampy, others dry and gravelly: but the land, almoſt every where for the production of ſugar, requires rich manure; the preparation of which ſhews the ſkill of the planter, as ſome parts of the Iſland require a light, others a heavy manure; and ſometimes both in the ſame eſtate. The manufacture of ſugar is ingenious as well as uſeful. It is attended with great labour and expence, and requires ſkill and induſtry to perfect it. It was very early introduced into this colony.

The trade of Barbados is yet flouriſhing and conſiderable, notwithſtanding the diſcouragements given to it by taxes, by duties, by the acceſſion of the large Iſland of Jamaica, by the conqueſt of Grenada, by the acquiſition of the late neutral Iſlands, by granting a free port to Dominique, by the diſtillation of ſpirits upon the continent of America, by the want of a proper ſtandard or regulation of the value of gold throughout the Weſt-India Iſlands; and laſtly, by the clandeſtine trade, which the Dutch of St. Euſtatia have formerly been famed for.

The annual internal expence of Barbados amounts to ſixteen thouſand pounds, beſides the conſiderable duties paid to the mother country. Bridgetown the metropolis of that Iſland before the two deſtructive fires in 1766 conſiſted of about fifteen hundred dwelling-houſes and ſtores, chiefly built of brick and ſtone and which were in general ſpacious, and elegantly decent: the rents of the houſes amounted to about

forty

forty thouſand pounds per annum. There are in that Iſland three other towns of ſmaller note, called Oſtin's, St. Iames's and Speight's

THE BROTHERS: A COMEDY.

Act. IV. Scene III-VII. *)

Belfield junior. Sophia.

Belfield junior.

Madam, madam, will you not vouchſafe to give me a hearing?

Sophia. Unleſs you cou'd recall an act, no earthly power can cancel, all attempt at explanation is vain.

Belfield junior. Yet before we part for ever, obſtinate, inexorable Sophia, tell me what is my offence.

Sophia. Anſwer yourſelf that queſtion, Mr. Belfield; conſult your own heart, conſult your Violetta.

Belfield junior. Now, on my life, ſhe's meanly jealous of Violetta: that grateful woman has been warm in her commendations of me, and her diſtemper'd fancy turns that candour into criminality.

Sophia. Hah! he ſeems confounded! guilty beyond all doubt.

Belfield junior. By Heaven I'll no longer be the dupe to theſe bad humours: Lucy Waters, Violetta, every woman ſhe ſees or hears, alarms her jealouſy, overthrows my hopes, and rouſes every paſſion into fury. Well, Madam, at length I ſee what you allude to; I ſhall follow your advice, and conſult my Violetta; nay, more, conſult my happineſs; for with her, at leaſt, I ſhall find repoſe; with you, I plainly ſee, there can be none.

Sophia. 'Tis very well, Sir; the only favour you can now grant me, is never to let me ſee you again; for after what has paſs'd between us, every time you intrude into my company, you will commit an inſult upon good breeding and humanity.

Belfield junior. Madam, I'll take care to give you no further offence. (*Exit.*

Sophia. Oh, my poor heart will break!

Sophia.

*) London. 1771. 8.

Sophia. Sir Benjamin Dove.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Hey-day, Sophia, what's the matter? What ails my child? Who has offended you? Do not I ſee the younger Belfield part from you juſt now?

Sophia. O, Sir! if you have any love for me, don't name that baſe treacherous wretch to me any more. *Exit.*

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my word, I am young Mr. Belfield's moſt obſequious ſervant: a very notable confuſion truly has he been pleaſed to make in my family. Lady Dove raves; Sophia cries; my wife calls him a ſaucy impudent fellow, my daughter ſay's he's a baſe treacherous wretch; from all which I am to conclude, that he has ſpoke too plain truths to the one, and told too many lies to the other; one lady is irritated becauſe he has refus'd favours; the other, perhaps, is afflicted becauſe he has obtain'd 'em. Lady Dove has peremptorily inſiſted upon my giving him a challenge; but, to ſay the truth, I had no great ſtomach to the buſineſs, till this freſh provocation: I perceive now, I am growing into a moſt unaccountable rage; 'tis ſomething ſo different from what I ever felt before, that, for what I know, it may be courage and I miſtake it for anger; I never did quarrel with any man, and hitherto no man ever quarrel'd with me: egad, if once I break the ice, it ſhan't ſtop here: if young Belfield does n't prove me a coward, Lady Dove ſhall ſee that I am a man of ſpirit. — Sure I ſee my gentleman coming hither again.

(*Steps aſide.*

Enter Belfield junior.

Belfield junior. What meanneſs, what infatuation poſſeſſes me, that I ſhould reſolve to throw myſelf once more in her way! but ſhe's gone, and yet I may eſcape with credit.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Ay, there he is, ſure enough: by the maſs I don't like him: I'll liſten a while, and diſcover what ſort of a humour he is in.

Belfield junior. I am aſham'd of this weakneſs: I am determin'd to aſſume a proper ſpirit, and act as becomes a man upon this occaſion.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my ſoul I'm very ſorry for it.

Belfield junior. Now am I ſo diſtracted between love, rage, and diſappointment, that I could find in my heart to ſacrifice her, myſelf, and all mankind.

Sir

Sir Benjamin Dove. Lord ha' mercy upon us, I'd better ſteal off and leave him to himſelf.

Belfield junior. And yet, perhaps, all this may proceed from an exceſs of fondneſs in my Sophia.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Upon my word you are bleſt with a moſt happy aſſurance.

Belfield junior. Something may have dropp'd from Violetta to alarm her jealouſy; and, working upon the exquiſite ſenſibility of her innocent mind, may have brought my ſincerity into queſtion.

Sir Benjamin Dove. I don't underſtand a word of all this.

Belfield junior. Now cou'd I fall at her feet for pardon, tho' I know not in what I have offended; I have not the heart to move. Fie upon it! What an errant coward has love made me!

Sir Benjamin Dove. A coward, does he ſay? I am heartily rejoic'd to hear it: If I muſt needs come to action, pray Heaven it be with a coward! I'll even take him while he is in the humour, for fear he ſhou'd recover his courage, and I loſe mine. — So, Sir, your humble ſervant, Mr. Belfield! I'm glad I have found you, Sir.

Befield junior. Sir Benjamin, your moſt obedient. Pray what are your commands now you have found me?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Hold! hold! don't come any nearer: don't you ſee I am in a moſt prodigious paſſion? Fire and fury, what's the reaſon you have made all this diſorder in my houſe? my daughter in tears; my wife in fits; every thing in an upoar; and all your doing. Do you think I'll put up with this treatment? If you ſuppoſe you have a coward to deal with, you'll find yourſelf miſtaken; greatly miſtaken, let me tell you, Sir! Mercy upon me, what a paſſion I am in! In ſhort, Mr. Belfield, the honour of my houſe is concern'd, and I muſt, and will, have ſatisfaction,— I think this is pretty well to ſet in with; I'm horribly out of breath; I ſweat at every pore. What great fatigues do men of courage undergo!

Belfied junior. Look'e, Sir Benjamin, I don't rightly comprehend what you wou'd be at; but, if you think I have injur'd you, few words are beſt; diſputes between men of honour are ſoon adjuſted: I'm at your ſervice, in any way you think fit.

Sir Benjamin Dove. How you fly out now! Is that giving me the ſatisfaction I require? I am the perſon injur'd in this matter,

matter, and, as ſuch, have a right to be in a paſſion; but I ſee neither right nor reaſon why you, who have done the wrong, ſhou'd be as angry as I, who have receiv'd it.

Belfield junior. I ſuſpect I have totally miſtaken this honeſt gentleman; he only wants to build ſome reputation with his wife upon this rencounter, and 'twould be inhuman not to gratify him.

Sir Benjamin Dove. What ſhall I do now? Egad I ſeem to have pos'd him: this plaguy ſword ſticks ſo hard in the ſcabbard — Well, come forth rapier, 'tis but one thruſt; and what ſhou'd a man fear that has Lady Dove for his wife?

Belfield junior. Hey-day! Is the man mad? Put up your ſword, Sir Benjamin; put it up, and don't expoſe yourſelf in this manner.

Sir Benjamin Dove. You ſhall excuſe me, Sir; I have had ſome difficulty in drawing it, and am determin'd now to try what metal it's made of. So come on, Sir.

Belfield junior. Really this is too ridiculous; I tell you, Sir Benjamin, I am in no humour for theſe follies. I've done no wrong to you or yours: on the contrary, great wrong has been done to me; but I have no quarrel with you, ſo, pray, put up your ſword.

Sir Benjamin Dove. And I tell you, Mr. Belfield, 'tis in vain to excuſe yourſelf. — The leſs readineſs you ſhew, ſo much the more reſolution I feel.

Belfield junior. Well, Sir Knight, if ſuch is your humour, I won't ſpoil your longing. So have at you.

Enter Lady Dove.

Lady Dove. Ah! (*Shrieks.*)

Belfield junior. Hold, hold, Sir Benjamin, I never fight in ladies company. Why, I proteſt you are a perfect Amadis de Gaul; a Don Quixote in heroiſm; and the preſence of this your Dulcinea renders you invincible.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Oh! my Lady, is it you? don't be alarm'd, my dear; 'tis all over: a ſmall fracas between this gentleman and myſelf; that's all; don't be under any ſurprice; I believe the gentleman has had enough; I belive he is perfectly ſatisfied with my behaviour, and I perſuade myſelf you will have no cauſe for the future to complain of his. Mr. Belfield, this is Lady Dove.

M *Belfield*

Belfield junior. Madam, to a generous enemy, 'tis mean to deny juſtice, or with-hold applauſe. You are happy in the moſt valiant of defenders; gentle as you may find him in the tender paſſions, to a man, Madam, he acquits himſelf like a man. Sir Benjamin Dove, in juſtice to yonr merit, I am ready to make any ſubmiſſion to this lady you ſhall pleaſe to impoſe. — If you ſuffer her to bully you after this, you deſerve to be henpeck'd all the days of your life.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Say no more, my dear Bob; I ſhall love you for this the longeſt hour I have to live.

Belfield junior. If I have done you any ſervice, promiſe me only one hour's converſation with your lovely daughter, and make what uſe of me you pleaſe.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Here's my hand, you ſhall have it; leave us. (*Exit.* Belfield junior.

Lady Dove. What am I to think of all this? It can't well be a contrivance; and yet 'tis ſtrange that you little animal ſhou'd have the aſſurance to face a man, and be ſo baſhful at a rencounter with a woman.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well, Lady Dove, what are you muſing upon? you ſee you are obey'd, the honour of your family is vindicated: ſlow to enter into the affairs; being once engag'd, I pertinaciouſly conduct them to an iſſue.

Lady Dove. Sir Benjamin, — I — I —

Sir Benjamin Dove. Here, Jonathan, do you hear, ſet my things ready in the library; make haſte.

Lady Dove. I ſay, Sir Benjamin, I think —

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well, let's hear what it is you think.

Lady Dove. Bleſs us all, why you ſnap one up ſo — I ſay, I think, my dear, you have acquitted yourſelf tolerably well, and I am perfectly ſatisfied.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Humph! you think I have done tolerably well, I think ſo too; do you apprehend me? Tolerably! for this buſineſs that you think tolerably well, done, is but half concluded, let me tell you: nay, what ſome wou'd call the tougheſt part of the undertaking remains unfiniſh'd; but, I dare ſay, with your concurrence, I ſhall find it eaſy enough.

Lady Dove. What is it you mean to do with my concurrence; what mighty project does your wiſe brain teem with?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Nay, now I reflect on't again, I don't think there'll be any need of your concurrence; for, nolens or volens, I'm determin'd it ſhall be done. In ſhort, this it

is,

is, I am unalterably resolv'd from this time forward, Lady Dove, to be sole and absolute in this house, master of my own servants, father to my own child, and sovereign lord and governor, Madam, over my own wife.

Lady Dove. You are?

Sir Benjamin Dove. I am. Gods! what a pitiful contemptible figure does a man make under petticoat-government. Perish he that's mean enough to stoop to such indignities! I am determin'd to be free. — (Paterson *enters and whispers* Lady Dove.) — Hah! how's this, Mr. Paterson? What liberties are these you take with my wife, and before my face? No more of these freedoms, I beseech you, Sir, as you expect to answer it to a husband, who will have no secrets whisper'd to his wife, to which he is not privy; nor any appointments made, in which he is not a party.

Paterson. Hey-day! what a change of government is here! Egad, I'm very glad on't — I've no notion of a female administration. (*Exit.*

Lady Dove. What insolence is this, Sir Benjamin; what ribaldry do you shock my ears with? Let me pass, Sir, I'll stay no longer in the same room with you.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Not in the same room, nor under the same roof, shall you long abide, unless you reform your manners; however, for the present, you must be content to stay where you are.

Lady Dove. What, Sir, will you imprison me in my own house? I'm sick: I'm ill; I'm suffocated; I want air; I must and will walk into the garden.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Then, Madam, you must find some better weapon than your fan to parry my sword with: this pass I defend: what, do'st think, after having encounter'd a man, I shall turn my back upon a woman! No, Madam, I have ventured my life to defend your honour; 'twou'd be hard if I wanted spirit to protect my own.

Lady Dove. You monster, wou'd you draw your sword upon a woman?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Unless it has been your pleasure to make me a monster, Madam, I am none.

Lady Dove. Would you murder me, you inhuman brute? Would you murder your poor fond defenceless wife?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Nor tears, nor threats, neither scolding, nor soothing, shall shake me from my purpose: your yoke, Lady Dove, has laid too heavy upon my shoulders; I

can ſupport it no longer: to-morrow, Madam, you leave this houſe.

Lady Dove. Will you break my heart, you tyrant? Will you turn me out of doors to ſtarve, you barbarous man?

Sir Benjamin Dove. Oh! never fear; you will fare to the full as well as you did in your firſt huſband's time; in your poor, dear, dead Mr. Searcher's time. You told me once you priz'd the paltry grey-hound that hung at his button-hole, more than all the jewels my folly had laviſh'd upon you. I take you at your word; you ſhall have your bawble, and I will take back all mine; they'll be of no uſe to you hereafter.

Lady Dove. O! Sir Benjamin, Sir Benjamin, for mercy's ſake, turn me not out of your doors! I will be obedient, gentle, and complying, for the future; don't ſhame me; on my knees, I beſeech you don't.

Enter Belfield ſenior.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Mr. Belfield, I am heartily glad to ſee you; don't go back, Sir; you catch us indeed a little unawares; but theſe ſituations are not uncommon in well-ordered families; rewards and puniſhments are the life of government, and the authority of a huſband muſt be upheld.

Belfield ſenior. I confeſs, Sir Benjamin, I was greatly ſurpriz'd at finding Lady Dove in that attitude: but I never pry into family ſecrets; I had much rather ſuppoſe your Lady was on her knees to intercede with you in my behalf, than be told ſhe was reduc'd to that humble poſture for any reaſon that affects herſelf.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Sir, you are free to ſuppoſe what you pleaſe for Lady Dove; I'm willing to ſpare you that trouble on my account; and therefore, I tell you plainly, if you will ſign and ſeal your articles this night, to-morrow morning Sophia ſhall be yours: I'm reſolv'd that the ſelf-ſame day, which conſecrates the redemption of my liberty, ſhall confirm the ſurrender of yours.

Lady Dove. O! Mr. Belfield, I beſeech you, intercede with this dear cruel man in my behalf; wou'd you believe that he harbours a deſign of expelling me out of his houſe, on the very day too when he purpoſes celebrating the nuptials of his daughter?

Belfield Senior. Come, Sir Benjamin, I muſt ſpeak to you now as a friend in the neareſt connection; I beg you will not damp our happineſs with ſo melancholy an event: I will venture to pledge myſelf for her ladyſhip.

Sir Benjamin Dove. Well for your ſake perhaps I may prolong her departure for one day; but I'm determin'd, if ſhe does ſtay to-morrow, ſhe ſhall ſet the firſt diſh upon the table; if 'tis only to ſhew the company what a refractory wife in the hands of a man of ſpirit may be brought to ſubmit to. Our wives, Mr. Belfield, may teaze us and vex us, and ſtill eſcape with impunity; but if once they thoroughly provoke us, the charm breaks, and they ere loſt for ever. (*Exeunt.*

Scheme for a new Memorandum-Book for the uſe of the Ladies, with a ſpecimen. *)

Among the many Pocket-Companions, New Memorandum-Books, Gentleman and Tradeſman's Daily Aſſiſtants, and other productions of the like nature, calculated for the uſe of thoſe who mix in the buſtle of the world, I cannot but applaud thoſe polite and elegant inventions, The *Ladies Memorandum-Books*, as theſe ſeem chiefly adapted to the more important buſineſſes of pleaſure and amuſement. I ſhall not take upon me to determine which is the moſt preferable: each of them being, if you believe the ſolemn aſſeverations of their proprietors, "the beſt and moſt complete of its kind that has hitherto been publiſhed.,,

The utility of theſe little books, with reſpect to the fair ſex, is on the firſt view apparent; as they are divided for each day of the week into diſtinct columns, allotted to the ſeveral branches of *Engagements*, *Expences*, and *Occaſional Memorandums*. Theſe, indeed, comprehend every thing that can either attract their regard, or take up their time: I ſhall therefore point out ſome particular advantages that will ariſe from a right uſe and regulation of them.

With regard to *Engagements*, it is very well known, what embarraſſments, jealouſies, and quarrels, have ariſen from an erroneous management in that moſt eſſential part of female tranſactions, the paying and receiving of viſits. It has hitherto been

*) The Adventurer (by Mr. Hawksworth) Lond. 1766. 4 Vol. 8.

been ufual to truft entirely in this point to the care of an illiterate footman, or heedlefs porter, who is to take account of all the raps at the door, and to enter the names of the feveral vifitants in a regular journal. Hence it frequently happens, that the bond of amity is diffolved, and perpetual variance created between families, by the miftake or forgetfulnefs of a fervant. Lady *Formal* and Mrs. *Prim* were once the moft intimate females living: they curtified to one another regularly at church and the playhoufe, talked together wherever they met, and left their names once a month alternately at each other's houfe for feveral years, till it happened that Lady *Formal's* Swifs forgot to fet down Mrs. *Prim's* laft vifit to her ladyfhip; which occafions them now to ftare at one another like perfect ftrangers, while each confiders the other as guilty of that moft atrocious crime, the owing a vifit. A card was fent two months beforehand to invite Mrs. *Gadabout* to a rout; but by the negligence of the maid it unfortunately mifcarried, before the date of it was pofted in the day-book, and confequently fhe was prevented from going. The affront was unpardonable; her abfence rendered one whift-table ufelefs; the neglect was told every where; aud the innocent Mrs. *Gadabout* wonders at the reafon why fhe is fo feldom invited as a party in card affemblies. Thefe lamentable miftakes are, therefore, effectually guarded againft by the ufe of the *Memorandum-Book*, which puts it in every lady's power to keep a more exact regifter of all her *Engagements*, and to ftate the balance of vifits fairly between debtor and creditor.

And as there is certainly no virtue more amiable, or of greater emolument, than female œconomy, to which nothing contributes more than a juft knowledge of expences, the *Memorandum-Book*, has alfo wifely provided for this; in which, under the article of *Expences*, the lady may fet down the particular fums laid out in mafquerade tickets, fubfcription concerts, wax-lights for routs, drums or hurricanes, birthday fuits, chair-hire, and the like: fhe may alfo know the true balance between her winnings and lofings, and make a due regiftry of her debts of honour. For want of this method many widows of diftinction have imperceptibly run out the whole income of their jointures in a few months, and been forced to retire the reft of the year into country lodgings; and many married ladies have been conftrained to petition the brutes their hufbands for the advance of a quarter's pin-money, to

to ſatisfy the importunate dunnings of a needy honourable gameſter.

The blank alloted for *Occaſional Memorandums* may be filled up from time to time with the lye of the day, topics of ſcandal, names and abodes of milliners, deſcriptions of new faſhions, and a hundred other circumſtances of equal importance. This will greatly relieve the memory, and furniſh an inexhauſtible ſtore of matter for polite converſation.

There is another very pleaſing advantage ariſing from the uſe of theſe books, as we are informed by one of the compilers, who acquaints us, that "if preſerved, they will enable any lady to tell what buſineſs ſhe has tranſacted, and what company ſhe has been in, every day, during any period of her life." How enchanting, how rapturous, muſt ſuch a review prove to thoſe who make a figure in the polite world! to live over their days again! to recall the tranſporting idea of maſquerades, plays, concerts, cards, and dreſs! to revive loſt enjoyments, and in imagination to tread over again the delightful round of paſt pleaſures!

I was led to the conſideration of this ſubject by a viſit I the other day made a polite lady, whom I found earneſtly employed in writing. I would have withdrawn immediately; but ſhe told me ſhe was only entering ſome particulars in her memorandum-book, which would ſoon be finiſhed, and deſired me to take a chair. I expreſſed ſome curioſity to know her method; upon which ſhe very frankly put the book into my hand, bidding me peruſe it; "for,,, ſays ſhe, "I do nothing that I need be aſhamed of." As ſhe was ſoon after called out of the room, I took the opportunity of tranſcribing her firſt week's account, which I ſhall faithfully preſent to my fair readers, as a farther illuſtration of the uſe of theſe books, and if they pleaſe, as a pattern for their practice.

Engagements.	Occaſional Merorandum.
January.	
1. *Monday.* To call at Deard's in the morning. To dine with my huſband's uncle, the city merchant.	City politeneſs intolerable! Crammed with mince-pies, and fatigued with compliments of the ſeaſon! Play at Pope Joan for pence; O the creatures!
2. *Tuesday.* In the morning with the Miſs Flareits, to	A beautiful new French brocade at Silvertongue's on Ludgatehill

to drive to the ſilk-mercers, &c. At night to go to the Genii.

3. *Wednesday.* Expect Mademoiſelle la Toure to try on my French head. In the Evening to pay fortythree viſits.

4. *Thursday.* My own day at home. To have a drum major and ſeventeen card-tables.

5. *Friday.* To go do the auction with Lady Nicknack. To dine at home with a parcel of my huſband's city relations.

6. *Saturday.* Monſieur Le Friſe all the morning to dreſs my head. At night (being Twelfth-night) at court. To dance, if I can, with the handſome Bob Brilliant.

7) *Sunday.* If I riſe ſoon enough, Saint Jame's Church. In the afternoon to write a defence of Hoyle to Miſs Petulant at Bath, who has controverted ſome of his principles. Lady Brag's in the evening.

Ludgatehill. Mem. To teize my huſband to buy me a ſuit of it. Engaged the ſtage-box for Woodward's night.

Mademoiſelle the milliner tells me Lady Z's in the ſtraw, — Told it as a great ſecret at Lady F's, the counteſs of L's, Mrs. R's, &c. &c. &c.

Miſs Sharp is a greater cheat than her mamma. Company went before five. Stupid creature Mrs. Downright! never to have read Hoyle!

Lady Nicknack finely taken in. The whole day a blank. Head-ach. Could not dreſs. Went to bed horrid ſoon; — before one. Huſband drunk. Lay alone, my maid ſat by me.

My left temple ſinged with the curling iron. Several fine French dreſſes at court; but lady Homebred's, paultry Engliſh! Sir John Dapperwit whiſpered me, that Miſs Bloom was almoſt as charming as myſelf. She muſt paint I am certain.

Not up till two. Finiſhed my letter at ſix, and ſent John expreſs with it. Bad luck at night. Never could win on Sundays. Miſs Serious, who hates cards, ſays it is a judgment.

Among

Among the articles under *Expences* I found the following.

January		l.	s.	d.
1.	Bought at Deard's, a bauble for a new year's gift to my little god-child - -	5	5	0
3.	To Mrs. La Toure in part of her bill -	31	10	0
	To ditto for extraordinary trouble -	3	12	0
5.	Bought at the auction, a china lap dog	4	9	0
6.	Monsieur le Frise, for dressing my head, &c.	0	10	6
7.	Lost at cards, at Lady Brag's -	47	5	0

I intend in a future paper to take notice of some other advantages to be drawn from such a use of those *Memorandum-Books*, as above stated; and shall at present conclude with desiring my female readers to supply themselves immediately, and to send me an account of the use they make of them.

THE CHARACTER OF A GAMESTER DEFENDED. *)

If gaming does an aged sire entice,
Then my young master swiftly learns the vice,
And shakes, in hanging sleeves, the little box and dice.

Dryden.

To the *Adventurer*.

Sir,

It is a remark of some Philosophers, that there is a malignity in human nature, which urges every man to depress him who is already sinking. The *Gamester* is a character, at which the artillery of the Legislature has been long levelled: the practice of his profession has been rendered extremely difficult, and the instruments of it have been destroyed wherever they could be found; he has been persecuted by Justices, Constables, and Watchmen; he has languished in Newgate, and toiled in Bridewell. Under this accumulated distress, he is not the object of pity but contempt; every mouth is open against him; he is cursed by the mechanic and the trader, derided by wits, and hooted by the mob. In defence of this injured character, which I have long born, and

*) The Adventurer &c.

and of which I am not yet aſhamed, permit me to appear in your paper.

In the firſt place, Sir, *Gameſter* is a Gentleman: and though he has been inſulted by beggars and cits, the polite world is ſtill in his intereſt; and he has ſtill friends at Weſtminſter, from the grey-headed General to the beardleſs Senator. With the character of a Gentleman, there is but one vice which is now believed to be wholly incompatible; and ſuch is the malice of our enemies, that we have been degraded by the imputation of it, and our ruling paſſion is ſaid to be *Avarice*.

But, can he be avaricious, who truſts his whole property to Chance? who immediately circulates what he wins, with a liberality that has been cenſured by others as profuſion? Can Avarice be his motive to play, who, with twenty thouſand pounds in the funds, ſits down with a man whoſe whole eſtate he knows to be in his pocket, and to amount to no more than ten pieces? As the love of money appears inconteſtibly not to govern one of theſe perſons, it cannot be proved to govern the other: The charge of Avarice is, indeed, ſo ridiculous and abſurd, that I am aſhamed of an attempt to confute it.

This charge might with great juſtice be retorted upon Trade, which, when put in competition with gaming, muſt appear to great diſadvantage. Trade has beſides introduced all the ſuperfluities that have enervated and corrupted mankind: Trade has even produced oppoſite evils; it has pampered luxury, and wearied labour; but Gaming has done neither.

Trade, indeed, circulates property; but property might with greater advantage be circulated by Gaming. If it be aſked, how the perſons employed in this delightful circulation of property, are to be furniſhed with the neceſſaries of life, when Trade is at an end; I anſwer, that the neceſſaries of life, in the eſtimation of *Virtue* and the *Gameſter*, are few; a ſheepſkin, a hovel, and a dice-box, would furniſh the Gameſter with ſufficient apparel, ſhelter, and entertainment; and with theſe he would be as happy as he is now; for he has no power of acquiring happineſs that is not exerted in play, and of other happineſs he has indeed no conception.

If Play was then univerſally purſued, as at once comprehending all buſineſs and all pleaſure, one man might not only grow rich, and another poor, but the ſame perſon might alternately paſs thro', all the viciſſitudes of fortune, while he

ſat

ſat upon the ground in the ſun, without toiling in the manufactory, or ſweating at the forge, without the perplexity of accompts, or the perils of a voyage.

If it be again aſked, when life is reduced to this ſtate of primitive ſimplicity, what would be the advantage of wealth? I anſwer, the ſame as it is at preſent to thoſe who poſſeſs more than they ſpend, a conſciouſneſs that they are wealthy; and thoſe who are capable of more exalted felicity, would enjoy in the acquiſition the tranſport of winning, without conſidering money to have any power, quality or uſe, but as a ſtake.

Theſe, indeed, are Utopian ſcenes; and I return, with a ſigh, to vindicate my profeſſion from other imputations, which are equally falſe and injurious.

It has been ſaid, that we are ſtrangers to reciprocal felicity; and that the happineſs of one Gameſter is produced by the miſery of another, the pain of him who loſes being always proportioned to the pleaſure of the winner. But this is only the cavil of popular prejudice: If I am happy, what is it to me who elſe is miſerable? Every man, whatever he may pretend, is concerned only for himſelf; and might, conſiſtent with right reaſon, cut any other man's throat if he could eſcape puniſhment, and ſecure to himſelf any advantage by the fact. If any of your readers have ſtill ſcruples, and deſire to ſee this doctrine farther illuſtrated, I refer them to the great Dr. *Mandeville's* Fable of the Bees.

Among other enemies, that have been encouraged to fall upon the *Gameſter* in his diſtreſs, is Bigotry or Religion; for I conſider both theſe terms as expreſſions of the ſame idea. Bigotry then accuſes us with exerciſing our employment on a Sunday; but this accuſation is the effect of ſuch complicated folly, ignorance and malice, that it could have had no other author. Not to inſiſt that a Gentleman is under no moral obligation to regard one day more than another, is he to be inſulted for doing that, which has a direct tendency to deſtroy luxury root and branch, on a Sunday? Shall Virtue, in this enlightened age, be given up to Ceremony; and Patriotiſm be ſtigmatized as Impiety? I have, on every other article, been able to keep my temper; but I can never bear the cant of Bigotry with patience.

There

There is, however, another charge, which I ſhall not obviate as an imputation of prophaneneſs, but of folly. It is ſaid that we utter the moſt horrid oaths and imprecations; that we invocate beings whom we do not believe to exiſt, and denounce curſes that can never be fulfilled. This has, indeed, been practiſed in our aſſemblies; but by thoſe only who are novices in the profeſſion: for among other advantages that ariſe from Gaming, is ſuch a ſilent acquieſcence in the will of Fortune, as would do honour to a Stoic; or, at leaſt, a calm philoſophical immutability of countenance, by which all that paſſes in the boſom is concealed.

This acquiſition, it muſt be confeſſed, requires ſome parts and long practice; but there have been many illuſtrious examples of it among us. A Gentleman, my particular friend, who had the honour to be many years an eminent Gameſter, being without money, committed a robbery upon the highway, to procure another ſtake, that he might return to his profeſſion: It happened unfortunately that he was taken; and though he had great intereſt with ſome perſons that ſhall be nameleſs, yet he was convicted and hanged. This Gentleman's ill-luck continued all the while he was in gaol; ſo that he was compelled to diſpoſe of his body to the Surgeons, and loſt the money to a friend who viſited him in the cells, the night before execution. He appeared, however, next morning with great compoſure; no reflection on the paſt, no anticipation of the future, cauſed him once to change countenance during his paſſage to the gallows; and though he was about to receive death from a greaſy ſcoundrel, whom he knew once to have been a butcher, yet he ſwore but two oaths in the cart; and was ſo indifferent as to what ſhould afterwards befall him, that he bravely refuſed to ſay Amen to the Prayers.

If by your communication of theſe hints, the clamours of ſlander ſhall be ſilenced, and the true character of a *Gameſter* ſhall be more generally known, — I have ſecrets, which may be communicared *entre nous*, — and the next dead ſet — you underſtand me — I am a man of honour, and you may command,

Sir, Yours, &c.

DE-

DESCRIPTION OF THE DUTCH COLONIES OF BERBICE, DEMERARY AND ESSEQUEBO. *)

Rio Demerary, Nov. 15, 1766.

Dear *Brother*,

From my preceding Lettres you will be able to form an idea of the ſtate of *Guiana* before the *European* Nations viſited, and ſettled themſelves on this Coaſt. It now remains for me briefly to inform you of the ſubſequent changes which have been induced by *European* Policy, Induſtry, and Luxury. Religion I omit, becauſe that ſeems to have had no influence in theſe alterations. It is my intention, however, to confine my information, relative to theſe particulars, ſolely to that part of *Guiana*, which is inhabited by the ſubjects of the United Provinces; my knowledge of the other *European* Colonies being too imperfect to merit a communication.

The moſt ancient and conſiderable of all the *Dutch* Colonies in *Guiana*, is *Surinam*; but as that River, with its Settlements, which were made firſt by the Subjects of *England*, are already ſufficiently known in *Europe*, I ſhall omit a deſcription of them.

Next in the order of ſituation is the Colony of *Berbice*, ſituated on the ſhores of the River of that name, about twenty-five leagues N. W. by W. ½ N. diſtant from *Surinam*, running from North to South, and diſcharging itſelf into the *Atlantic* Ocean. The Coaſt on each ſide of the River forms a Bay at its entrance, which is near a mile in width, having a ſmall Iſland in the middle, known by the name of *Crab Iſland*. Oppoſite this Iſland, on the eaſtern ſhore, is a ſmall Poſt, with ſeveral pieces of cannon and ſome ſoldiers; but the channel on the other ſide, which is navigable for veſſels of any burthen, is undefended, and covered by the Iſland from the guns on the oppoſite ſhore. Without the entrance of this River is a Bar, which, at high tide, has ſeldom more than ſixteen feet of water; but within, the water is of ſufficient depth, and the river is navigable for ſhips of burthen, two hundred miles from its mouth.

The Plantations are ſituated on each ſide of the River, and extend near three hundred miles from its entrance; Fort *Naſſau*, which is the Seat of Government, and contiguous to which are

*) (Bancroft's) Natural hiſtory of Guiana, Lond. 1769. 8.

are the public Offices, Churches, and Houses of the Civil and Military Officers, being situated at one hundred miles from the mouth of the River; the *Dutch* having here, as in all their Colonies, neglected the lower and more fertile land, near the sea-coast, for that which is more elevated, in the interior part of the country. At present, however, they are endeavouring to repair their error, and the Seat of Government is soon to be removed to a point of land on the eastern shore of *Berbice*, about a mile from its entrance, which is formed between *Berbice* and the River *Conya*, which there discharges itself into the former.

Conya is a narrow, but deep river, running from south to north, but diverging somewhat easterly from *Berbice*. There are several Plantations on the sides of this river, which makes a part of the Colony of *Berbice*, which is a present under the government of his Excellency *John Heyliger*, Esquire, who is stiled Governor General.

This, like all the *Dutch* Colonies in the *West Indies*, is under the jurisdiction of the *Dutch West India* Company, and the lands are granted *gratis*, by the Governor and Court of Policy, to petitioners, upon conditional terms of settlement; and if these are not complied with, the land again reverts to the donors, and is granted to other petitioners. The inhabitants of this Colony, however, as well as those of *Surinam*, are restricted from transmitting the produce of their Plantations (which is chiefly Sugar, Coffee, Cotton, and Cacao,) to any Port which is not within the Province of *Holland*; as those of *Demerary* and *Essequebo* are obliged to export theirs to the Province of *Zealand*. These are commercial regulations, which have been thought to be for the mutual interest of the Company and Inhabitants.

In the year 1763 an insurrection happened among the Slaves of this Colony, who rebelled to the amount of several thousands, and massacred a considerable number of the White Inhabitants, while the rest fled to Fort *Nassau*, where, fearing their communication with the sea-coast might be obstructed, the then Governor, by the advice of his Council, precipitately blew up the Fort, and retired, with the White Inhabitants, on board several merchant ships in the River, and sailed to its entrance, there to wait for assistance from abroad. This retreat left the Rebels the undisturbed possession of the whole Colony, and threw the inhabitants of the neighbouring Colonies, particularly of *Demerary* and *Essequebo*, into the

utmost

utmoſt conſternation, as they were the moſt contiguous to *Berbice*, and apprehended a viſit from the Rebels, which muſt have been attended with the moſt unhappy conſequences, as their own ſlaves were at leaſt five times more numerous than the White Inhabitants, and betrayed ſo eager a diſpoſition for revolting, that it was feared they would not have patience to wait for aſſiſtance from their brethren in *Berbice*.

In this critical ſituation, however, they experienced the advantage of their connection with the ſubjects of *Great Britain*, as at this time a ſhip of war, belonging to *Gedney Clarke*, Eſq, Collector of his Majeſty's Cuſtoms at *Barbadoes*, which had been put into commiſſion by Admiral *Douglas*, and was commanded by a Lieutenant of the *Britiſh* Navy, arrived with a Company of Marines, and another of Soldiers, raiſed at the expence of Mr. *Clarke*, who was proprietor of ſeveral plantations in *Demerary*, as were ſeveral other Gentlemen in *Barbadoes*. This armament effectually fruſtrated the rebellious deſigns of the Slaves in *Demerary*, and the civil diſſentions among the Rebels of *Berbice* diverted them from their intended viſit. In the interim, however, the Governor of *Berbice* received a body of Soldiers from *Surinam*, and ſeveral armed veſſels from the Iſlands of *Curaçao* and *St. Euſtatia*, with which he ſailed up the River, and took poſſeſſion of the *Dauger-bead*, a large Plantation belonging to the *Weſt-India* Company, where he maintained himſelf till the arrival of an armament from *Holland*, when the Rebels were ſoon driven from the woods, from whence hunger, and the arrows of the *Indians*, obliged them to return, and ſeek an aſylum in their former ſlavery. Several hundred of the chief promoters of this inſurrection were however burnt; before this, ſeveral hundreds of the *Carribbee Indians* were, by the Governor of *Eſſequebo* and *Demerary*, engaged to take up arms againſt the Rebels, whom they not a little harraſſed, by concealing themſelves in the woods by day, and ſetting fire to their houſes in the night, by ſhooting arrows fired at the point among the Troolies, with which they were thatched, and then killing the Negroes as they fled out in confuſion.

About fifteen leagues North Weſt from *Berbice* is the River *Demerary*, near three quarters of a mile in width at its entrance, which is in 6 deg. 46m. North Latitude. On the eaſt ſide is a ſandy ſhoal, extending a little diſtance from the ſhore; to avoid this, nothing is required but to enter the River near its middle, with its courſe in full view, when the water

water will be found deeper, and its entrance eaſier, than that of *Berbice* or *Eſſequebo*. A little within the mouth of the River, on the eaſt ſhore, is a ſmall Poſt, with ſeveral patereroes, which are very inſufficient for defending the mouth of the River againſt a veſſel of any force, though this is the only fortification in this part of the Colony. About eight leagues from thence are three Iſlands, at no great diſtance from each other. On that which is in the middle is the reſidence of the Commandant, and there the Courts of Judicature are held, and the Company's Troops are ſtationed. This River is navigable for veſſels of great burthen one hundred miles from its mouth, and is ſettled near one hundred miles farther. Two hundred miles from the entrance of this River are ſeveral Cataracts, from which the water falls by a long, but eaſy deſcent. Some diſtance above theſe the River divides into two branches, which diverge from each other about eight points, the one running S. W. and the other S. E. But their ſource has never been diſcovered by any *European*.

One league Weſt from *Demerary* is the Great River *Eſſequebo*, which, at its entrance, is nine miles from ſhore to ſhore. In its mouth are three Iſlands called the *Lagueon Iſlands*, two of which extend ſome diſtance without the main land. Within theſe are the *Fortune Iſlands*, and within them a ſucceſſion of other Iſlands, which is continued the diſtance of twelve or fourteen leagues from the River's mouth, which, on the eaſtern ſhore is defended by a Poſt ſimilar to that in *Demerary*, though the weſtern channel is intirely defenceleſs. Fort *Zealand* is ſituated on an Iſland, known by the name of the *Fort Iſland*, lying about ten leagues above the entrance of the River. This Fort mounts about forty pieces of cannon, and on this Iſland is the uſual reſidence of the Governor, and other Officers of Government, as well as of ſome of the Planters, &c. On this, and all the other Iſlands, as well as on each ſide of the River, for a great diſtance, are Plantations, producing Sugar, Coffee, and Cotton chiefly.

The River *Eſſequebo* receives a great number of creeks and rivers on each ſide; but the principal ſtream has its ſource more than three hundred miles from the ſea-coaſt, diverging weſterly from *Demerary*, whoſe courſe from the entrance is nearly South to the place where it divides into two branches. Beſides theſe, there are the Rivers *Pomaroon*, *Currantine*, *Merriwina*, and a great number of ſmall rivers and creeks diſcharging themſelves into the North Sea; but as they are

all

all unsettled, I shall not descend to a description of them. All these, as well as several of those Rivers which are settled, are unknown to *English* Geographers, and not to be discovered in any Charts of that country that I have ever seen.

Essequebo and *Demerary*, on account of their proximity, are comprized in one Colony, which bears the name of both Rivers, and is under the government of his Excellency *Laurence Storm Van Gravesande*. *Essequebo* is the most ancient, having been settled near sixty years; though no great advances were made in agriculture till lately. *Demerary*, which has been settled but little more than twenty years, at present promises fair to become a most flourishing Colony, with proper encouragement; though the *Dutch* do not bestow all the attention on these colonies which they deserve, and in some measure neglect the *West* for the *East Indies*.

The Plantations of these Colonies are situated in single tiers on each side of the River, extending seven hundred and fifty rods in depth from the River, but are of different extent in front, according to the productions to which they are appropriated; those for Sugar extending usually either a thousand or fifteen hundred rods in front of the River; those for Coffee or Cotton seldom exceed five hundred. Between each plantation the Company has reserved twenty-four feet of ground, on which roads are to be made, if ever a second row of plantations should be formed behind the first. Sugar plantations are deemed the most profitable, and are the objects to which all aspire. Those, however, whose fortunes are unequal to so expensive an undertaking, content themselves with Coffee or Cotton Plantations, till they have thereby sufficiently improved their stock for undertaking a greater object.

The Sugar-mills of these Colonies are either turned by mules, obtained chiefly from the *Spaniards* of *Oronoque*, by illicit traffic; or by wind, or water. The dwelling-houses are usually surrounded by piazzas, which in this climate are particularly convenient. The plantations near the sea-coast are at present esteemed much the most valuable. They indeed require to be not only surrounded with dykes, for excluding the water which overflows the adjacent woods, and to defend them from the inundation of the tides, which rise to a great height, especially near the vernal and autumnal Equinoxes; but also to be inclosed and intersected by trenches with gates emptying into the River, which at low tide are opened for

diſcharging the water which may have fallen on the plantation by rain; all which requires no ſmall labour: But it is amply repaid by other attendant advantages. The trenches ſerve for canals, by which the canes are, with great facility, tranſported to the mills; the fertility of the ſoil is inexhauſtible; and the land, being covered with but little elſe than Troolies and Manicoles, is much eaſier cleared than in the more elevated parts of the River, where indeed dykes and trenches are unneceſſary; but the fertility of the ſoil is much leſs durable, and the lands are covered with large timber, which, in hardneſs, ſolidity, and weight, is but little inferior to iron: This, however, though it augments the labour in clearing lands, is far from being the leaſt advantageous production of this country.

Many of the largeſt and moſt flouriſhing Plantations, both in *Eſſequebo* and *Demerary*, but eſpecially in the latter, are the property of *Britiſh* ſubjects, who have been induced to form ſettlements in this Country, by the peculiar advantages with which it is endowed; and though the *Dutch* in *Surinam*, and all their other Colonies, are ignorant of the art of converting Melaſſes to Rum, with advantage, yet in this Colony they have been, by the *Engliſh* inhabitants, perfectly inſtructed in the arts of Diſtillation, and produce Rum, which is not inferior, in any reſpect, even to that of *Jamaica*. The White inhabitants of this Colony are *Dutch*, *Engliſh*, *Swiſs*, and *Germans*, but chiefly the two former. Many of theſe are unfortunate perſons, whom the unavoidable accidents of life, or frowns of fortune, have induced to ſeek an aſylum in diſtant countries, where their induſtry is often ſo amply rewarded, that they are enabled to return with opulence and credit, and bleſs thoſe accidents which reduced them to the neceſſity of abandoning their homes, and which they once eſteemed the greateſt misfortune.

Agriculture, and all other labour, in theſe Colonies, is almoſt wholly performed by Negroes as the White Inhabitants undertake no laborious employment; and even the mechanics do but little more than overſee and direct the Slaves, which are at leaſt five times more numerous than the Whites, and are therefore kept at a ſubmiſſive and humble diſtance by ſeverity of diſcipline, which not only contributes to the ſafety of the White Inhabitants, but even to the happineſs of the Slaves; the impoſſibility of attaining, is ever found to deſtroy the deſire of enjoyment; and rigid treatment,

by

by annihilating every hope of liberty, renders them content with the enjoyment of ſlavery. The late inſurrection of the Slaves in *Berbice*, who of all others were the moſt favoured, affords a recent example of the danger of too much indulgence to Slaves, by which they are excited to attempt the perfect recovery of liberty. In this ſtate there is no medium; either the minds of ſlaves muſt be depreſſed by abject ſlavery, or the lives of their maſters are in imminent danger. For this reaſon they have been oppreſſed by many humiliating penalties and diſtinctions. Their evidence, relative to a White Perſon, is of no validity; an attempt to ſtrike a White Inhabitant is puniſhed with death; and their maſters or overſeers, have not only the power of inflicting corporal puniſhment, but are in ſome meaſure allowed to exerciſe a right over their lives, ſince the putting a Negro to death, is attended only with a pecuniary puniſhment. In this ſituation they are ſubjected to many complicated ſpecies of miſery, expoſed to the tyranny of the imperious, and to an inceſſant toil, which will have no period but with their lives. This treatment has the appearance of cruelty, and cannot be reconciled to the principles of juſtice and equity; many things, however, which are repugnant to humanity, may be excuſed, on account of their neceſſity, for ſelf-preſervation.

The expence of maintaining the Slaves, in this climate, is very trifling. The firſt year that a ſlave is purchaſed, he is ſupplied with food by his maſter, and is aſſigned a piece of ground, which on Sundays he clears from the wood, and plants with yams, plantins, edda's, caſſave, ocro's, &c. but eſpecially the former, which produce ten thouſand pounds per acre. When the year is expired he recurrs to his planting-ground for his future proviſion, which he is ever after to keep ſupplied with a ſufficient ſtock for his ſuſtenance, for which he is allowed every Sunday only; receiving, however, from his maſter a weekly allowance of dried fiſh, to the amount of a pound and an half, which is all that his maſter contributes towards his food. The females receive the ſame treatment, and the drink of both is nothing but water; yet from this water, and theſe farinaceous and eſculent vegetables, with a morſel of dried fiſh, theſe people derive ſufficient nutriment to ſuſtain the hardeſt labour in the moſt enervating climate.

The cloathing of the Negroes (the houſhold ſlaves excepted) is ſcarce ſufficient to anſwer the demands of modeſty. Several

modern Compilers of the Hiſtory of our *Weſt India* ſettlements have enumerated ſtockings and ſhoes among the articles of cloathing for the Negroes, though nothing could more certainly betray their ignorance of this ſubject, ſince a ſlave in ſtockings and ſhoes, in theſe countries, would be as uncommon a ſpectacle, as a Negro inſtructed in the principles of Chriſtianity; and if any of them have either ſhirts, breeches, or petticoats, they are the produce of their own private induſtry, as their maſters furniſh only a piece of coarſe blue, or brown linen, which is applied to the middle in both ſexes, and a blanket, with which the ſlave covers himſelf at night, ſleeping on boards only.

In theſe, as in all other *Weſt India* Colonies, the ſlaves diminiſh in number, unleſs recruited by ſucceſſive ſupplies from *Africa*. This decreaſe has been attributed to various cauſes, but moſt commonly to hard labour and oppreſſion, though with very little appearance of reaſon, ſince they are much more robuſt, healthy, and vigorous than their maſters. They are, indeed, ſpurred to induſtry by the whip of correction, which is ever at their heels, and not ſparingly exerciſed; but coarſe food, with hard labour, are ever accompanied with the bleſſings of increaſed health and vigour, which the pampered effeminate ſons of luxury may juſtly envy, but can never attain; and the true cauſe of their want of increaſe reſults from the voluptuous intercourſe of the Whites with the young wenches. That this is the true cauſe of their decreaſe, is farther evident, from obſerving the ſituation of *Virginia* and *Maryland*, where the Slaves increaſe, without any addition by importation, becauſe this pernicious copulation is there deteſted.

The Inhabitants derive no ſmall aſſiſtance from the *Indians*, particularly the *Arrowanks*, ſome of whom reſide on almoſt every plantation, and are employed in various ſervices, but eſpecially in hunting and fiſhing, which, being their natural employment, they are able to exerciſe it with uncommon art and ſucceſs, and may be hired with a few baubles for ſeveral months. Theſe *Indians*, however, are debauched by luxury and intemperance, and their manners but ill agree with thoſe of the *Indians* who have preſerved their natural innocence and ſimplicity; and they are encouraged in their propenſity to intemperance by the Whites, who freely ſupply them with Rum, thereby to attach them more firmly to their ſervice; a practice, which conſiderably impairs their health, and

dimi-

diminishes their numbers. Effects similar to these have happened in every part of *America*, where the *Aborigines* have maintained an intimate intercourse with the *Europeans*, from the unnatural union of our vices with the manners of the *Indians*; and it is a piece of refined and useful policy in the *Jesuit* Missionaries of *Paraguay*, to exclude their New Converts from all intercourse with Foreigners, not only to answer the purposes of that politic Society, but also to preserve them in a happy ignorance of our vices, which alone could secure them from being corrupted by their example. The cause of these effects is obvious; we contaminate them with our Vices, but withold the Antidotes of Religion, Morality, and Literature.

The *Dutch*, in these Colonies, encourage intermarriages with the *Indian* women; and several of the most considerable families, in rank and fortune, in *Essequebo*, derive their origin from these alliances; by which the *Dutch* have acquired an ascendency and influence over the *Indians*, which is of the utmost use and importance; and the Governor not only reserves to himself the decision of their differences, but by his order prohibits the several contiguous Tribes from committing hostilities on each other: And though he has no other means for enforcing these orders, except a few despicable soldiers, in the service of the Company, they yet receive an humble and implicit obedience.

As there are no public roads in this, or the neighbouring Colonies, for any considerable distance, the only method of travelling is by water, in Yatches, with convenient tents, elegantly ornamented, and six, eight, or ten oars, rowed by *Negroes*, or *Indians*, and that always with the current of the tide, which ebbs and flows with irresistible rapidity, in all these rivers, near two hundred miles from their entrance, by which you may conceive how level and even the country must be. When the current of the tide turns, the traveller stops, not at an inn, or tavern, for none are to be found, but at whatever plantation he chuses, where, though an intire stranger, he is made welcome to every thing it can afford; the hospitality of this Colony not permitting money to be any where received for victuals or drink; and a stranger, on his arrival here, is every where welcome to board and lodging for months or years.

The Lands of this Colony, like thofe of *Berbice*, are granted *gratis*, upon conditional terms of fettlement; and the Governor is appointed by the Company, with the approbation of the States General, who, with his Council, which are chofen by the Burghers, or their fubftitutes, compofe the Legiflative Authority, and impofe fuch taxes as are requifite for the fupport of Government. They likewife form the Supreme Court of Judicature in Criminal and Civil Caufes, from which, in the latter, Appeals are allowed to *Holland* for fums exceeding twelve hundred Gilders. This Court examines the evidences, and from their teftimonies determines the caufe, without hearing Counfel on either fide. For this conduct they have feveral reafons. Multiplicity of law-fuits are univerfally allowed to be particularly detrimental to new countries. Lawyers, they think, not only tend to promote them, but alfo to protract, embarrafs, and perplex judicial proceedings. How far thefe conclufions are juft, I will not determine; Right and Wrong, Juftice and Injuftice, are fometimes fo obfcure, that the affiftance of Council may be ufeful; but where the Members of a Court of Judicature, as in the prefent cafe, are but little verfed in ftudy of Law, inftead of acquiring ufeful information, they would be in danger of being mifled by the fubtilities of pleadings, and the arts of litigation. Befides, this would naturally enhance the expence of judicial determinations; to prevent which, the Government is here particularly follicitous, to their honour I fpeak it, as in fome countries the neceffary expences in this particular have been fo enormoufly augmented, not only by multiplicity of fees, but by ftamps, and other duties, on the feveral inftruments required, that the means of obtaining a judicial decifion are beyond the reach, not only of the poor, but even of people in moderate circumftances, who, in effect, fuffer an abfolute deprivation of juftice; whereas in this Colony, the whole expence of a Law-fuit is but a fingle fhilling for a Summons. I fay a Summons, becaufe the body of no inhabitant can be arrefted except for a criminal offence: But the inconveniences which might refult from this ufeful regulation are prevented, by a Law, which prohibits all inhabitants from leaving the Colony without a pafsport, which can only be obtained, either by previoufly notifying the intention of departure, or by providing fecurity for the difcharge of any remaining debts.

The

The Company has reſerved to itſelf the right of regulating our commerce for the mutual advantage of the Parent country and Colonies ; but in exerciſing this right they have been particularly attentive to the intereſt of the latter, as they are ſenſible that colonization can only be promoted by indulgence; and though we are obliged to tranſmit our Sugar, Coffee, Cotton, Cocao, &c. to the Province of *Sealand*, yet we have liberty to export Rum, Melaſſes, Timber, &c. to foreign countries, and to import from them all commodities which we want, without diſtinction, and uncharged with duties.

LETTERS. *)

A. Pope to Henry Cromwell Eſq.

I have been ſo well ſatisfied with the country ever ſince I ſaw you, that I have not once thought of the town, or inquired of any one in it beſides Mr. Wycherley and yourſelf. And from him I underſtand of your journey this ſummer into Leiceſterſhire; from whence I gueſs you are returned by this time, to your old apartment in the widow's corner, to your old buſineſs of comparing critics, and to your old diverſions of loſing a game at piquet with the ladies, and half a play, or a quarter of a play, at the theatre: where you are none of the malicious audience, but the chief of amorous ſpectators; and for the infirmity of one ſenſe **), which there for the moſt part, could only ſerve to diſguſt you, enjoy the vigour of another which raviſhes you. So you have the advantage of being entertained with all the beauty of the boxes, without being troubled with any of the dulneſs of the ſtage. You are ſo good a critic, that it is the greateſt happineſs of the modern poets that you do not hear their works, and next, that you are not ſo arrant a critic, as to damn them (like the reſt) without hearing.

I have an hundred things to ſay to you, which ſhall be deferred till I have the happineſs of ſeeing you in town, for the ſeaſon now draws on, that invites every body thither. Some of them I had communicated to you by letters before this

*) Alex. Pope's Works. Lond. 1752. 9 Vol. 8. &c. Berl. 1764.
**) His hearing.

this, if I had not been uncertain where you paſſed your time the laſt ſeaſon: So much fine weather, I doubt not, has given you all the pleaſure you could deſire from the country, and your own thoughts the beſt company in it. But nothing could allure Mr. Wycherley to our foreſt, he continued (as you told me long ſince he would) an obſtinate lover of the town, in ſpite of friendſhip and fair weather. Therefore henceforward, to all thoſe conſiderable qualities I know you poſſeſſed of, I ſhall add that of prophecy. But I ſtill believe Mr. Wycherley's intentions were good, and am ſatisfied that he promiſes nothing but with a real deſign to perform it: How much ſoever his other excellent qualities are above my imitation, his ſincerity, I hope, is not; and it is with the utmoſt that I am,

Sir, &c.

H. Cromwell to A. Pope.

Mr. Wicherley viſited me at Bath in my ſickneſs, and expreſſed much affection to me: Hearing from me how welcome his letters would be, he preſently wrote to you; in which I inſerted my ſcrawl, and after, a ſecond. He went to Glouceſter in his way to Salop, but was diſappointed of a boat, and ſo returned to the Bath; then he ſhewed me your anſwer to his letters, in which you ſpeak of my good nature, but, I fear, you found me very froward at reading; yet you allow for my illneſs. I could not poſſible be in the ſame houſe with Mr. Wicherley, though I ſought it earneſtly, nor come up to town with him, he being engaged with others; but whenever we met, we talked of you. He praiſes your poem *), and even outvies me in kind expreſſions of you. As if he had not wrote two letters to you, he was for writing every poſt; I put him in mind he had already. Forgive me this wrong; I know not whether my talking ſo much of your great humanity and tenderneſs to me, and love to him; or whether the return of his natural diſpoſition to you was the cauſe; but certainly you are now highly in his favour: Now he will come this winter to your houſe and I muſt go with him; but firſt he will invite you ſpeedily to town. — I arrived on Saturday laſt much wearied, yet had wrote ſooner, but was told by Mr. Gay (who gives you his ſervice) that you was gone from home. Lewis ſhewed me your letter, which ſet me right,

*) Eſſay on Criticiſm.

right, and your next letter is impatiently expected from me. Mr. Wycherley came to town on Sunday last, and kindly surprised me with a visit on Monday morning. We dined and drank together; and I saying, *To our loves*, he replied, *it is Mr. Pope's health.* He said he would go to Mr. Thorold's, and leave a letter for you. Though I cannot answer for the event of all this, in respect to him; yet I can assure you, that, when you please to come, you will be most desiderable to me, as always by inclination, so now by duty, who shall ever be

Your, &c.

A. Pope to H. Cromwell.

I received, your letter the day after I had sent you one of mine and I am but this morning returned hither. The news you tell me of the many difficulties you found in your return from Bath, gives me such a kind of pleasure as we usually take in accompaying our friends in their mixed adventures; for, methink's, I see you labouring through all your inconveniences of the rough roads, the hard saddle, the trotting horse, and what not? What an agreeable surprise would it have been to me, to have met you by pure accident, (which I was within an ace of doing,) and to have carried you off triumphantly, set you on an easier path, and relieved the wandering knight with a night's lodging and rural repast, at our castle in the forest? But these are only the pleasing imaginations of a disappointed lover, who must suffer in a melancholy absence yet these two months. In the mean time, I take up with the muses, for want of your better company.

I am highly pleased with the knowledge you give me of Mr. Wycherley's present temper, which seems so favourable to me. I shall ever have such a fund of affection for him as to be agreeable to myself when I am so to him, and cannot but be gay when he is in good humour. For what remains, I am so well, that nothing but the assurance of your being so can make me better; and if you would have me live with any satisfaction these dark days in which I cannot see you, it must be by your writing sometimes to

your, &c.

Mr. Steele to Mr. Pope.

This is to deſire of you that you would pleaſe to make an Ode as of a cheerful dying ſpirit, that is to ſay, the Emperor Adrian's *Animula vagula* put into two or three ſtanzas for muſic. If you comply with this, and ſend me word ſo you will very particularly oblige

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope's Anſwer.

I do not ſend you word I will do, but have already done the thing you deſire of me. *) You have it (as Cowley calls it) juſt warm from the brain. It came to me the firſt moment I waked this morning: Yet you will ſee it was not ſo abſolutely inſpiration, but that I had in my head not only the verſes of Adrian, but the fine fragment of Sappho, &c.

Mr. Addiſon to Mr. Pope.

I was extremely glad to receive a letter from you, but more ſo upon reading the contents of it. The **) work you mention, will, I dare ſay, very ſufficiently recommend itſelf when your name appears with the propoſals: And if you think I can any way contribute to the forwarding of them, you cannot lay a greater obligation upon me than by employing me in ſuch an office. As I have an ambition of having it known that you are my friend, I ſhall be very proud of ſhowing it by this, or any other inſtance. I queſtion not but your tranſlation will enrich our tongue, and do honour to our country; for I conclude of it already from thoſe performances with which you have obliged the public. I would only have you conſider how it may moſt turn to your advantage. Excuſe my impertinence in this particular, which proceeds from my zeal for your eaſe and happineſs. The work would coſt you a great deal of time, and, unleſs you undertake it, will, I am afraid, never be executed by any other; at leaſt I know none of this age that is equal to it beſides yourſelf.

I am at preſent wholly immerſed in country-buſineſs, and begin to take delight in it. I wiſh I might hope to ſee you here ſome time, and will not deſpair of it, when you engage in a work that will require ſolitude and retirement. I am

Your, &c.

*) See Po'pes Works. Vol. I. P. 68.

**) Tranſlation of the Iliad.

Mr. Addiſon. to Mr. Pope.

I have received your letter, and am glad to find that you have laid ſo good a ſcheme for your great undertaking. I queſtion not but the proſe *) will require as much care as the poetry, but the variety will give yourſelf ſome relief, and more pleaſure to your readers.

You gave me leave once to take the liberty of a friend, in adviſing you not to content yourſelf with one half of the nation for your admirers, when you might command them all. If I might take the freedom to repeat it, I would on this occaſion. I think you are very happy that you are out of the fray, and I hope all your undertakings will turn to the better account for it.

You ſee how I preſume on your friendſhip in taking all this freedom with you: But I already fancy that we have lived many years together in an unreſerved converſation; and that we may do ſo many more, is the ſincere wiſh of

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Addiſon.

Your laſt is the more obliging, as it hints at ſome little niceties in my conduct, which your candour and affection prompts you to recommend to me, and which (ſo trivial as things of this nature ſeem) are yet of no ſlight conſequence, to people whom every body talks of, and every body as he pleaſes. It is a ſort of tax that attends an eſtate in Parnaſſus, which is often rated much higher than in proportion to the ſmall poſſeſſion an author holds. For indeed an author, who is once come upon the town, is enjoyed without being thanked for the pleaſure, and ſometimes ill treated by thoſe very perſons who firſt debauched him. Yet, to tell you the bottom of my heart, I am no way diſpleaſed that I have offended the violent of all parties already; and at the ſame time I aſſure you conſcientiouſly, I feel not the leaſt malevolence or reſentment againſt any of thoſe who miſrepreſent me, or are diſſatisfied with me. This frame of mind is ſo eaſy, that I am perfectly content with my condition.

As I hope, and would flatter myſelf, that you know me and my thoughts ſo entirely as never to be miſtaken in either, ſo it is a pleaſure to me that you gueſſed ſo right in regard to the author of that Guardian you mentioned. But I am ſorry to find it has taken air that I have ſome hand in thoſe papers, becauſe

*) The notes to his tranſlation of Homer.

becauſe I write ſo very few as neither to deſerve the credit of ſuch a report with ſome people, nor the diſrepute of it with others. An honeſt Jacobite ſpoke to me the ſenſe or nonſenſe of the weak part of his party very fairly, that the good people took it ill of me, that I wrote with Steele, though upon never ſo indifferent ſubjects. This, I know, you will laugh at as well as I do; yet I doubt not but many little calumniators and perſons of ſour diſpoſitions will take occaſion hence to beſpatter me. I confeſs I ſcorn narrow ſouls, of all parties, and if I renounce my reaſon in religious matters, I will hardly do it in any other.

I cannot imagine whence it comes to paſs that the few Guardians I have written are ſo generally known for mine: That in particular which you mention I never diſcovered to any man but the publiſher, till very lately: Yet almoſt every body told me of it.

As to his taking a more politic turn, I cannot any way enter into that ſecret, nor have I been let into it, any more than into the reſt of his politics. Though it is ſaid, he will take into theſe papers alſo ſeveral ſubjects of the politer kind, as before: But, I aſſure you, as to myſelf, I have quite done with them for the future. The little I have done, and the great reſpect I bear Mr. Steele as a man of wit, has rendered me a ſuſpected Whig to ſome of the violent; but (as old Dryden ſaid before me) it is not the violent I deſign to pleaſe.

I generally employ the mornings in painting with Mr. Jervas, and the evening in the converſation of ſuch as I think can moſt improve my mind, of whatever denomination they are. I ever muſt ſet the higheſt value upon men of truly great, that is, honeſt principles, with equal capacities. The beſt way I know of overcoming calumny and miſconſtruction, is by a vigorous perſeverance in every thing we know to be right, and a total neglect of all that can enſue from it. It is partly from this maxim that I depend upon your friendſhip, becauſe I believe it will do juſtice to my intention in every thing; and give me leave to tell you, that (as the world goes) this is no ſmall aſſurance I repoſe in you. I am

Your, &c.

Mr.

Mr. Pope to the Earl of Halifax.

My *Lord*,

I am obliged to you both for the favours you have done me, aud for thoſe yon intend me. I diſtruſt neither your will nor your memory, when it is to do good: And if ever I become troubleſome or ſolicitous, it muſt not be out of expectation, but out of gratitude. Your Lordſhip may either cauſe me to live agreeable in the town, or contentedly in the country, which is really all the difference I ſet between an eaſy fortune and a ſmall one. It is indeed a high ſtrain of generoſity in you, to think of making me eaſy all my life, only becauſe I have been ſo happy as to divert you ſome few hours: But if I may have leave to add, it is becauſe you think me no enemy to my native country, there will appear a better reaſon; for I muſt of conſequence be very much (as I ſincerely am)

Your, &c.

Mr. Congreve to Mr. Pope.

I have the pleaſure of your very kind letter. I have always been obliged to you for your friendſhip and concern for me, and am more affected with it, than I will take upon me to expreſs in this letter. I do aſſure you there is no return wanting on my part, and am very ſorry I had not the good luck to ſee the Dean before I left the town: It is a great pleaſure to me, and not a little vanity to think that he miſſes me. As to my health, which you are ſo kind to inquire after, it is not worſe than in London: I am almoſt afraid yet to ſay that it is better, for I cannot reaſonably expect much effect from theſe waters in ſo ſhort a time; but in the main they ſeem to agree with me. Here is not one creature that I know, which, next to the few I would chuſe, contributes very much to my ſatisfaction. At the ſame time that I regret the want of your converſation, I pleaſe myſelf with thinking that you are where you firſt ought to be, and engaged where you cannot do too much. Pray, give my humble ſervice and beſt wiſhes to your good mother. I am ſorry you do not tell me how Mr. Gay does in his health; I ſhould have been glad to have heard he was better.

Your, &c.

Mr.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Fenton.

Sir,

I had not omitted anſwering yours of the 18th of laſt month, but out of a deſire to give you ſome certain and ſatisfactory account, which way, and at what time, you might take your journey. I am now commiſſioned to tell you, that Mr. Craggs will expect you on the riſing of the parliament, which will be as ſoon as he can receive you in the manner he would receive a man *de belles lettres*, that is, in tranquillity and full leiſure. I dare ſay your way of life (which, in my taſte, will be the beſt in the world, and with one of the beſt men in the world) muſt prove highly to your contentment. And, I muſt add, it will be ſtill the more a joy to me, as I ſhall reap a particular advantage from the good I ſhall have done in bringing you together, by ſeeing it in my own neighbourhood. Mr. Craggs has taken a houſe cloſe by mine, whither he propoſes to come in three weeks. In the mean time I heartily invite you to live with me; where a frugal and philiſophical diet, for a time, may give you a higher reliſh of that elegant way of life you will enter into after. I deſire to know by the firſt poſt how ſoon I may hope for you.

I am a little ſcandalized at your complaint that your time lies heavy on your hands, when the Muſes have put ſo many good materials into your head to employ them. As to your queſtion, What I am doing? I anſwer, Juſt what I have been doing ſome years, my duty; ſecondly relieving myſelf with neceſſary amuſements, or exerciſes, which ſhall serve me inſtead of phyſic as long as they can; thirdly, reading till I am tired; and laſtly, writing when I have no other thing in the world to do, or no friend to encertain in company.

My mother is, I thank God, the eaſier, if not the better, for my cares; and I am the happier in that regard, as well as in the conſciouſneſs of doing my beſt. My next felicity is in retaining the good opinion of honeſt men, who think me not quite undeſerving of it; and in finding no injuries from others hurt me, as long as I know myſelf. I will add the ſincerity with which I act towards ingenious and undeſigning men, and which makes me always (even by all natural bond) their friend; therefore believe me very affectionately

Your, &c.

Rev.

Rev. Dean Berckley to Mr. Pope.

I have long had it in my thoughts to trouble you with a letter, but was difcouraged for want of fomething that I could think worth fending fifteen hundred miles. Italy is fuch an exhaufted fubject, that, I dare fay, you would eafily forgive my faying nothing of it: And the imagination of a poet is a thing fo nice and delicate, that it is no eafy matter to find out images capable of giving pleafure to one of the few, who (in any age) have come up to that character. I am neverthelefs lately returned from an ifland, where I paffed three or four months; which, were it fet out in its true colours, might, methinks, amufe you agreeable enough for a minute or two. The ifland Inarime is an epitome of the whole earth, containing within the compafs of eighteen miles, a wonderful variety of hills, vales, ragged rocks, fruitful plains, and barren mountains, all thrown together in a moft romantic confufion. The air is in the hotteft feafon conftantly refrefhed by cool breezes from the fea. The vales produce excellent wheat and Indian corn, but are moftly covered with vineyards intermixed with fruit-trees. Befides the common kinds, as cherries, apricots, peaches &c. they produce oranges, limes, almonds, pomegranates, figs, water-melons, and many other fruits unknown to our climates, which lie every where open to the paffenger. The hills are the greater part covered to the top with vines, fome with chefnut groves, and others with thickets of myrtle and lentifcus. The fields in the northern fide are divided by hedge-rows of myrtle. Several fountains and rivulets add to the beauty of this landfcape, which is likewife fet off by the variety of fome barren fpots, and naked rocks. But that which crowns the fcene, is a large mountain, rifing out of the middle of the ifland (once a terrible volcano,) its lower parts are adorned with vines and other fruits; the middle affords pafture to flocks of goats and fheep; and the top is a fandy pointed rock, from which you have the fineft profpect in the world, furveying at one view, befides feveral pleafant iflands lying at your feet, a tract of Italy about three hundred miles in length, the greateft part of which hath been fung by Homer and Virgil, as making a confiderable part of the travels and adventures of their two heroes. The inhabitants of this delicious ifle, as they are without riches and honours, fo are they without the vices and follies that attend them; and were they but as much ftrangers to revenge,

as they are to avarice and ambition, they might in fact anfwer the poetical notions of the golden age. But they have got, as an alloy to their happinefs, an ill habit of murdering one another on flight offences. We had an inftance of this the fecond night after our arrival, a youth of eighteen being fhot dead by our door: And yet, by the fole fecret of minding our own bufinefs, we found a means of living fecurely among thofe dangerous people. Would you know how we pafs the time at Naples? Our chief entertainment is the devotion of our neighbours: Befides the gaiety of their churches (where folks go to fee what they call *una bella devozione* i. e. a fort of religious opera,) they make fireworks almoft every week, out of devotion; and (what is ftill more ftrange) the ladies invite gentlemen to their houfes, ant treat them with mufic and fweetmeats, out of devotion; in a word, were it not for this devotion of its inhabitants, Naples would have little elfe to recommend it, befide the air and fituation. Learning is in no very thriving ftate here, as indeed no where elfe in Italy; however, among many pretenders, fome men of tafte are to be met with. A friend of mine told me not long fince, that, being to vifit Salvini at Florence, he found him reading your Homer: He liked the notes extremely, and could find no other fault with the verfion, but that he thought it approached too near a paraphrafe; which fhews him not to be fufficiently acquainted with our language. I wifh you health to go on with that noble work, and when you have that, I need not wifh you fuccefs. You will do me the juftice to believe, that whatever relates to your welfare is fincerely wifhed by

Your, &c.

Dr. Atterbury Bifhop of Rochefter to Mr. Pope.

I had much ado to get hither laft night, the water being fo rough that the ferrymen were unwilling to venture. The firft thing I faw this morning after my eyes were open, was your letter, for the freedom and kindnefs of which I thank you. Let all compliments be laid afide between us for the future: and depend upon me as your faithful friend in all things within my power, as one that truly values you, and wifhes you all manner of happinefs. I thank you and Mrs. Pope for my kind reception, which has left a pleafing impreffion upon me, that will not foon be effaced.

Lord

Lord ** has preſſed me terribly to ſee him at **, and told me in a manner betwixt kindneſs and reſentment, that it is but a few miles beyond Twitenham.

I have but a little time left, and a great deal to do in it; and muſt expect that ill health will render a good ſhare of it uſeleſs; and therefore what is likely to be left at the foot of the account, ought by me to be cheriſhed, and not thrown away in compliments. You know the motto of my ſundial, *Vivite, ait, fugio.* I will, as far, as I am able, follow its advice, and cut off all unneceſſary avocations and amuſements. There are thoſe that intend to employ me this winter in a way I do not like. If they perſiſt in their intentions, I muſt apply myſelf to the work they cut out for me, as well as I can. But withall, that ſhall not hinder me from employing myſelf alſo in a way which they do not like. The givers of trouble one day ſhall have their ſhare of it another; that at laſt they may be induced to let me be quiet, and live to myſelf, with the few (the very few) friends I like: For that is the point, the ſingle point, I now aim at: though I know, the generality of the world who are unacquainted with my intentions and views, think the very reverſe of this character belongs to me. I do not know how I have rambled into this account of myſelf; when I ſat down to write, I had no thought of making that any part of my letter.

You might have been ſure without my telling you, that my right-hand is at eaſe; elſe I ſhould not have overflowed at this rate. And yet I have not done; for there is a kind intimation at the end of yours, which I underſtood, becauſe it ſeems to tend towards employing me in ſomething that is agreeable to you. Pray explain yourſelf: and believe, that you have not an acquaintance in the world that would be more in earneſt on ſuch an occaſion than I; for I love you, as well as I eſteem you.

All the while I have been writing, pain, and a fine thruſh have been ſeverally endeavouring to call of my attention; but both in vain: Nor ſhould I yet part with you, but that the turning over a new leaf, frights me a little, and makes me reſolve to break through a new temptation, before it has taken too faſt hold on me.

I am, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Gay.

I am extremely glad to find by a letter of yours to Mr. Fortescue, that you have received one from me; and I beg you to keep, as the greatest of curiosities, that letter of mine which you received, and I never wrote.

But the truth is, that we were made here to expect you in a short time, that I was upon the ramble most part of the summer, and have concluded the season in grief, for the death of my poor father.

I shall not enter into a detail of my concerns and troubles for two reasons; because I am really afflicted and need no airs of grief, and because they are not the concerns and troubles of any but myself. But I think you (without too great a compliment) enough my friend, to be pleased to know he died easily, without a groan, or the sickness of two minutes; in a word, as silently and peacefully as he lived.

I should not forget to acknowledge your letter sent from Aix; you told me then that writing was not good with the waters, and, I find since, you are of my opinion, that it is as bad without the waters. But, I fancy, it is not writing, but thinking, that is so bad with the waters; and then you might write without any manner of prejudice, if you wrote like our brother-poets of these days.

The Duchess, Lord Warwick, Lord Stanhope, Mrs. Bellenden, Mrs. Lepell, and I cannot tell who else, had your letters: Dr. Arbuthnot and I expect to be treated like friends. I would send my services to Mr. Pulteney, but that he is out of favour at court; and make some compliment to Mrs. Pulteney, if she were not a Whig. My Lord Burlington tells me she has much outshined all the French ladies, as she did the English before

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Gay.

No words can tell you the great concern I feel for you; I assure you it was not, and is not lessened, by the immediate apprehension I have now every day lain under of losing my mother. Be assured, no duty less than that should have kept me one day from attending your condition: I would come and take a room by you at Hampstead, to be with you daily, were she not still in danger of death. I have constantly had particular

particular accounts of you from the Doctor, which have not ceased to alarm me yet. God preserve your life, and restore your health. I really beg it for my own sake; for I feel I love you more than I thought in health, though I always loved you a great deal. If I am so unfortunate as to bury my poor mother, and yet have the good fortune to have my prayers heard for you, I hope we may live most of our remaining days together. If, as I believe, the air of a better clime, as the southern part of France, may be thought useful for your recovery, thither I would go with you infallibly; and it is very probable we might get the Dean with us, who is in that abandoned state already in which I shall shortly be, as to other cares and duties. Dear Gay, be as cheerful as your sufferings will permit: God is a better friend than a court; even any honest man is a better. I promise you my entire friendship in all events, heartily praying for your recovery

Your, &c.

Do not write, if you are ever so able: The Doctor tells me all.

Mr. Pope to Dr. Swift.

It is not a time to complain that you have not answered me two letters (in the last of which I was impatient under some fears.) It is not now indeed a time to think of myself, when one of the nearest and longest ties I have ever had, is broken all on a sudden, by the unexpected death of poor Mr. Gay. An inflammatory fever hurried him out of this life in three days. He died last night at nine o'clock, not deprived of his senses entirely at last, and possessing them perfectly till within five hours. He asked of you a few hours before, when in acute torment by the inflammation in his bowels and breast. His effects are in the Duke of Queensberry's custody. His sisters, we suppose, will be his heirs, who are two widows: as yet it is not known whether or no he left a will. — Good God! how often are we to die before we go quite off this stage? In every friend we lose a part of ourselves, and the best part.

I shall never see you now, I believe; one of your principal calls to England is at an end. Indeed he was the most amiable by far; his qualities were the gentlest: But I love you as well and as firmly. Sure, if innocence and integrity can deserve happiness, it must be his. Adieu; I can add nothing but

what you will feel, and diminiſh nothing from it. Yet write to me, and ſoon. Believe no man now living loves you better; I believe no man ever did, than

A. Pope.

Dr. Arbuthnot, whoſe humanity you know, heartily commends himſelf to you. All poſſible diligence and affection has been ſhown, and continued attendance on this melancholy occaſion. Once more adieu, and write to one who is truly diſconſolate.

P. S. by Dr. *Arbuthnot.*

Dear *Sir,*

I am ſorry that the renewal of our correſpondence ſhould be upon ſuch a melancholy occaſion. Poor Mr. Gay died of an inflammation, and, I believe, at laſt a mortification of the bowels. It was the moſt precipitate caſe I ever knew, having cut him off in three days. He was attended by two phyſicians beſides myſelf. I believed the diſtemper mortal from the beginning. I have not had the pleaſure of a line from you theſe two years. I wrote one about your health, to which I had no anſwer. I wiſh you all health and happineſs; being, with great affection and reſpect, Sir,

Your, &c.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

Yours is very full and very kind, it is a friendly and ſatisfactory anſwer, and all I can deſire. Do but inſtantly fulfill it. — Only I hope this will find you before you ſet out. For I think (on all conſiderations) your beſt way will be to take London in your way. It will ſecure you from accidents of weather to travel in the coach, both thither, and from thence hither. But in particular, I think you ſhould take ſome care as to Mr. G's executors. And I am of opinion, no man will be more ſerviceable in ſettling any ſuch accounts than Mr. Knapton, who ſo well knows the trade, and is of ſo acknowledged a credit in it. If you can ſtay but a few days there, I ſhould be glad; though I would not have you omit any neceſſary thing to yourſelf. I wiſh too you would juſt ſee ***, though, when you have paſſed a month here, it will be time enough, for all we have to do in town; and they

they will be leſs buſy, probably, than juſt before the ſeſſion opens, to think of men of letters.

When you are in London, I beg a line from you, in which pray tell us what day you ſhall arrive at Bath by the coach, that we may ſend to meet you, and bring you hither.

You will owe me a real obligation by being made acquainted with the maſter of this houſe; and by ſharing with me, what I think one of the chief ſatisfactions of my life, his friendſhip. But whether I ſhall owe you any in contributing to make me a ſcribler again, I know not.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

I am forced to grow every day more laconic in my letters, for my eyeſight grows every day ſhorter and dimmer. Forgive me then that I anſwer you ſummarily. I can even leſs bear an equal part in a correſpondence than in a converſation with you. But be aſſured once for all, the more I read of you, as the more I hear from you, the better I am inſtructed and pleaſed. And this misfortune of my own dulneſs, and my own abſence, only quickens my ardent wiſh that ſome good fortune would draw you nearer, and enable me to enjoy both, for a greater part of our lives in this neighbourhood; and in ſuch a ſituation, as might make more beneficial friends than I, eſteem and enjoy you equally. — I have again heard from Lord ** and another hand, that the Lord *) I writ to you of, declares an intention to ſerve you. My anſwer (which they related to him) was, that he would be ſure of your acquaintance for life, if once he ſerved or obliged you; but that I was certain you would never trouble him with your expectation, though he would never get rid of your gratitude. — Dear Sir, adieu; and let me be ſometimes certified of your health. My own is as uſual, and my affection the ſame, always yours.

Mr. Pope to Mr. Warburton.

I am ſorry to meet you with ſo bad an account of myſelf, who ſhould otherwiſe with joy have flown to the interview. I am too ill to be in town; and within this week ſo much, as to make my journey thither, at preſent, impracticable, even if there was no proclamation in my way. I left the town in

 a decent

*) Granville.

a decent compliance to that; but this additional prohibition from the higheſt of all powers I muſt bow to without murmuring. I wiſh to ſee you here. Mr. Allen comes not till the 16th; and you will probably chuſe to be in town chiefly while he is there. I received yours juſt now, and I writ to hinder ** from printing the comment on the *uſe of riches* too haſtily, ſince what you write me, intending to have forwarded it otherwiſe, that you might reviſe it during your ſtay. Indeed my preſent weakneſs will make me leſs and leſs capable of any thing. I hope at leaſt, now at firſt, to ſee you for a day or two here at Twitenham, and concert meaſures how to enjoy for the future what I can of your friendſhip.

I am, &c.

A Letter from Abr. Caſtres, Eſq. Envoy Extraordinary to the King of Portugal.

Sir, *Lisbon.* Nov. 6. 1765.

You will, in all likelihood, have heard before this of the inexpreſſible calamity befallen the whole maritime coaſt and in particular this opulent city, now reduced to a heap of rubbiſh & ruins, by a moſt tremendous earthquake on the 1st of this month, followed by a conflagration, which has done ten times more miſchief than the earthquake itſelf. I gave a ſhort account of our misfortune to Sir Benjamin Keene, by a Spaniard, who promiſed, as all intercourſe by poſt was at a ſtand, to carry my letter as far as Badojoz, and ſee it ſafe put into the Poſt-houſe. It was merely to acquaint his Exellency, that, God be praiſed, my houſe ſtood out the ſhocks, tho' greatly damaged; and that happening to be out of the reach of the flames, ſeveral of my friends, burnt out of their houſes, had taken refuge with me, where I have accomodated them, as well as I could, under tents in my large garden; nobody but Lord Charles Douglas, who is actually on board the packet, beſides our chaplain and myſelf, having dared hitherto to ſleep in my houſe ſince the day of our diſaſter.

The conſul and his family have been ſaved, and are all well in a Country houſe near this city. Thoſe with me at preſent, are the Dutch Miniſter, his Lady, and their three Children, with ſeven or eight of their ſervants. The reſt of my company, of the better ſort, conſiſts of ſeveral Merchants of this

this factory, who, for the most part have lost all they had; tho' some, indeed, as Mrs. Purry and Mellish's house, and Mr. Raymond and Mr. Burrell's, have had the good fortune to save their cash, either in whole or in part. The number of dead and wounded I can give no certain account of as yet; in that respect our poor factory has escaped pretty well, considering the number of houses we have here.

I have lost my good and worthy friend the Spanish ambassador, who was crushed under his door, as he attempted to make his escape into the street. This, with the anguish I have been in for these five days past, occasioned by the dismal accounts brought to us every instant of the accidents befallen one or other of our acquaintance among this nobility, who, for the most part, are quite undone, has greatly affected me; but in particular the miserable objects among the lower sort of his majesty's subjects, who all fly to me for bread, and lie scattered up and down in my garden, with their wives and children. I have helped them all hitherto, and shall continue to do so as long as provisions do not fail us, which I hope will not be the case, by the good orders Mr. de Carvalho has issued in that respect. One of our great misfortunes is, that we have neither an English nor Dutch man of war in this harbour. Some of our carpenters and sailors would have been of great use to me on this occasion, in helping to prop up my house; for as the weather, which has hitherto been remarkable fair, seems to threaten us with heavy rains, it will be impossible for the refugees in my garden to hold it out much longer; and how to find room in my house for them all, I am at a loss to devise, for the floors of most of them shake under our feet, and must consequently be too weak to bear any number of fresh inhabitants.

The roads for the first days having been impracticable, it was but yesterday I had the honour, in company with Mr. de la Calmelte of waiting upon the King of Portugal, and all the royal family, at Belem, whom we found encamped, none of the royal palaces being fit to harbour them. Tho' the loss of his most faithful majesty has sustained on this occasion is immense, and his capital city is utterly destroyed, yet he received us with more serenety than we expected; and, among other things, told us, that he owed great thanks to providence for saving his and his family's lives; and that he was extremely glad to see us both safe. The queen in her own name and all the young princesses, sent us word, that they were obliged

to us for our attention, but that being under their tents, and in a drefs not fit to appear in, they defired that for the prefent we would excufe their admitting our compliments in perfon.

Moft of the confiderable families in our factory have already fecured to themfelves a paffage to England by three or four London traders, that are preparing for their departure. As foon as the fatigue and great trouble of mind I have endured for thefe firft days are a little over, I fhall be confidering of fome proper method for fheltering the poorer fort, either by hiring a Portuguefe hulk, or, if that is not to be had, fome Englifh veffel, till they can be fent to England: There are many who defire to remain, in hopes of finding among the ruins fome of the little cafh they may have left in their habitations.

The beft orders have been given for preventing rapine and murders, frequent inftances of which we have had within thefe three day's, there being fwarms of Spanifh deferters in town, who take hold of this opportunity of doing their bufinefs. As I have large fums depofited in my houfe, belonging to fuch of my countrymen as have been happy enough to fave fome of their cafh, and as my houfe was furrounded all night with ruffians, I have this morning written to M. de Carvalho, to defire a guard, which I hope will not be refufed.

We are to have in a day or two a meeting of our fcattered factory at my houfe, to confider of what is beft to be done in our prefent wretched circumftances. I am determined to ftay within call of the diftreffed as long as I can remain on fhore with the leaft appearance of fecurity; and the fame Mr. Hay feemed refolved to do the laft time I conferred with him about it.

I muft humbly beg your pardon, Sir, for the disorder of this letter, furrounded as I am by the many in diftrefs, who from one inftant to another, are applying to me either for advice or fhelter. The packet has been detained at the defire of the factory, till another appears from England, or fome man of war drops in here for the Streights. This will go by the firft of feveral of our merchant fhips bound to England. I muft not forget to acquaint you, that Sir Harry Frankland and lady are fafe and well.

Caftres.

Lord

Lord Littleton to James Boswell Esq.

London, Feb. 21. 1768.

Sir,

I think myſelf greatly obliged to you, and deſire you to accept my moſt grateful thanks, for the valuable preſent you have done me the honour to make me, of your *Account of Corſica*, which has given me the pleaſure of being more perfectly acquainted with the greateſt Character of this age: I had gained ſome knowledge of it, before I ſaw your book, from the letters of another Engliſh gentleman on that ſubject; but you have added many curious and intereſting particulars, which I have read with much delight and admiration. If I were a few years younger, I would go in pilgrimage to Corſica (as you have done) to viſit this living image of ancient virtue and to venerate in the Mind of *Paſcal Paoli* the ſpirit of Timoleon and Epaminondas. But muſt now be content with ſeeing him in your deſcription, the vivacity of which ſhews that your heart is inflamed with the ſame generous paſſion which glows ſo brightly in his wiſh with you, that our government had ſhewn more reſpect for Corſican liberty; and think it diſgraces our Nation, that we do not live in friendſhip with a brave people, engaged in the nobleſt of all conqueſts; a conteſt againſt tyranny! and who have never given us any cauſe of complaint. Beſides ſympathy of ſentiment, which is a natural bond of union, we ought in policy to ſhew as much regard for them, as the Genoeſe their oppreſſors have ſhewn for the French in our late war with that nation. Believe me with ſincere regard and eſteem

Sir

your moſt obedient, and obliged
humble ſervant

Littleton.

DESCRIPTION OF SOME QUADRUPEDS. *)

Animals of the Ape kind are in *Guiana* in greater number and variety, than in any other part of the known world.

 The

*) Bancroft's Eſſay on the Natural Hiſtory of Guiana. London, 1769. 8.

The Orang-Outang in this part of *America* is much larger than either the *African* or *Oriental*, if the accounts of the natives may be relied on; for I do not find that any of them have been ſeen by the White Inhabitants on this coaſt, who never penetrate far into the woods. Theſe animals, in all the different languages of the natives, are called by names ſignifying a Wild man. They are repreſented by the *Indians* as being near five feet in height, maintaining an erect poſition, and having a human form, thinly covered with ſhort black hair; but I ſuſpect that their height has been augmented by the fears of the *Indians*, who greatly dread them, and inſtantly fly as ſoon as one is diſcovered, ſo that none of them have ever been taken alive, much leſs any attempts made for taming them. The *Indians* relate many fabulous ſtories of theſe animals; and, like the inhabitants of *Africa* and the *Eaſt*, aſſert, that they will attack the males, and raviſh the females of the human ſpecies.

The Ape, here called a Quato, is large, and covered all over with long black hair, except the face, which is bald, and wrinkled. The ears are large, and of a human form, the eyes deeply ſunk in their orbits, and the noſe very much reſembling that of a Negro, but ſmaller. The body is near two feet in length, and round the thorax about eighteen inches in circumference. They have neither beard nor tail. Theſe animals are frequently tamed, and in all their actions demonſtrate an uncommon degree of art and dexterity, not without a mixture of that miſchievous ſagacity for which they are remarkable. When their hands or fore feet are tied behind the back, they will walk and run in an erect poſition for a whole day, with the ſame eaſe and familiarity as though they were in their natural poſture. When one of theſe animals is beat, he immediatily runs and climbs a lemon or orange tree; and, if he is purſued, will pick the lemons and oranges, and drop them on the heal of the purſuer, and even endeavour to repel him by voiding his excrements upon him, at the ſame time making a variety of grimaces, and aſſuming a thouſand ridiculous attitudes, which afford no ſmall diverſion to the ſpectators.

The Howling Baboons, as they are here called, ſeem to be the animals which are called by the natives of *Braſil*, Guereba. They are of the ſize of a fox, covered with fine ſmooth hair, of a ſhining black, except on the legs, where it is of a browniſh cheſnut colour. The viſage of this animal is

is erect, and pretty much resembles that of the Quato, but its ears are smaller, the eyes more prominent, and the chin is covered with a long streight black beard. They have a long tail, which is almost naked towards the end, the hair being probably worn off, by frequently clasping round the branches of trees, when they remove from one to another. They are the most numerous and vociferous of all the Monkey tribe, and frequently assemble by hundreds, both by night and day, and set up an incessant loud and disagreable howling, which is heard at a great distance, and is not a little troublesome to the inhabitants. Sometimes the howling is kept up only by one for several minutes, until the rest join in the chorus; but these intermissions are not very frequent, as they seem to abhor taciturnity at these assemblies, and are unwilling to deny themselves the pleasure of contributing a share to this noisy entertainment. Besides these, there is another Monkey, somewhat larger than the howling Monkey, which is covered with long reddish hair, having large ears, a long red beard, and a long bushy tail. These animals, if possible, make a more hideous yell than the former; but happily their meetings are less frequent.

As the Orang-Outang is the largest, so the Saccawinkee is the smallest of the Ape tribe in *Guiana*. Its name is of *Indian* origin, though it has been adopted by the White Inhabitants. The body of a Saccawinkee, from the head to the root of the tail, is about six inches in length: the tail is about nine inches long, and covered with very long black hair: the head is small, as are the ears, which are almost round; the nose is slender and flat, and the eyes somewhat prominent, and of a shining black colour: the face is covered with a fine white downy hair, and the body is cloathed with long hair, of a shining black, except at the points, where it is white. These animals are frequently tamed, and their tricks and gestures are not a little diverting; but they can never be divested of a mischievous disposition, for which they are remarkable, and which seems constitutional.

Between the Quato and Saccawinkee there are numerous species of these animals, of intermediate sizes, of which it would be impossible to convey distinct ideas by verbal descriptions, were I able to give them; but notwithstanding I have resided in *Guiana* near three years, I can by no means pretend to have seen all the different species of these animals, almost every day presenting a different kind to my observation, either

in poſſeſſion of the *Indians*, or in the woods, where they are ſo numerous, that ſcores are often in view at once. Nor are theſe animals a little troubleſome, as they frequently rob the plantations of fruit, maize, rice, &c. Theſe expeditions they untertake with great ſagacity, ever uſing the precaution to place a centinel on a commodious high tree, to announce the approach of an enemy; a duty to which, it is ſaid, they ſubmit alternately; and that when they are ſurprized through the negligence or inattention of their centinel, they puniſh him ſeverely.

*) There is a ſort of BABOON at the *Cape of Good Hope*, with a head reſembling that of a Dog, with very ugly and frightful features. However the fore part of the body much reſembles that of a man; but the teeth are large and ſharp. The fore feet are very like hands; and thoſe behind reſemble mens. Their whole body is covered with hair, except the thighs, which are quite bare, and full of ſcratches.

When they are in great diſtreſs, that is, when they are hunted by Dogs, or are beaten for any fault, they ſigh, groan, and weep, like human creatures in a fright, or that are in great pain. They are very fond of grapes, apples, and all ſorts of fruit in general that grow in the gardens. When they get into a vineyard where the grapes are ripe, they fill themſelves ſo immoderately with them, that they may be eaſily taken. Their fingers are armed with nails and claws that render them formidable to Dogs, which for that reaſon cannot eaſily take them. When they perceive any paſſenger in the fields that is obliged to dine in the open air, he muſt be very attentive, otherwiſe they will certainly carry off ſome of his victuals. If they ſucceed they make ſo many grimaces, and put themſelves into ſuch ridiculous poſtures, that a man muſt be very melancholy indeed to forbear laughing at them.

Theſe animals are under ſome ſort of diſcipline, and go about what they undertake with ſuch ſkill, cunning, and foreſight, that are very wonderful. As for inſtance when they rob an orchard, a garden, or a vineyard. They go upon theſe expeditions in large companies, and part of them enter the incloſure while one is ſet to watch; and the reſt ſtand without the fence, and form a ſort of a line, which runs from the place they are pillaging to that of their rendevous. Every thing

*) R. Brookes's M. D. Natural Hiſtory of Qoadrupeds, with cuts. London 1763. 6 Vol. 8.

thing being thus diſpoſed, the Baboons within the orchard, throw the fruit to thoſe that are without as faſt as they gather it; or if the hedge or wall be high, to thoſe that ſit thereon, who deliver them to thoſe without; and ſo on all along the line, which uſually terminates in ſome mountain. They catch the fruit as readily as the moſt ſkilful player can a ball. While this is doing they keep a deep ſilence, and perform their work extremely quick. When the centinel perceives any one coming he ſets up a great cry, and at this ſignal the whole company diſappear in an inſtant. The *Dutch* at the *Cape* ſometimes take the young ones of theſe Baboons, and feed them with Goat's or Sheep's milk. When they are tamed and grown up, they watch the houſe as carefully as the beſt Dog in *Europe*.

The *American* BEAVER, is now better known than the others, for of this we have a very exact deſcription from the *Memoirs of the Royal Academy at Paris*. The hair which covers the whole body, except the tail, is not alike throughout; for there are two ſorts mixed together, which differ not only in length, but in colour and thickneſs. Part of it is about an inch and a half long, and as thick as the hair of a man's head, very ſhining, and of a brown colour, inclining ſomewhat to a tawney. It is of a cloſe ſubſtance, and ſo ſolid, that no cavity can be perceived with a microſcope.

The ſhorteſt is about an inch long, and is in greater plenty than the European; it is likewiſe more ſmall and ſoft, inſomuch, that it feels almoſt like ſilk. This difference of the hair or fur, is to be met with in ſeveral animals; but more particularly in the Beaver, the Otter, and the Wild Boar; which perhaps may be the more neceſſary for theſe creatures, becauſe they delight in muddy places, and the longeſt hair may ſerve to keep the mud from penetrating to the ſkin.

The head from the noſe to the hind part, is five inches and a half long, and five inches broad from the prominence of the two cheek bones. The ears are like thoſe of an Otter, being round, and very ſhort: They are covered with hair on the outſide, but are almoſt naked within.

It is commonly ſaid that theſe animals delight in gnawing of trees, and in reality, the teeth ſeem to be very proper for that purpoſe, eſpecially thoſe before; but they are not ſharp pointed to ſerve inſtead of a ſaw, as ſome have affirmed, or at leaſt, they are not ſo in the *American* Beaver; but they are proper to cut with, like thoſe of Squirrels, Porcupines, and Rats.

The

The ſtructure of the feet is very extraordinary, and ſhew plainly, that nature deſigned theſe animals to live as well in the water as on the land. For though they have four feet like terreſtial animals; yet thoſe behind are as fit for ſwimming as walking, and the five toes of which they conſiſt, are joined together like thoſe of a Gooſe; but in ſhape, they are like the hand of a man, only they are covered with hair on the outſide, and the nails are long and ſharp. Many authors have ſaid, that the Beaver in moſt things reſembles an Otter; but now it plainly appears they were miſtaken. The *Academiſts* of *Paris* ſuppoſe, that this error may have ariſen from their having ſeen the Beavers of *Europe* only; becauſe as they affirm, the *European* are webfooted before like Geeſe; whereas thoſe of *America* are only ſo in their hind feet; and therefore, the account of *Geſner*, muſt have been taken partly from theſe laſt.

The length of the fore feet is ſix inches and a half from the elbow to the end of the longeſt finger, and three inches from the beginning of the hand to the ſame extremity. The hind feet are the longeſt, being ſix inches from the extremity of the heel to the end of the longeſt toe, which is the ſecond. Beſides the five fingers and toes which have nails at the end, are a little ſlanting in their ſhape, and hollow in the inſide like quills, there is on the external part of each foot both before and behind, a little bone which makes a protuberance, and might be taken for a ſixth finger if it had been ſeparated from the foot; but as it is not, it ſeems to be deſigned to give more firmneſs and ſtrength thereto.

The tail has ſomewhat that reſembles a fiſh, and ſeems to have no manner of relation to the reſt of the body, which is like that of a land animal. It is covered with a ſkin, furniſhed with ſcales that are joined together by a pellicle. Theſe ſcales are of the thickneſs of parchment, above a line and a half in length, and generally of the figure of a hexagon, having ſix corners. Thoſe under the tail differ but little from thoſe above, except in having two or three little hairs on each. The colour is of a greyiſh brown, inclining a little to that of ſlate. When the ſkin of a Beaver is dreſſed, the ſcales fall off, but leave their print behind them. When the tail was diſſected the fleſh was pretty flat, and was not unlike that of large fiſh. It is about eleven inches in length, and at the root not above two broad; but it grows broader as it approaches the middle, where it is three inches, and then it grows leſs again

to

to the end, where it terminates in an oval. It is about two inches thick near the root; but grows gradually thinner to the very end; infomuch, that it is no more than an inch thick in the middle, and not quite half one at the extremity.

Several writers have taken notice of the ingenuity of *American* Beavers in making their houfes, of which I fhall now give fome account. The firft thing they do when they are about to build, is to affemble in companies, fometimes of two or three hundred together; then they chufe a place where plenty of provifions are to be had, and where all neceffaries are to be found proper for their ufe. Their houfes are always in the water, and when they can find neither lake nor pond, they endeavour to fupply that defect by ftopping the current of a brook or fmall river, by means of a dam. To this end they firft cut down trees in the following manner: Three or four Beavers will go to work about a large tree, and by continually gnawing of it with their teeth, they at laft throw it down, and fo contrive matters that it always falls towards the water, that they may have the lefs way to carry it, when they have divided it into pieces. After they have done this, they take each piece by itfelf, and roll it towards the water, where they intend to place it.

Thefe pieces are more or lefs thick and long, according to the nature and fituation of the places where they are required. Sometimes they make ufe of the large trunks of trees, which they lay down flat; fometimes the dam only confifts of branches as thick as one's thigh, which are fupported by ftakes interwoven with the branches of trees; and all the vacant places are filled up with a fort of clay, in fuch a manner, that no water can pafs through them. They prepare the clay with their paws or hands, and their tails ferve inftead of a carriage, as well as a trowel to lay on their clay.

The foundations of the dams are generally ten or twelve feet thick, and they leffen gradually till they come to two or three. They always obferve an exact proportion, infomuch, that the moft curious architects are not capable of performing their work more regularly. That fide towards the current of the water is always floping, but the other is perpendicular.

The conftruction of the houfes is altogether as wonderful; for they are generally built upon piles in fmall lakes, which are formed by making of the dams. Sometimes they are on the bank of a river, or on the extremity of a point of land,

which

which advances into the water. They are of a round or oval form, and the top of them is like a dome.

This description of one of their houses which was examined and measured, will perhaps give the reader more satisfaction than an account in general. This of which I am now speaking, was about three parts surrounded with water, and the other part was joined to the land. It was round, with an oval dome at the top, and the height above the surface of the water, was eight feet. It was about forty feet in diameter, and one hundred and twenty in circumference, which perhaps may seem strange, because the proportion is geometrical; this however, is fact for it was measured several times. The part that joined to the bank was not made out of it, but was of the same materials with the rest.

The bottom of the house was of earth, or soil, with pieces of wood laid in it, above three inches in circumference; then a parcel of poplar sticks laid with one end in the house, and another slanting a long way under water; then a layer of earth again, and then poplar sticks, which were repeated to the height of eighteen inches. From thence to the top of the house there was a mixture of earth, stones, and sticks, curiously put together; and the whole was covered with sods, that had long grass growing thereon. The largest pieces of wood made use of near the top, were about three inches in diameter, and all the rest was small stuff, not above two or three fingers thick.

The outermost part of this house did not stand farther out in the creek than the edge of the shore; but that which brought the water almost round the house were the trenches, which were made by taking out the earth; these were nine feet in the broadest part, and eighteen feet in length. The creek at the front of the house was six and thirty feet broad, and seemed to be pretty deep. The house was so contrived as to be very solid, for there was no breaking into it without an ax; and in the frosty season it was quite impenetrable. From this house there were several paths into the wood, through which they drew the sticks and trees, which they made use of for food or building.

The wall of the house was two feet thick, and it was covered with smooth clay on the inside in such a manner, that it would not admit the least breath of air. Two thirds of the structure was out of the water; and in the upper part, each Beaver had his particular place, whereon leaves were strewed to lie upon.

There

There never was any filth feen in any of thefe houfes, which are made like an oven in the infide, with a paffage for thefe animals to go and bathe in the water. One of thefe will generally lodge about eight or ten Beavers, though fometimes they have held thirty; but this is very uncommon.

The creatures are never furprized by the froft and fnow; for they finifh their work towards the end of *September*, and then they lay in provifions for the winter. In the fummer time they live upon fruits, and the barks and leaves of trees; and they likewife catch fmall fifh, and particularly Crabs or Crawfifh. However, their winter provifion is the tender branches of trees, particularly poplar, of which they feem to be very fond. It is ufually faid, and upon pretty good authority, that thefe Beavers make the walls of their houfes of a thicknefs, in proportion to the feverity of the fucceeding winter, which if true, thefe animals muft be furnifhed with uncommon forefight.

When there are great floods caufed by the melting of the fnow, which damage the houfes of the Beavers, they then leave them, and fhift for themfelves as well as they can; however, the females return as foon as the waters are abated; but the males keep the field till *July*, when they affemble again to repair the damage that has been done by the flood, either to their houfes or dams. When any of their houfes are demolifhed by the hunters, they never repair them again, but build others quite new. Several authors have faid, that the Beavers make feveral rooms in their houfes; but this upon examination has been found to be falfe.

In hunting the Beavers, the favages fometimes fhoot them, always getting on the contrary fide of the wind; for they are very fhy, quick in hearing, and of a very keen fcent. This is generally done when the Beavers are at work, or on fhore feeding on poplar bark. If they hear any noife when at work, they immediately jump into the water, and continue there fome time; and when they rife, it is at a diftance from the place where they went in.

They fometimes are taken with traps; thefe are nothing but poplar fticks laid in a path near the water; which when the Beaver begins to feed upon, they caufe a large log of wood to fall upon their necks, which is put in motion by their moving of the fticks; and confequently requires an ingenious contrivance. The favages generally prefer this way of taking them, becaufe it does not damage their fkins.

In the winter time they break the ice in two places at a diſtance from the houſe, the one behind the other. Then they take away the broken ice with a kind of a racket, the better to ſee where to place their ſtakes. They faſten their nets to theſe, which have large meſhes, and ſometimes are eighteen or twenty yards in length. When theſe are fixed, they proceed to demoliſh the houſe, and turn a Dog therein, which terrifying the Beaver he immediately leaves it, and takes to the water, after which, he is ſoon entangled by the net.

Mr. *Lawſon* who was general ſurveyor of *North Carolina*, affirms, that Beavers are very plenty in that country. He confirms what has been ſaid about their ingenuity in building of their dams and houſes, and obſerves, that their food is chiefly the barks of trees and ſhrubs; ſuch as that of the ſaſſafras, aſh, ſweet gum, and ſeveral others. He adds, that if they are taken young, they will become very tame; but then they will do a great deal of miſchief in the orchards, by breaking the trees. They will likewiſe block up the doors of the houſes in the night, with the ſticks and wood which they bring thither. He farther informs us, that it is certain death for them to eat any thing that is ſalt. The fleſh is looked upon as very delicate food; but the tail is the greateſt dainty, and is in great requeſt.

SOME CHAPTERS OUT OF THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES A FOUNDLING *)

Book IV. Chap. 4. 8 and 10.

This matter, then, which put an end to the debate mentioned in the laſt chapter, was no other than a quarrel between Maſter Blifil and Tom Jones, the conſequence of which had been a bloody noſe to the former; for though Mr. Blifil, notwithſtanding he was the younger, was in ſize above other's match, yet Tom was much his ſuperior at the noble art of boxing.

Tom, however, cautiouſly avoided all engagements with that youth; for beſides that Tommy Jones was an inoffenſive lad admiſt all his roguery, and really lowed Blifil, Mr. Thwakum being always the ſecond of the latter, would have been ſufficient to deter him. But

*) The Works of Henry Fielding Eſq. Vol. 12. London 1783. 8. The Hiſtory of Tom Jones, Vol. 4. Dresden 1774.

But well says a certain Author, no man is wise at all hours; it is therefore no wonder that a boy is not so. A difference arising at play between the two lads, Mr. Blifil called Tom a beggarly bastard. Upon which the latter, who was somewhat passionate in his disposition, immediately caused that phænomenon in the face of the former, which we have above remembered.

Mr. Blifil now, with his blood running from his nose, and the tears galloping after from his eyes, appeared before his uncle and the tremendous Thwackum; in which court an indictment of assault, battery, and wounding, was instantly prefered against Tom; who, in his excuse, only pleaded the provocation, which was indeed all the matter that Mr. Blifil had omitted.

It is indeed possible, that this circumstance might have escaped his memory; for, in his reply, he positively insisted, that he had made use of no such appellation; adding. "Heaven "forbid such naughty words should ever come out of his "mouth.,,

Tom, though against all form of law, rejoined in affirmance of the words. Upon which Mr. Blifil said. "It is no "wonder; those who will tell one fib, will hardly stick at "another. If I had told my master such a wicked fib as you "have done, I should be ashamed to shew my face.,,

"What fib, child.,, cries Thwackum, pretty eagerly.

"Why, he told you that nobody was with him ashooting, "when he killed the partridge; but he knows, (here he burst "into a flood of tears) yes, he knows; for he confessed it to "me. that Black George the gamekeeper was there. Nay, "he said, — yes you did, — deny it if you can, that "you would not have confessed the truth, tho' master had cut "you to pieces.,,

At this the fire flashed from Thwackum's eyes, and he cried out in triumph, "Oh! oh this is your mistaken notion "of honour! this is the boy who was not to be whipped "again! But Mr. Allworthy, with a more gentle aspect, turned towards the lad, and said, "Is this true, child! How "came you to persist so obstinately in a falsehood?,,

Tom said, "He scorned a lie as much as any one; but "he thought his honour engaged him to act as he did; for "he had promised the poor fellow to conceal him: which,,, he said, "he thought himself farther obliged to, as the "gamekeeper had begged him, not to go into the gentleman's

"manor, and had at laſt gone himſelf in compliance with his "perſuaſions.,, He ſaid, this was the whole truth of the matter, and he would take his oath of it; and concluded with very paſſionately begging Mr. Allworthy, "to have "compaſſion on the poor fellow's family, eſpecially as he "himſelf only had been guilty, and the other had been very "difficultly prevailed on to do what he did. Indeed, Sir,, ſaid he, "it could hardly be called a lie that I told; for the "poor fellow was entirely innocent of the whole matter. I "ſhould have gone alone after the birds; nay, I did go at "firſt, and he only followed me to prevent more miſchief. "Do, pray Sir, let me be puniſhed; take my little horſe "away again; but pray, Sir, forgive poor George.,,

Mr. Allworthy heſitated a few moments, and then diſmiſſed the boys, adviſing them to live more friendly and peaceably together.

The reader may remember, that Mr. Allworthy gave Tom Jones a little horſe, as a kind of ſmart-money for the puniſhment which he imagined he had ſuffered innocently.

This horſe Tom kept above half a year, and then rode him to a neighbouring fair, and ſold him.

At his return, being queſtioned by Thwackum, what he hat done with the money for which the horſe was ſold, he frankly declared he would not tell him.

"Oho!,, ſays Thwackum, "you will not! then I will "have it out of your br—h;,, that being the place to which he always applied for information on every doubtful occaſion.

Tom was now mounted on the back of a footman, and every thing prepared for execution, when Mr. Allworthy entering the room, gave the criminal a reprieve, and took him with him into another apartment; where being alone with Tom, he put the ſame queſtion to him which Thwackum had before aſked him.

Tom anſwered, he could in duty refuſe him nothing; but as for that tyrannical raſcal, he would never make him any other anſwer than with a cudgel, with which he hoped ſoon to be able to pay him for all his barbarities.

Mr. Allworthy very ſeverely reprimanded the lad, for his indecent and diſreſpectful expreſſions concerning his maſter, but much more for his avowing an intention of revenge. He threatned him with the entire loſs of his favour, if he ever heard

heard ſuch another word from his mouth; for he ſaid he would never ſupport or befriend a reprobate. By theſe and the like declarations, he extorted ſome compunction from Tom, in in which that youth was not over ſincere: for he really meditated ſome return for all the ſmarting favours he had received at the hands of the pedagogue. He was, however, brought by Mr. Allworthy to expreſs a concern for his reſentment againſt Thwackum; and then the good man, after ſome wholeſome admonition, permitted him to proceed, which he did, as follows.

"Indeed, my dear Sir, I love and honour you more than "all the world: I know the great obligations I have to you, "and ſhould deteſt myſelf, if I thought my heart was capable "of ingratitude. Could the little horſe you gave me ſpeak, "I am ſure he could tell you how fond I was of your preſent: "for I had more pleaſure in feeding him than in riding him. "Indeed, Sir, it went to my heart to part with him; nor "would I have ſold him upon any other account in the world "than what I did. You yourſelf, Sir, I am convinced, in "my caſe, would have done the ſame; for none ever ſo "ſenſibly felt the misfortunes of others. What would you feel, "dear Sir, if you thought yourſelf the occaſion of them! — "Indeed, Sir, there never was any miſery like theirs. — "Like whoſe, child?,, ſays Allworthy: "What do you "mean? Oh, Sir,,, anſwered Tom, "your poor game-"keeper, with all his large family, ever ſince you diſcharged "him, have been periſhing with all the miſeries of cold and "hunger, I could not bear to ſee theſe poor wretches naked "and ſtarving, and at the ſame time know myſelf to have been "the occaſion of all their ſufferings. — I could not bear it, "Sir, upon my ſoul, I could not.,, (Here the tears run down his cheeks, and he thus proceeded:) "It was to ſave "them from abſolute deſtruction, I parted with your dear "preſent, notwithſtanding all the value I had for it: — I "ſold the horſe for them, and they have every farthing of "the money.,,

Mr. Allworthy now ſtood ſilent for ſome moments, and before he ſpoke the tears ſtarted from his eyes. He at length diſmiſſed Tom with a gentle rebuke, adviſing him for the future to apply to him in caſes of diſtreſs, rather than to uſe extraordinary means of relieving them himſelf.

This affair was afterwards the ſubject of much debate between Thwackum and Square. Thwackum held, that this

was flying in Mr. Allworthy's face, who had intended to puniſh the fellow for his diſobedience. He ſaid, in ſome inſtances, what the world called charity appeared to him to be oppoſing the will of the Almighty, which had marked ſome particular perſons for deſtruction; and that this was, in like manner, acting in oppoſition to Mr. Allworthy; conclud-ing, as uſual, with a hearty recommendation of birch.

Square argued ſtrongly on the other ſide, in oppoſition perhaps to Thwackum, or in compliance with Mr. Allworthy, who ſeemed very much to approve what Jones had done. As to what he urged on this occaſion, as I am convinced moſt of my readers will be much abler advocates for poor Jones, it would be impertinent to relate it. Indeed it was not difficult to reconcile to the rule of right an action which it would ha-ve been impoſſible to deduce from the rule of wrong.

Soon after this, an action was brought againſt the game-keeper by Squire Weſtern (the gentleman in whoſe manor the partridge was killed,) for depredations of the like kind. This was a moſt unfortunate circumſtance for the fellow, as it not only of itſelf threatened his ruin, but actually prevented Mr. Allworthy from reſtoring him to his favour: for as that gentleman was walking out one evening with Mr. Blifil and young Jones, the latter ſlily drew him to the habitation of Black George; where the family of that poor wretch, namely, his wife and children, were found in all the miſery with which cold, hunger and nakedneſs, can affect human crea-tures: for as to the money they had received from Jones, former debts had conſumed almoſt the whole.

Such a ſcene as this could not fail of affecting the heart of Mr. Allworthy. He immediately gave the mother a couple of guineas, with which he bid her cloath her children. The poor woman burſt into tears at this goodneſs, and while ſhe was thanking him, could not refrain from expreſſing her gra-titude to Tom; who had, ſhe ſaid, long preſerved both her and hers from ſtarving. "We have not," ſays ſhe, "had a "morſel to eat, nor have theſe poor children had a rag to "put on, but what his goodneſs had beſtowed on us." For, indeed, beſides the horſe and Bible, Tom had ſacrificed a nightgown and other things to the uſe of this diſtreſſed family.

On their return home Tom made uſe of all his eloquence to diſplay the wretchedneſs of theſe people, and the penitence of Black George himſelf; and in this he ſucceeded ſo well, that Mr. Allworthy ſaid, He thought the man had ſuffered enough for what was paſt; that he would forgive him, and think of ſome means of providing for him and his family.

Jones was ſo delighted with his news, that tho' it was dark when they returned home, he could not help going back a mile, in a ſhower of rain, to acquaint the poor woman with the glad tidings; but, like other haſty divulgers of news, he only brought on himſelf the trouble of contradicting it: for the ill fortune of Black George made uſe of the very opportunity of his friend's abſence to overturn all again.

Mr. Blifil fell very ſhort of his companion in the amiable quality of mercy; but he as greatly exceeded him in one of a much higher kind, namely, in juſtice; in which he followed both the precepts and examples of Thwackum and Square; for though they would both make frequent uſe of the word Mercy, yet it was plain, that, in reality, Square held it to be inconſiſtent with the rule of right; and Thwackum was for doing juſtice, and leaving mercy to Heaven. The two gentlemen did indeed ſomewhat differ in opinion concerning the objects of this ſublime virtue; by which Thwackum would probably have deſtroyed one half of mankind, and Square the other half.

Mr. Blifil, then, though he had kept ſilence in the preſence of Jones, yet when he had better conſidered the matter, could by no means endure the thoughts of ſuffering his uncle to confer favours on the undeſerving. He therefore reſolved immediately to acquaint him with the fact which we have above ſlightly hinted to the readers; the truth of which was as follows:

The gamekeeper, about a year after he was diſmiſſed from Mr. Allworthy's ſervice, and before Tom's ſelling the horſe, being in want of bread, either to fill his own mouth, or thoſe of his family, as he paſſed through a field belonging to Mr. Weſtern, eſpied a hare ſitting in her form: this hare he had baſely and barbarouſly knocked on the head, againſt the laws of ſportsmen.

The higler, to whom the hare was ſold, being unfortunately taken many months after with a quantity of game

upon him, was obliged to make his peace with the Squire, by becoming evidence againſt ſome poacher. And now Black George was pitched upon by him, as being a perſon already obnoxious to Mr. Weſtern, and one of no good fame in the country. He was, beſides, the beſt ſacrifice the higler could make, as he had ſupplied him with no game ſince; and, by this means, the witneſs had an opportunity of ſcreening his better cuſtomers; for the Squire, being charmed with the power of puniſhing Black George, whom a ſingle tranſgreſſion was ſufficient to ruin, made no further enquiry.

Had this fact been truly laid before Mr. Allworthy, it might probably have done the gamekeeper very little miſchief; but there is no zeal blinder than that which is inſpired with the love of juſtice againſt offenders. Mr. Blifil had forgot the diſtance of the time. He varied likewiſe in the manner of the fact: and, by the haſty addition of the ſingle letter S, he conſiderably altered the ſtory; for he ſaid that George had wired hares. Theſe alterations might probably have been ſet right, had not Mr. Blifil unluckily inſiſted on a promiſe of ſecrecy from Mr. Allworthy, before he revealed the matter to him; but, by that means, the poor gamekeeper was condemned, without having any opportunity to defend himſelf; for as the fact of killing the hare, and of the action brought, were certainly true, Mr. Allworthy had no doubt concerning the reſt.

Short-lived then was the joy of theſe poor people; for Mr. Allworthy, the next morning, declared he had freſh reaſon, without aſſigning it, for his anger, and ſtrictly forbade Tom to mention George any more; though, as for his family, he ſaid, he would endeavour to keep them from ſtarving; but as to the fellow himſelf, he would leave him to the laws, which nothing could keep him from breaking.

Tom could by no means divine what had incenſed Mr. Allworthy; for of Mr. Blifil he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion. However, as his friendſhip was to be tired out by no diſappointments, he now determined to try another method of preſerving the poor gamekeeper from ruin.

Jones was lately grown very intimate with Mr. Weſtern. He had ſo greately recommended himſelf to that gentleman, by leaping over five-barred gates, and by other acts of ſportſmanſhip, that the Squire had declared Tom would certainly make a great man, if he had but ſufficient encouragement. He often wiſhed he had himſelf a ſon with ſuch parts;

parts; and one day very ſolemnly aſſerted at a drinking bout, that Tom ſhould hunt a pack of hounds for a thouſand pounds of his money, with any huntſman in the whole country.

By ſuch kind of talents he had ſo ingratiated himſelf with the Squire, that he was a moſt welcome gueſt at his table, and a favourite companion in his ſport: every thing which the Squire held moſt dear, to wit, his guns, dogs, and horſes, were now as much at the command of Jones, as if they had been his own. He reſolved, therefore, to make uſe of this favour on behalf of his friend Black George whom, he hoped to introduce into Mr. Weſtern's family, in the ſame capacity in which he had before ſerved Mr. Allworthy.

The reader, if he conſiders that this fellow was already obnoxious to Mr. Weſtern, and if he conſiders farther the weighty buſineſs by which that gentleman's diſpleaſure had been, incurred, will, perhaps, condemn this as a fooliſh and deſperate undertaking; but if he ſhould totally condemn young Jones on that account, he will greatly applaud him for ſtrenghtening himſelf with all imaginable intereſt on ſo arduous an occaſion.

For this purpoſe, then, Tom applied to Mr. Weſtern's daughter, a young lady of about ſeventeen years of age, whom her father, next after thoſe neceſſary implements of ſport juſt before mentioned, loved and eſteemed above all the world. Now, as ſhe had ſome influence on the Squire, ſo Tom had ſome little influence on her. But this being the intended heroine of this work, a lady with whom we ourſelves are greatly in love, and with whom many of our readers will, probably, be in love too before we part, it is by no means proper ſhe ſhould make her appearance in the end of a book.

Book IV. Chap. III.

Wherein the hiſtory goes back to commemorate a trifling incident that happened ſome years ſince; but which, trifling as it was, had ſome future conſequence.

The amiable Sophia was now in her eighteenth year, when ſhe is introduced into this hiſtory. Her father, as hath been ſaid, was fonder of her than of any other human creature. To her, therefore, Tom Jones applied, in order to engage her intereſt on the behalf of his friend the gamekeeper.

But before we proceed to this buſineſs, a ſhort recapitulation of ſome previous matters may be neceſſary.

Though the different tempers of Mr. Allworthy and of Mr. Weſtern did not admit of a very intimate correſpondence, yet they lived upon what is called a decent footing together; by which means the young people of both families had been acquainted from their infancy: and as they were all near of the ſame age, had been frequent play-mates together.

The gaiety of Tom's temper ſuited better with Sophia than the grave and ſober diſpoſition of Mr. Blifil. And the preference which ſhe gave the former of theſe would often appear ſo plainly, that a lad of a more paſſionate turn than Mr. Blifil was, might have ſhewn ſome diſpleaſure at it.

As he did not, however, outwardly expreſs any ſuch diſguſt, it would be an ill office in us to pay a viſit to the inmoſt receſſes of his mind, as ſome ſcandalous people ſearch into the moſt ſecret affairs of their friends, and often pry into their cloſets and cupboards, only to diſcover their proverty and meanneſs to the world.

However, as perſons who ſuſpect they have given others cauſe of offence, are apt to conclude they are offended; ſo Sophia imputed an action of Mr. Blifil to his anger, which the ſuperior ſagacity of Thwackum and Square diſcerned to have ariſen from a much better principle.

Tom Jones, when very young, had preſented Sophia with a little bird, which he had taken from the neſt, had nurſed up, and taught to ſing.

Of this bird, Sophia, then about thirteen years old, was ſo extremely fond, that her chief buſineſs was to feed and tend it, and her chief pleaſure to play with it. By theſe means little Tommy, for ſo the bird was called, was become ſo tame, that it would feed out of the hand of its miſtreſs, would perch upon her finger, and ly contented in her boſom, where it ſeemed almoſt ſenſible of its own happineſs; though ſhe always kept a ſmall ſtring about its leg, nor would ever truſt it with the liberty of flying away.

One day, when Mr. Allworthy and his whole family dined at Mr. Weſterns, Mr. Blifil, being in the garden with little Sophia, and obſerving the extreme fondneſs that ſhe ſhewed for her little bird, deſired her to truſt it for a moment in his hands. Sophia preſently complied with the young gentleman's requeſt, and after ſome previous caution, delivered him her bird; of which he was no ſooner in poſſeſſion, than he ſlipt the ſtring from its leg, and toſſed it into the air.

The

The foolish animal no sooner preceived itself at liberty, than forgetting all the favours it had received from Sophia, it flew directly from her, and perched on a bough at some distance.

Sophia, seeing her bird gone, screamed out so loud, that Tom Jones, who was at a little distance, immediately ran to her assistance.

He was no sooner informed of what had happened, than he cursed Blifil for a pitiful, malicious rascal; and then immediately stripping of his coat, he applied himself to climbing the tree to which the bird escaped.

Tom had almost recovered his little namesake, when the branch on which it was perched, and that hung over a canal, broke, and the poor lad plumped over head and ears into the water.

Sophia's concern now changed its object. And as she apprehended the boy's life was in danger, she screamed ten times louder than before; and indeed Mr. Blifil himself now seconded her with all the vociferation in his power.

The company, who were sitting in a room next the garden, were instantly alarmed, and came all forth; but just as they reached the canal, Tom (for the water was luckily pretty shallow in that part) arrived safely on shore.

Thwackum fell violently on poor Tom, who stood droping and shivering before him, when Mr. Allworthy desired him to have patience, and turning to Mr. Blifil, said, Pray, child, what is the reason of all this disturbance?

Mr. Blifil answered, "Indeed, uncle, I am very sorry for "what I have done; I have been unhappily the occasion of it "all. I had Miss Sophia's bird in my hand, and thinking "the poor creature languished for liberty, I own I could not "forbear giving it what it desired; for I always thought there "was something very cruel in confining any thing. It seemed "to be against the law of nature, by which every thing hath "a right to liberty; nay, it is even unchristian; for it is "not doing what we would be done by. But if I had "imagined Miss Sophia would have been so much concerned "at it, I am sure I would never have done it; nay, if I had "known what would have happened to the bird itself: for "when Mr. Jones, who climbed up that tree after it, fell "into the water, the bird took a second flight, and presently "a nasty hawk carried it away.,,

Poor

Poor Sophia, who now firſt heard of her little Tommy's fate, (for her concern for Jones had prevented her perceiving it when it happened), ſhed a ſhower of tears. Theſe Mr. Allworthy endeavoured to aſſuage, promiſing her a much finer bird: but ſhe declared ſhe would never have another. Her father chid her for crying ſo for a fooliſh bird; but could not help telling young Blifil, if he was a ſon of his, his backſide ſhould be well flea'd.

Sophia now returned to her chamber, the two young gentlemen were ſent home, and the reſt of the company returned to their bottle; where a converſation enſued on the ſubject of the bird, ſo curious, that we think it deſerves a chapter by itſelf.

OBSERVATIONS ON THE PRESENT STATE OF THE EAST-INDIA COMPANY. *)

The Company's affairs, until about the year 1750, required little more than commercial talents; the produce of our own country was carried there, ſold, and returned in the manufactures of thoſe parts; and the little ſpots we poſſeſſed excited no jealouſies amongſt the neighbouring princes.

The French, under Dupleix, firſt opened the way to acquiring territorial poſſeſſions in India; and why they did not reap thoſe advantages we have ſince done, and which they may be juſtly charged with having forced us into, on that coaſt, aroſe entirely from the miſconduct of Dupleix, who, intoxicated by pride and vanity, did, through his obſtinacy, plunge his countrymen into various diſtreſſes, until they were quite undone. The ſucceſs, which at firſt attended his meaſures, was owing in a great degree to our inactivity and wretched parſimony. Mr. Barnet, who had foreſeen the ſtorm that was gathering, died unfortunately at the beginning of 1746, and Madraſs was taken the latter end of that year.

The leaders in the direction at that time, attentive only to the commercial plan, and prejudiced againſt more extenſive views, remained inactive until the French and Indian powers together had almoſt drove us into the ſea. We were rouſed at laſt by neceſſity; and, about the year 1751, the Company's affairs

*) Lond. 1771. gr. 8.

affairs began to wear a better aſpect: lord Clive had made a ſtand againſt the enemy; and ſoon after general Laurence returned again from Europe to take upon him the chief command; his lordſhip acted under the general, and aſſiſted him in eſtabliſhing the reputation of the Britiſh arms.

About the year 1755, we were almoſt extirpated at Bengal, by the diſputes between Drake and Surajah Dowla, but were fortunately re-eſtabliſhed by lord Clive and admiral Watſon. Lord Clive went farther; he placed us on a footing all Europeans had been ſtrangers to before; for, by virtue of his treaties and conqueſts, we took the lead at the Suba's court. Soon after all this was ſettled, lord Clive returned to England, haſtened in ſome meaſure by a peremptory letter from the directors.

This increaſe of riches and power, joined to the intercourſe we had with the natives, both at Bengal and in the Carnatic, enabled us to obtain a more immediate, and a fuller knowledge of the country, its wealth and natural advantages, the number of its inhabitants, their manners, cuſtoms, and religions; and to preſerve our revenues, we found it neceſſary, that nothing material ſhould be done by the princes near us, without our approbation.

An extenſive commerce is the great and capital advantage which England ought to expect from theſe acquiſitions; and conſequently the politics of India ſhould be principally directed to this end; but though, perhaps, it might be wiſhed, that the original plan of trade, upon which the Company was firſt conſtituted, had ſtill continued upon that contracted bottom, and that they had not been from merchants erected into ſovereign princes; yet, as this great dominion is acquired, it muſt be maintained; for the politics, not only of Aſia, but even of Europe, are now ſo interwoven with the affairs of our commerce there, that it will be abſolutely impoſſible to return back to our former ſituation with any hopes of profit, or indeed of ſecurity: we muſt preſerve what we have acquired upon the principles of ſelf-defence.

The great endeavour of all commercial ſtates, is to draw the productions of other countries to its own center; to work up the raw, and to re-export the manufactured goods; for wherever goods, though manufactured abroad, can be carried out again for ſale, ſo as to produce a final balance in favour of the ſtate, they are in a degree as meritorious, in the eye of trade, as if they were manufactured at home: but, in a public light,

light, the advantages that flow from a monopoly of carriage are far ſuperior to the dry profit of the merchant; to wit, the encreaſe of ſailors and ſhipping, and the employment of multitudes; all which add ſtrength as well as riches to the community. The act of navigation was founded upon this principle, by which this kingdom is become the greateſt maritime power that ever exiſted.

A fair opportunity now ſeems to offer, that may enable this kingdom, in a few years, to center in itſelf almoſt all the trade to the Eaſt-Indies, and thereby to ſupply the reſt of Europe from the mart of London. To effect ſo great an undertaking, a revenue muſt be alloted, ſufficient to maintain a ſtrong ſquadron in India always ready to fit out, and three ſeparate armies, one of the eaſt and one on the weſt coaſt of the peninſula, and one at Bengal. It is by ſuch ſteps only, that the conqueſts can become of any laſting or ſolid advantage; and that all this may be effected, I ſhall endeavour to ſhew: happy, if any of my hints may excite ſome abler head to digeſt, and bring them to perfection.

Lord Clive, when he returned home in February, 1760, left Mr. Holwel in the chair at Bengal, who was ſuperſeded from Madraſs, in Auguſt following, by Mr. Vanſittart, a gentleman of a fair and amiable character, but unacquainted with that ſettlement. Immediately on his arrival, the conduct of Meer Jaffier was placed in ſuch a light, as induced him, by a fatal revolution, to place Coſſim Cawn on the throne. The ſtain of wanton tyranny this action left behind it, will long remain upon the minds of the natives: the whole of this blameable tranſaction, together with the many melancholy conſequences, are too well known to need repeating: matters ſoon came to a criſis; one conſtant ſcene of anarchy and diſſenſion prevailed from Coſſim's aſcending the throne to his flight: he fled at laſt, and carried with him *a vaſt ſum in ſpecie.*

The principal reaſon given to the public for depoſing Meer Jaffier, was the wretched ſtate of his finances; but this aroſe from the miſconduct and treachery of his miniſters. That there was no real want of ſpecie in the country, is manifeſt from the large ſums which Coſſim was enabled to collect, with ſuch expedition, almoſt immediately after his advancement: and with how much eaſe might the Company have reformed his government, by a change of his miniſters, if they had pleaſed, without any diſturbance or commotion.

I

I am clearly of opinion it was as eaſy to reſtrain Meer Jaffier as to depoſe him; and the country would not, in that caſe, (to ſay nothing of the other miſchiefs occaſioned by that rovolution) have been drained of that immenſe ſum which Coſſim carried off with him upon his expulſion: yet the country was not totally exhauſted even by this drain, witneſs the ſums that have been ſent out, ſince his flight, to Madraſs, Bombay, and China.

In the year 1764, Meer Jaffier was replaced in the ſubaſhip; conteſts, and the purſuit of private gain, continued abroad, and party ran high at home. It was at this time lord Clive again ſtood forth to take upon him the command at Bengal. He ſet off in May, 1764, and did not reach Calcutta until April, 1765. He found Meer Jaffier dead, when he arrived; he gave that Nabob's ſon the outward pageantry of Suba, but the power and the revenues he took charge of for the company; he allotted out of them a certain ſtipend for the nominal Suba, and for the Mogul, the tribute theſe provinces uſed to remit to Delhi, when the empire was properly ſettled; the remainder of the revenues was brought into the treaſury of Calcutta. *)

The ſubaſhip of Bengal takes in a large extent of country, the greateſt part of which is under the Suba's immediate direction; the remainder is under the management of Nabobs, Rajahs, or Polygars, who are to pay certain annual tributes to the Suba, and ſome of them are likewiſe to bring into the field a certain number of troops whenever they are required, the management of the lands within their reſpective governments being left entirely to themſelves to farm and to collect. The diſtracted ſtate the empire had long been in, had led the Suba to neglect paying the tribute due to the throne of Delhi; and the enfeebled ſtate of Shaw Allum made him incapable of enforcing his right; but ſince we have had poſſeſſion, that uſual tribute has been regularly paid.

The whole revenue above mentioned, including the tribute payable to the Great Mogul, amounts to the ſum of near three millions four hundred thouſand pounds; to which may be added the duties collected on the foreign trade at the port of

*) When lord Clive arrived the ſecond time, and took the revenues from the Suba, his lordſhip, together with his council, formed the extenſive trade carried on throughout the provinces for ſalt. beetel, and tobacco, into a monopoly, under the management of a company, equally ſhutting out both natives and foreigners.

of Calcutta, about twenty thousand pounds. Besides all this, the Company are in the receipts of a considerable sum for the duties upon salt, beetel and tobacco. This brought in, while the monopoly of those articles took place, about one hundred and twenty thousand pounds a year, but, since that was abolished, is reduced to one hundred thousand pounds, or under. The whole of this revenue may be fairly set at three millions five hundred thousand pounds, out of which the *) tribute to the Mogul, the allotment to the Nabob, the expence of collecting the revenue, and the civil and military charges of government at Bengal, altogether amount to about two millions, though I am pretty sure it is not quite so much, and consequently there ought to remain the sum of one million five hundred thousand pounds, neat income, in the hands of the Company, to be applied for the purchase of the home investments, or for any emergencies that might accidentally arise. The province of Orixa, which properly belongs to the Suba of Bengal, is now in the hands of Morattahs: it yields a revenue of about one hundred and thirty thousand pounds. This province might be easily recovered; and it is well defended by hills that bound it to the S. W.

The present establishment of the forces at Bengal is fixed at three thousand Europeans, and near **) twenty thousand Seipoys or country infantry; all of whom are regularly disciplined, and formed into battalions, and are commanded by European Officers; this force is reckoned sufficient to defend the provinces against all invasions.

***) The prince is the lord proprietor of the lands, his will is under no controul; nevertheless, the mode of farming out the lands continues amongst the Morattahs, and all the Gentoos, in much the same state it was in before the Moors got possession of the empire.

The

	£.
*) The tribute to the Mogul, — —	330,000
The Nabob, for his court, 18 lacks, charge of collecting the revenue, 35 lacks,	670,000
The civil and military expences, with the amount of stores of different kinds, about —	1,000,000
	2,000,000

**) This number does not include the Seipoys employed by the revenue officers.

***) Princes holding large tracts of country, have other princes under them, in like manner as they hold under the Mogul.

The lands are under the direction either of officers superintending for the Mogul, or princes who, collecting for themselves, pay annual tributes to the empire; and no lands are exempted from paying a proportion to the crown, but those belonging to pagodas, mosques, or enjoying some other privileges. These lands amongst the Morattahs, are granted to the occupiers for a term of years, or for life, which last method mostly prevails; and provided no charge lays against them for embezzlement, or neglect of tillage, there is scarcely an instance of the lands being taken from the families of the first occupiers. The same maxims prevail with respect to the Rajahs and great officers, who were always permitted to hold by descent, and were scarce ever displaced, except for misgovernment or rebellion. *) The lands pay according to their produce; this is taken by collectors for the prince, who calling in men conversant in husbandry, do, by their judgment, set the value of the prince's share while the crop is on the ground; the value, so settled, is what the occupier is to pay, and this is transmitted, by the several collectors, to the treasurer or Duan, who is commonly the first minister of the prince. The grain usually pays one half of its produce, cocoa-nut and beetel-nut trees two-thirds, fruit trees, and those converted into wood and timber one-third; buffaloes pay one rupee each (or half-a-crown), draft oxen not so much, a-year; and so every other article in proportion, that is produced by, or nourished from the earth.

The prince's revenue is neat and clear of all deduction, except the fees to the Duan, for himself and his collectors, which are fixed, and publickly known; what remains over and above the produce due to the prince, belongs to the occupier of the lands; and this is found, by experience, when he is permitted to enjoy it, to be an ample reward to him for his labour and expence.

*) Most of the lands in the southern parts of the empire yield double crops.

DESCRIPTION OF ADRIANOPLE AND CONSTANTINOPLE. *)

To the Abbot of —.

Adrianople, May 17, O. S. 1718.

I am going to leave Adrianople, and I would not do it, without giving you ſome account of all that is curious in it, which I have taken a great deal of pains to ſee. It is called from the Emperor *Adrian*, and was the firſt European ſeat of the Turkiſh Empire, and has been the favourite reſidence of many Sultans. *Mahomet* the fourth, and *Muſtapha*, the brother of the reigning Emperor, were ſo fond of it, that they wholly abandoned Conſtantinople, which humour ſo far exaſperated the Janizaries, that it was a conſiderable motive to the rebellions that depoſed them. Yet this man ſeems to love to keep his court here. I can give you no reaſon for this partiality. 'Tis true, the ſituation is fine, and the country all round very beautiful; but the air is extremely bad, and the Seraglio itſelf is not free from the ill effect of it. The town is ſaid to be eight miles in compaſs, I ſuppoſe they reckon in the gardens. There are ſome good houſes in it, I mean large ones; for the architecture of their palaces never makes any great ſhew. It is now very full of people; but they are moſt of them ſuch as follow the court, or camp, and when they are removed, I am told 'tis no populous city. The river *Maritza* on which it is ſituated, is dried up every ſummer, which contributes very much to make it unwholeſome. It is now a very pleaſant ſtream. There are two noble bridges built over it. I had the curioſity to go to ſee the Exchange in my Turkiſh dreſs, which is diſguiſe ſufficient. Yet I own, I was not very eaſy when I ſaw it crowded with Janizaries; but they dare not be rude to a woman, and made way for me with as much reſpect, as if I had been in my own figure. It is half a mile in length, the roof arched, and kept extremely neat. It holds three hundred and ſixty-five ſhops, furniſhed with all ſorts of rich goods expoſed to ſale in the ſame manner as at the New Exchange in London; but the pavement is kept much neater, and the ſhops are all ſo clean, they ſeem juſt new painted. — Idle people of all ſorts walk here for their

*) Lettres of the Right Honourable Lady *Mary Wortbley Montague* written, during her Travels in Europe, Aſia and Africa. Lond. 1769. 3 Vol. 8. Berlin 1782. 1 Vol. 8.

their diversion, or amuse themselves with drinking coffee, or sherbet, which is cried about as oranges and sweat-meats are in our playhouses. I observed most of the rich tradesmen were Jews. That people are in incredible power in this country. They have many privileges above all the natural Turks themselves, and have formed a very considerable commonwealth here, being judged by their own laws. They have drawn the whole trade of the Empire into their hands, partly by the firm union amongst themselves, and partly by the idle temper and want of industry in the Turks. Every Bassa has his Jew, who is his "*homme d'affaires;*" he is let into all his secrets, and does all his business. No bargain is made, no bribe received, no merchandise disposed of, but what passes through their hands. They are the physicians, the stewards, and the interpreters of all the great men. You may judge how advantageous this is to a people who never fail to make use of the smallest advantages. They have found the secret of making themselves so necessary, that they are certain of the protection of the court, whatever ministry is in power. Even the English, French, and Italian merchants, who are sensible of their artifices, are, however, forced to trust their affairs to their negotiation, nothing of trade being managed without them, and the meanest amongst them being too important to be disobliged, since the whole body take care of his interests with as much vigour as they would those of the most considerable of their members. They are many of them vastly rich, but they take care to make little public shew of it; though they live in their houses in the utmost luxury and magnificence. This copious subject has drawn me from my description of the exchange, founded by *Ali Bassa,* whose name it bears. Near it is the *Sherski,* a street of a mile in length, full of shops of all kind of fine merchandize, but excessive dear, nothing being made here. It is covered on the top with boards to keep out the rain, that merchants may meet conveniently in all weathers. The *Besisten* near it, is another exchange, built upon pillars, where all sorts of horse furniture are sold. Glittering every where with gold, rich embroidery and jewels, it makes a very agreeable shew. From this place I went, in my Turkish coach, to the camp, which is to move in a few days to the frontiers. The Sultan is already gone to his tents, and all his court; the appearance of them is indeed, very magnificent. Those of the great men are rather like palaces than tents, taking up a great compass

of ground, and being divided into a vaſt number of apartments, They are all of green, and the *Baſſas of three Tails*, have thoſe enſigns of their power placed in a very conſpicuous manner before their tents, which are adorned, on the top with gilded balls, more or leſs, according to their different ranks. The ladies go in coaches to ſee the camp, as eagerly as ours did to that of *Hide Park;* but 'tis very eaſy to obſerve, that the ſoldiers do not begin the campaign with any great chearfulneſs. The war is a general grievance upon the people, but particularly hard upon the tradeſmen, now that the Grand Signior is reſolved to lead his army in perſon. Every company of them is obliged, upon this occaſion, to make a preſent according to their ability.

I took the pains of riſing at ſix in the morning to ſee the ceremony, which did not however begin till eight. The Grand Signior was at the Seraglio window, to ſee the proceſſion, which paſſed through the principal ſtreets. It was preceded by an *Effendi*, mounted on a camel, richly furniſhed, reading aloud the *Alcoran*, finely bound, laid upon a cuſhion. He was ſurrounded by a parcel of boys, in white, ſinging ſome verſes of it, followed by a man dreſſed in green boughs, repreſenting a clean huſbandman ſowing ſeed. After him ſeveral reapers with garlands of ears of corn, as *Ceres* is pictured, with ſcythes in their hands ſeeming to mow. Then a little machine drawn by oxen, in which was a wind-mill, and boys employed in grinding corn, followed by another machine, drawn by buffalos carrying an oven, and two more boys, one employed kneading the bread, and another in drawing it out of the oven. Theſe boys threw little cakes on both ſides amongſt the crowd, and were followed by the whole company of bakers marching on foot, two by two, in their beſt cloaths, with cakes, loaves, paſties and pies of all ſorts on their heads, and after them two buffoons or jackpuddings, with their faces and cloaths ſmeared with meal, who diverted the mob with their antic geſtures. In the ſame manner followed all the companies of trade in the Empire; the nobler ſort, ſuch as jewellers, mercers &c. finely mounted and many of the pageants that repreſent their trades, perfectly magnificent; amongſt which that of the Furriers made one of the beſt figures, being a very large machine ſet round with the ſkins of ermins, foxes, &c. ſo well ſtuffed, that the animals ſeemed to be alive, and followed by muſic and dancers. I believe they were, upon the whole, twenty thouſand

thousand men, all ready to follow his Highness if he commanded them. The rear was closed by the volunteers, who came to beg the honour of dying in his service. This part of the shew seemed to me so barbarous, that I removed from the window upon the first appearance of it. They were all naked to the middle. Some had their arms pierced through with arrows left sticking in them. Others had them sticking in their heads, the blood trickling down their faces. Some slashed their arms with sharp knives, making the blood spring out upon those that stood there; and this is looked upon as an expression of their zeal for glory. I am told, that some make use of it to advance their love; and when they are near the window, where their mistress stands (all the women in town being veiled to see this spectacle) they stick another arrow for her sake, who gives some sign of approbation and encouragement to this gallantry. The whole shew lasted for near eight hours, to my great sorrow, who was heartily tired though I was in the house of the widow of the *Captain Bassa* (Admiral) who refreshed me with coffee, sweatmeats, sherbet, &c. with all possible civility.

I tell you nothing of the order of Mr. Worthley's entry, and his audience. These things are always the same, and have been so often described, I won't trouble you with the repetition. The young Prince, about eleven years old, sits near his father when he gives audience; he is a handsome boy, but, probably, will not immediately succeed the Sultan, there being two sons of Sultan *Mustapha* (his eldest brother) remaining; the eldest about twenty years old, on whom the hopes of the people are fixed. This reign has been bloody and avaritious. I am apt to believe they are very impatient to see the end of it. I am, Sir

Yours &c. &c.

To the Countess of B—.

At length I have heard from my dear lady B——, for the first time. I am persuaded you have had the goodness to write before, but I have had the ill fortune to lose your letters. Since my last, I have staid quietly at Constantinople, a city that I ought in conscience to give your ladyship a right notion of, since I know you can have none but what is partial and mistaken from the writings of travellers. 'Tis certain,

there are many people that paſs years here in *Pera*, without having ever ſeen it, and yet they all pretend to deſcribe it. *Pera*, *Tophana*, and *Galata*, wholly inhabited by French Chriſtians (and which, together, make the appearance of a very fine town) are divided from it by the ſea, which is not above half ſo broad as the broadeſt part of the Thames; but the Chriſtian men are loath to hazard the adventures they ſometimes meet with amongſt the *Levents* or Seamen (worſe monſters than our watermen) and the women muſt cover their faces to go there, which they have a perfect averſion to do. 'Tis true, they wear veils in Pera, but they are ſuch as only ſerve to ſhew their beauty to more advantage, and would not be permitted in Conſtantinople. Theſe reaſons deter almoſt every creature from ſeeing it; and the French Ambaſſadreſs will return to France (I believe) without ever having been there. You'll wonder, Madam, to hear me add, that I have been there very often. The *Aſmack*, or Turkiſh veil, is become not only very eaſy, but agreeable to me; and if it was not, I would be content to endure ſome inconveniency to gratify a paſſion that is become ſo powerful with me, as curioſity. And indeed, the pleaſure of going in a barge to Chelſea, is not comparable to that of rowing upon the canal of the ſea here, where for twenty miles together down the *Boſphorus*, the moſt beautiful variety of proſpects preſent themſelves. The Aſian ſide is covered with fruit trees, villages, and the moſt delightful landſkips in nature; on the European, ſtands Conſtantinople, ſituated on ſeven hills. — The unequal heights make it ſeem as large again as it is (tho' one of the largeſt cities in the world) ſhewing an agreeable mixture of gardens, pine and cypreſs trees, palaces, moſques, and publick buildings, raiſed one above another, with as much beauty and appearance of ſymmetry as your ladyſhip ever ſaw in a cabinet adorned by the moſt ſkilful hands, where jars ſhew themſelves above jars, mixed with caniſters, babies and candleſticks. This is a very odd compariſon; but it gives me an exact idea of the thing. I have taken care to ſee as much of the Seraglio as is to be ſeen. It is on a point of land running into the ſea; a palace of prodigious extent, but very irregular. The gardens take in a large compaſs of ground, full of high cypreſs trees, which is all I know of them. The buildings are all of white ſtone, headed on top, with gilded turrets and ſpires, which look very magnificent; and indeed, I believe there is no Chriſtian King's palace half

ſo

ſo large. There are ſix large courts in it, all built round and ſet with trees, having galleries of ſtone; one of thoſe for the guard, another for the ſlaves, another for the officers of the kitchen, another for the ſtables, the fifth for the Divan, and the ſixth for the apartment deſtined for audiences. On the ladies ſide there are, at leaſt, as many more, with diſtinct courts belonging to their eunuchs and attendants, their kitchens, &c.

The next remarkable ſtructure is that of St. *Sophia*, which 'tis very difficult to ſee. I was forced to ſend three times to the *Caimaikan*, (the governor of the town) and he aſſembled the chief *Effendis*, or heads of the law, and inquired of the *Mufti*, whether it was lawful to permit it. They paſſed ſome days in this important debate; but, I inſiſting on my requeſt, permiſſion was granted. I can't be informed why the Turks are more delicate on the ſubject of this moſque, than on any of the others, where, what Chriſtian pleaſes may enter without ſcruple. I fancy they imagine that, having been once conſecrated, people, on pretence of curioſity, might prophane it with prayers, particularly to thoſe Saints, who are ſtill very viſible in Moſaic work, and no other way defaced but by the decays of time; for it is abſolutely falſe, tho' ſo univerſally aſſerted, that the Turks defaced all the images that thy found in the city.

The moſque of Sultan *Solyman* is an exact ſquare, with four fine towers in the angles; in the midſt is a noble *Cupola* ſupported with beautiful marble pillars; two leſſer at the ends, ſupported in the ſame manner; the pavement and gallery round the Moſque, of marble; under the great cupola is a fountain adorned with ſuch fine coloured pillars, that I can hardly think them natural marble; on one ſide is the pulpit of white marble, and on the other the little gallery for the Grand Signior. A fine ſtair-caſe leads to it, and it is built up with gilded lattices. At the upper-end is a ſort of altar, where the name of God is written; and, before it, ſtand two candleſticks, as high as a man, with wax candles as thick as three flambeaux. The pavement is ſpread with fine carpets, and the Moſque illuminated with a vaſt number of lamps. The court leading to it is very ſpacious, with galleries of marble of green columns, covered with twenty-eight leaded cupolas on two ſides, and a fine fountain of baſons in the midſt of it.

This defcription may ferve for all the Mofques in Conftantinople. The model is exactly the fame, and they only differ in largenefs and thicknefs of materials.

The *Exchanges* are all noble buildings, full of fine alleys, the greateft part fupported with pillars, and kept wonderfully neat. Every trade has its diftinct alley, where the merchandize is difpofed in the fame order as in the New Exchange at London. The *Befiften*, or jeweller's quarter, fhews fo much riches, fuch a vaft quantity of diamonds, and all kind of precious ftones, that they dazzle the fight. The embroiderers is alfo very glittering, and people walk here as much for diverfion as bufinefs. The markets are moft of them handfome fquares, and admirably well provided, perhaps better than in any other part of the world.

I know you'll expect I fhould fay fomething particular of the flaves; and you will imagine me half a Turk, when I don't fpeak of it with the fame horror other Chriftians have done before me. But I cannot forbear applauding the humanity of the Turks to thefe creatures; they are never ill ufed, and their flavery is, in my opinion, no worfe than fervitude all over the world. 'Tis true they have no wages; but they give them yearly clothes to a higher value than our falaries to our ordinary fervants.

I have feen no other footfteps of antiquity except the aqueducts, which are fo vaft that I am apt to believe they are yet more antient than the Greek Empire. The Turks, indeed, have clapped in fome ftones with Turkifh infcriptions, to give their natives the honour of fo great a work; but the deceit is eafily difcovered. — The other publick buildings are the *Hans* end *Monafteries;* the firft are very large and numerous; the fecond few in number, and not at all magnificent. I had the curiofity to vifit one of them, and to obferve the devotions of the *Dervifes*, which are as whimfical as any at Rome. Thefe fellows have permiffion to marry, but are confined to an odd habit, which is only a piece of coarfe white cloth, wrapped about them, with their legs and arms naked. Their order has few other rules, except that of performing their fantaftick rites, every Tuefday and Friday, which is done in this manner: They meet together in a large hall, where they all ftand with their eyes fixed on the ground and their arms acrofs, while the *Imaum* or preacher reads part of the *Alcoran* from a pulpit, placed in the midft; and when he has done, eight or ten of them

make-

make a melancholy concert with their pipes, which are no unmuſical inſtruments. Then he reads again, and makes a ſhort expoſition on what he has read; after which they ſing and play, till their Superior (the only one of them dreſſed in green) riſes and begins a ſort of ſolemn dance. They all ſtand about him in a regular figure, and while ſome play, the others tie their robe (which is very wide) faſt round their waiſt, and begin to turn round with a amazing ſwiftneſs, and yet with great regard to the muſic, moving ſlower or faſter as the tune is played. This laſts above an hour, without any of them ſhewing the leaſt appearance of giddineſs, which is not to be wondered at, when it is conſidered, they are all uſed to it from their infancy; moſt of them being devoted to this way of life from their birth. There turned amongſt them ſome little Derviſes of ſix or ſeven years old, who ſeemed no more diſordered by that exerciſe than the others. At the end of the ceremony they ſhout out; "*There is no other God,* "*but God, and Mahomet his Prophet:*" after which they kiſs the Superior's hand and retire. The whole is performed with the moſt ſolemn gravity. Nothing can be more auſtere than the form of theſe people; they never raiſe their eyes, and ſeem devoted to contemplation. And as ridiculous as this is in deſcription, there is ſomething touching in the air of ſubmiſſion and mortification they aſſume. — This letter is of a horrible lenght; but you may burn it when you have read enough, &c. &c.

THE CLIMATE, NATURAL HISTORY, AND PRODUCTS OF JAMAICA. *)

Jamaica lies between the 75th and 79th degrees of weſt longitude from London, and is between ſeventeen and nineteen degrees diſtant from the equinoctial. It is in length, from eaſt to weſt, upwards of one hundred aud forty Engliſh miles, in breadth about ſixty, and of an oval form, divided by a ridge of rocky mountains, which give riſe to a vaſt number of fine rivulets, well ſtored with fiſh of various kinds, though they contain none of the European ſpecies, except

*) Wynne General Hiſtory of the Britiſh Empire in America, 2 Vols. London 1770. 8.

eels and crawfifh. The mullet is very palatable, and the colipever little inferior to falmon. None of thefe rivers are navigable, or indeed could be made fo without vaft expence; yet fome of thefe are fo large, that canoes loaded with fugars, pafs from very remote plantations to the fea-fide. The foil, in general, is excellent, efpecially in the northern parts of the ifland, and prodigioufly fertile.

The longeft day is little above thirteen hours, and the night proportionably long. About nine in the forenoon the heat is intenfe, and could fcarce be endured, was it not tempered by the fea-breeze, which generally begins to blow about that time, and continues till five in the afternoon. The nights are fometimes pretty cool; and every night there falls a piercing dew, which is extremely unwholefome. Twilight continues not above three quarters of an hour. The feafons are only diftinguifhed by the denomination of wet and dry. On the whole, if the ifland was not fubject to violent ftorms, hurricanes, and earthquakes, and if the air was not violently hot, damp, and extremely unwholefome in moft parts, the fertility and beauty of the country, would make it as defirable a fituation for pleafure as it is for profit. The fouth and north parts of the ifland are the moft wholefome, agreeable, and leaft fubject to hurricanes.

The natural products of this ifland are as numerous as perhaps thofe of any fpot in the world of the fame fize. The tree which bears pimento, or all-fpice, commonly called Jamaica pepper, rifes to the height of above thirty feet, is ftreight, of a moderate thicknefs, and covered with a very fmooth, fhining, grey bark. It fhoots out a vaft number of branches on every fide, which bears a plentiful foliage of very large beautiful leaves, of a fhining green, like thofe of the bay tree. The bunches of flowers are formed at the very ends of the twigs, each ftalk bearing a flower that bends back, within which are to be difcerned fome ftamina of a pale green colour; to which fucceed a bunch of berries, rather larger than juniper berries, like which, when ripe, they become black and fmooth; but before they are quite ripe are picked off the tree, and dried in the fun. This tree grows moftly upon the mountains. The ifland alfo produces the wild cinnamon tree, whofe bark is fo ufeful in medicine; the manchineal, which bears a moft beautiful apple, and affords a moft ornamental wood for cabinet-makers, though the apple and juice, in every part of the tree, are deadly poifons;

the

the mahogony tree; the cedar; the cabbage tree, about an hundred feet high, which bears a fubftance on the top which looks and taftes like cabbage, and no lefs remarkable for the extreme hardnefs of its wood, which, when dry, is incorruptible, and fcarcely penetrable by any tool; the palm, from which an oil is drawn, much efteemed by the negroes; the white wood, which is never affected by the worm with which thefe feas abound; the foap-tree, whofe berries anfwer all the purpofes of wafhing; the mangrove and olive bark, ufeful to tanners; the fuftick red-wood; and, lately, the logwood, employed in dying; and the forefts fupply the druggifts with guaicum, farfaparilla, chinaroot, caffia, and tamarinds. The ifland alfo produces aloes, and the cochineal plant, though the Jamaicans are ignorant of the method of managing it. The maftick-tree, iron-wood, and bulley-tree, are hard woods, fit for the millwright.

The ifland of Jamaica is divided into nineteen parifhes, which fend each two members to the affembly. Port Royal, the antient capital, ftood upon the point of a peninfula, which formed a part of the fhore of a noble harbour of the fame name, in which a thoufand fail of the largeft fhips may anchor, with the greateft conveniency and fafety; there being depth of water at the key of Port Royal for veffels of the greateft burthen to lie clofe to the wharfs. This conveniency, and the refort of the buccaneers, (though the foil is only a hot, dry fand, which produces none of the neceffaries of life not even frefh water) foon rendered it a very confiderable place, in about thirty years time containing two thoufand houfes, which rented as high as in London. In fhort, few places in the world could be compared to it for trade, wealth, and an entire corruption of manners. Port Royal continued in this flourifhing ftate until the 9th of June, 1692, when it was overwhelmed by an earthquake. It was rebuilt, and a fecond time deftroyed by fire. The extraordinary conveniency of its harbour tempted the inhabitants to rebuild it once more; but, in 1722, an hurricane reduced it, a third time, to an heap of rubbifh. Warned by thefe repeated calamities, the affembly removed the cuftom-houfe, publick offices, and market from thence; and the principal inhabitants removed to the oppofite fide of the bay, to a town called Kingfton, now the feat of government, advantageoufly fituated for frefh water, and all manner of accommodations. The ftreets are of a commodious width, regularly drawn, and intercept each other

at

at equal diſtances, and right angles. It contains upwards of a thouſand houſes, many of them handſomely built, tho' low, with porticos, and ſuitable conveniences for the climate. The harbour, by the care of governor Knowles, is now ſtrongly fortified; its entrance being defended by Fort Charles, one of the ſtrongeſt in the Britiſh iſlands, and a battery of ſixty pieces of cannon, beſides additional works. Kingſton ſends three members to the aſſembly.

St. Jago de la Vega, or Spaniſh Town, ſituated on the river Cobre, a conſiderable, though not navigable ſtream, that falls into the ſea near Kingſton, formerly the ſeat of government, and the place where the courts of juſtice were held, though inferior in ſize and reſort to Kingſton, and a town of leſs buſineſs, is equal in gaiety to many European cities, which it ſeems to rival in all polite diverſions. This town ſends three repreſentatives to the aſſembly.

In St. Catherine's pariſh ſtands a fort, mounted with ten or twelve carriage guns, called Paſſage Fort, being the greateſt thoroughfare in the iſland. Port Negril has a good ſafe harbour, and lies conveniently for intercepting the Spaniſh trade to and from the Havannah. Port Antonio, in St. Ann's pariſh, would be the beſt harbour in the iſland, were it not for its difficult entrance; however, it is defended by a regular fort, and a ſmall garriſon. There is likewiſe a fort at the bay of Port Morant, on the ſouth-eaſt part of the iſland, where are excellent plantations, both of ſugar and cotton, and a ſalt work.

The government of Jamaica is the beſt in the gift of the crown, that of Ireland excepted. The ſtanding ſalary is two thouſand five hundred pounds per annum; the aſſembly vote the governor as much more; and this, with the great perquiſites annexd to his office, make the whole near ten thouſand pounds per annum.

The principal exports of the iſland are ſugars, of which they export about twenty thouſand hogſheads per annum, ſome of which weigh a ton. Moſt of this is ſent to the mother-country, though a ſmall part of it goes to North-America, in exchange for beef, pork, cheeſe, corn, peaſe, ſtaves, plank, pitch, and tar. Rum, of wich they export about four thouſand puncheons, eſteemed better than that of the other Weſt-India iſlands: molaſſes, in which they make the greateſt part of their returns for New-England, where there are vaſt diſtilleries: cotton, of which they export two thouſand bags.

In-

Indigo was formerly much cultivated; but the quantity now made is inconſiderable. Some cacao and coffee are alſo exported; but the latter is not much eſteemed. The Jamaicans alſo ſend to England a conſiderable quantity of pimento, ginger, drugs, ſweetmeats, and mahagony and manchineal plank.

The logwood-trade is alſo conſiderable. We formerly cut logwood in the Bay of Campeachy, on the northern ſide of the peninſula of Jucatan; but being expelled from thence by the Spaniards, the logwood-cutters ſettled upon the Gulph of Honduras, on the ſouthern ſide of the ſame peninſula, where they were protected by a fort, now demoliſhed, agreeable to an article of the late peace. Theſe logwood-cutters are moſtly fugitives from all parts of North-America, who live in a lawleſs manner, though they elect one of their number king, to whom they pay very little obedience. They amount in number to about five hundred, and go always well armed. The country they inhabit is extremely marſhy, the air prodigiouſly infeſted with muſketoes, and the water full of alligators; yet a life of licentiouſneſs and large gains, have perfectly reconciled them to the hardſhips of their employment, and the unwholeſomeneſs of the climate.

In the dry ſeaſon, when they cut logwood, they advance a conſiderable way into the country in ſearch of the logwood. In the wet ſeaſon, when the whole country is overflowed, they know the marks where the logwood lies, which being a heavy wood, ſinks in the water, but is ſo eaſily buoyed up, that a ſingle diver is capable of lifting very large pieces. The logwood is thus carried by the favour of the land-floods into the river, to the port where the ſhips lie that come upon this trade, which in ſome years employs near ſix thouſand tons of ſhipping, conſumes a large quantity of Engliſh manufactures, and is of conſiderable uſe in fabricating many others; the whole value of the returns being not leſs than ſixty thouſand pounds ſterling per annum. It is generally carried on by veſſels from North-America, which purchaſe their goods in Jamaica.

The trade which is carried on between Jamaica and the Spaniſh main is ſtill more profitable than that of the logwood, eſpecially in time of war. It is carried on in the following manner: The veſſel from Jamaica being furniſhed with negroes, and a proper aſſortment of other goods, proceeds to a place called Monkey Key, within four miles of Portobelo. On its arrival, a perſon underſtanding the Spaniſh tongue is imme-

immediately ſent aſhore, to give notice to the merchants of that town. Information is likewiſe given, with all poſſible expedition, to the merchants of Panama. Without loſs of time, the traders ſet out, diſguiſed like peaſants, and carrying their ſilver in earthen jars, covered with flour, in order to deceive the officers of the revenue. They generally repair on board, where they are handſomely entertained, and at their departure take their purchaſes along with them, either negroe-ſlaves, or dry goods packed up in ſuch a manner as to be carried by one perſon, leaving behind them the price agreed on in dollars. They are likewiſe furniſhed with proviſions ſufficient to ſerve them during their return. This traffic commonly laſts for about five or ſix weeks. If the whole cargo is not diſpoſed of at this place, they ſhape their courſe then for an harbour called the Brew, about five miles diſtant from Carthagena, where they quickly find a vent for the reſt of their goods. Theſe are the two principal places where this trade is carried on, but they are not the only ones; the Caraccas, and many other parts upon that coaſt, have alſo their ſhare. Nor are the Engliſh the only nation concerned in it; the French from Hiſpaniola, and the Dutch from Curaſſow, likewiſe interfere, and have, within theſe few years, almoſt entirely cut out the Engliſh, owing chiefly to the injudicious regulations of a late miniſter. There was, however, when it flouriſhed, no trade more profitable than this; the payments being not only all in ready money, but the goods ſelling at an higher price than in any other market. But it is prohibited by the Spaniards, under ſevere penalties; and the guarda coſtas, when they catch any of theſe interlopers, treat them little better than if they were pirates. Beſides, they frequently ſeize, and otherwiſe maltreat, the fair traders, under pretence of their being concerned in this contraband traffick. This practice has given riſe to numberleſs diſputes between the courts of Great-Britain and Spain, and particularly was the occaſion of the firſt Spaniſh war.

This commerce at all times, and the prizes which in great numbers are carried into Jamaica in time of war, for of all our iſlands it is the beſt ſituated for making captures, occaſion a vaſt influx of treaſure into it; ſo that great fortunes are made as rapidly here as any where elſe in the world, whilſt the people appear to live in ſuch a ſtate of profuſion and luxury in their equipages, their cloaths, furniture, and tables, as in any other place would bring on beggary and bankruptcy

On

On this account their treaſure makes but a very ſhort ſtay amongſt them, but is immediately tranſmitted to North-America, or Europe, to purchaſe the different articles of luxury and conveniency, as well as to ſupply their extraordinary demand for ſlaves, which is annually for above ſix thouſand head, both to ſupply their own deficiency and the Spaniſh market.

ACT. I. SCENE I and II.

OF Mr. COLMAN'S COMEDY OF THE JEALOUS WIFE. *)

Mrs. Oakly, *within.*

Don't tell me — I know it is ſo — It's monſtrous, and I will not bear it.

Oak. within. But, my Dear! —

Mrs. Oak. Nay, nay, &c.

(*Squabbling within.*)

Enter Mrs. Oakly, *with a Letter,* Oakly *following.*

Mrs. Oak. Say what you will, Mr. *Oakly*, you ſhall never perſuade me, but this is ſome filthy Intrigue of yours.

Oak. I can aſſure you, my Love! —

Mrs. Oak. Your Love! — Don't I know your — Tell me, I ſay, this Inſtant, every Circumſtance relating to this Letter.

Oak. How can I tell you, when you will not ſo much as let me ſee it?

Mrs. Oak. Look you, Mr. *Oakly*, this Uſage is not to be borne. You take a Pleaſure in abuſing my Tenderneſs and ſoft Diſpoſition. — To be perpetually running over the whole Town, nay the whole Kingdom too, in purſuit of your Amours! — Did not I diſcover that you was great with Mademoiſelle, my own Woman? — Did not you contract a ſhameful Familiarity with Mrs. *Freeman?* — Did not I detect your Intrigue with Lady Wealthy? — Was not you —

Oak. Oons! Madam, the Grand Turk himſelf has not half ſo many Miſtreſſes — You throw me out of all Patience — Do I know any body but our common Friends? — Am I

*) Oxford 1761. 8.

I viſited by any body, that does not viſit you? — Do I ever go out, unleſs you go with me? — And am I not as conſtantly by your Side, as if I was tied to your Apron Strings?

Mrs. Oak. Go, go, you are a falſe Man — Have not I found you out a thouſand Times? And have not I this Moment a Letter in my Hand, which convinces me of your Baſeneſs? — Let me know the whole Affair, or I will —

Oak. Let you know? Let Me know what you would have of me — You ſtop my Letter before it comes to my Hands, and then expect that I ſhou'd know the Contents of it.

Mrs. Oak. Heaven be praiſed! I ſtopt it. — I ſuſpected ſome of theſe Doings for ſome Time paſt — But the Letter informs me who ſhe is, and I'll be revenged on her ſufficiently. Oh, you baſe Man, you!

Oak. I beg, my Dear, that you would moderate your Paſſion! — Shew me the Letter, and I'll convince you of my Innocence.

Mrs. Oak. Innocence! — Abominable! — Innocence! — But I am not to be made ſuch a Fool — I am convinced of your perfidy, and very ſure that —

Oak. 'Sdeath and Fire! your paſſion hurries you out of your Senſes. — Will you hear me?

Mrs. Oak. No, you are a baſe Man; and I will not hear you.

Oak. Why then, my Dear, ſince you will neither talk reaſonably yourſelf, nor liſten to Reaſon from me, I ſhall take my leave till you are in a better Humour. So, your Servant! (*Going.*

Mrs. Oak. Ay, go, you cruel Man! — Go to your Miſtreſſes, and leave your poor Wife to her Miſeries. — How unfortunate a Woman am I! — I could die with Vexation. —

(*Throwing herſelf into a Chair.*

Oak. There it is — Now dare not I ſtir a ſtep further — If I offer to go, ſhe is in one of her Fits in an Inſtant — Never ſure was Woman at once of ſo violent and ſo delicate a Conſtitution! — What ſhall I ſay to ſooth her? — Nay, never make Thyſelf ſo uneaſy, my Dear — Come, come, you know I love You. Nay, nay, you ſhall be convinced.

Mrs. Oak. I know you hate me; and that your Unkindneſs and Barbarity will be the Death of me. (*Whining.*

Oak.

Oak. Do not vex yourſelf at this Rate — I love you moſt paſſionately — Indeed I do — This mnſt be ſome Miſtake.

Mrs. Oak. O, I am an unhappy Woman. (*Weeping.*

Oak. Dry up thy Tears, my Love, and be comforted! — You will find that I am not to blame in this Matter — Come, let me ſee this Letter. — Nay, you ſhall not deny me. (*Taking the Letter.*

Mrs. Oak. There! take it, you know the Hand! I am ſure.

Oak. To *Charles Oakly*, Eſq. (*Reading.*) — Hand! 'Tis a Clerk-like Hand, indeed! a good round Text! and was certainly never penned by a fair Lady.

Mrs. Oak. Ay, laugh at me, do!

Oak. Forgive me, my Love, I did not mean to laugh at thee — But what ſays the Letter? — (*Reading.*) — *Daughter eloped* — *You muſt be privy to it* — *Scandalous* — *Diſhonourable* — *Satisfaction* — Revenge um, um, um — *injured Father.*

Henry Ruſſet.

Mrs. Oak. (*Riſing.*) Well, Sir — You ſee I have detected you — Tell me this inſtant where ſhe is concealed.

Oak. So — ſo — ſo — This hurts me — I'am ſhock'd — (*To himſelf.*

Mrs. Oak. What are you confounded with your Guilt? Have I caught you at laſt?

Oak. O that wicked *Charles!* To decoy a young Lady from her Parents in the Country! The Profligacy of the young Fellows of this Age is abominable. (*To himſelf.*

Mrs. Oak. (*Half aſide and muſing*) *Charles!* — Let me ſee! — *Charles!* — No! — Impoſſible. — This is all a Trick.

Oak. He has certainly ruined this poor Lady. (*To himſelf.*

Mrs. Oak. Art! Art! all Art! — There's a ſudden Turn now! — You have ready Wit for Intrigue, I find.

Oak. Such an abandoned Action! — I wiſh I had never had the Care of him. (*To himſelf.*

Mrs. Oak. Mighty fine, Mr. *Oakly!* — Go on Sir, go on! — I ſee what you mean. — Your Aſſurance provokes me beyond your very Falſehood itſelf. — So you imagine,

Sir, that this affected Concern, this flimfy Pretence about *Charles*, is to bring you off. — Matchlefs Confidence! — But I am armed againft every Thing. — I am prepar'd for all your dark Schemes: I am aware of all your low Stratagems.

Oak. See there now! Was ever any Thing fo provoking? To perfevere in your ridiculous — For Heaven's Sake, my Dear, don't diftract me. When you fee my Mind thus agitated and uneafy, that a young Fellow, whom his dying Father, my own Brother, committed to my care, fhould be guilty of of fuch enormous Wickednefs; I fay, when you are witnefs of my Diftrefs on this Occafion, how can you be weak enough and cruel enough to —

Mrs. Oak. Prodigioufly well, Sir! You do it very well. — Nay keep it up, carry it on, there's nothing like going through with it. — O you artful Creature! But, Sir, I am not to be fo eafily fatisfied. — I do not believe a Syllable of all this — Give me the Letter — (*Snatching the Letter.*) — You fhall forely repent this vile Bufinefs, for I am refolved that I will know the Bottom of it. (*Exit.*

Oakly, *folus.*

Oak. This is beyond all Patience. — Provoking Woman! — Her abfurd Sufpicions interpret every Thing the wrong Way. She delights to make me wretched, becaufe fhe fees I am attached to her, and converts my Tendernefs and Affection into the Inftruments of my own Torture. — But this ungracious Boy! — In how many Troubles will he involve his own and this Lady's Family — I never imagin'd that he was of fuch abandon'd Principles.

ACT. II. SCENE. III. IV.

Ruffet and Sir *Harry Beagle.*

Ruf. Well, Sir *Harry*, have you heard any Thing of her?

Sir *H.* Yes, I have been afking *Tom* about her, and he fays you may have her for Five Hundred Guineas.

Ruf. Five Hundred Guineas! How d'ye mean? where is fhe? Which Way did fhe take?

Sir *H.* Why firft fhe went to *Epfom*, then to *Lincoln*, then to *Nottingham*, and now fhe is at *York.*

Ruf.

Ruſ. Impoſſible! She could not go over half the Ground in the Time. What the Devil are you talking of?

Sir *H.* Of the Mare you was juſt now ſaying you wanted to buy.

Ruſ. The Devil take the Mare! — Who wou'd think of her, when I am mad about an Affair of ſo much more Conſequence?

Sir *H.* You ſeem'd mad about her a little while ago. She's a fine Mare, and a Thing of Shape and Blood.

Ruſ. Damn her Blood! — *Harriot!* My dear provoking *Harriot!* Where can ſhe be? Have you got any Intelligence of her?

Sir *H.* No, Faith not I: We ſeem to be quite thrown out here — But however I have ordered *Tom* to try if he can hear any Thing of her among the Oſtlers.

Ruſ. Why don't you enquire after her yourſelf? Why don't you run up and down the whole Town after her? — T'other young Raſcal knows where ſhe is, I warrant you — What a Plague it is to have a Daughter! When one loves her to Diſtraction, and has toil'd and labour'd to make her happy, the ungrateful Slut will ſooner go to Hell her own Way — But ſhe *ſhall* have him — I will make her happy, if I break her Heart for it. — A provoking Gipſy! — To run away, and torment her poor Father, that doats on her! — I'll never ſee her Face again — Sir *Harry*, how can we get any Intelligence of her? Why don't you ſpeak? Why don't you tell me? — Zouns! You ſeem as indifferent as if you did not care a Farthing about her.

Sir *H.* Indifferent! You may well call me Indifferent — This damn'd Chace after her will coſt me a Thouſand — If it had not been for her, I wou'd not have been off the Courſe this Week, to have ſav'd the Lives of my whole Family — I'll hold you ſix to two that —

Ruſ. Zouns! Hold your Tongue, or talk more to the Purpoſe — I ſwear, ſhe is too good for you — You don't deſerve ſuch a Wife — A fine, dear, ſweet, lovely, charming Girl! — She'll break my Heart. — How ſhall I find her out? — Do, prithee, Sir *Harry*, my dear honeſt Friend, conſider how we may diſcover where ſhe is fled to.

Sir *H.* Suppoſe you put an Advertiſement into the Newspapers, deſcribing her Marks, her Age, her Height, and where ſhe ſtray'd from. I recover'd a bay Mare once by that Method.

Ruſ. Advertiſe her! — What! Deſcribe my Daughter, and expoſe her in the Publick Papers, with a Reward for bringing her home, like Horſes, ſtolen or ſtray'd! — Recover'd a bay Mare! — The Devil's in the Fellow! — He thinks of nothing but Racers, and bay Mares, and Stallions. — 'Sdeath! I wiſh your —

Sir *H.* I wiſh *Harriot* was fairly pounded. It wou'd ſave us both a deal of Trouble.

Ruſ. Which way ſhall I turn myſelf! — I am half diſtracted. — If I go to that young Dog's Houſe, he has certainly conveyed her ſomewhere out of my Reach — If ſhe does not ſend to me to-day, I'll give her up for ever — Perhaps though, ſhe may have met with ſome Accident, and has nobody to aſſiſt her — No, ſhe is certainly with that young Raſcal. — I wiſh ſhe was dead, and I was dead — I'll blow young *Oakly's* Brains out.

Enter Tom.

Sir *H.* Well, *Tom*, how is poor *Snip?*

Tom. A little better, Sir, after his warm Maſh: But *Lady*, the Pointing Bitch that followed you all the Way, is deadly Foot-ſore.

Ruſ. Damn *Snip* and *Lady!* — Have you heard any thing of *Harriot?*

Tom. Why I came on Purpoſe to let my Maſter and your Honour know, that *John* Oſtler ſays as how, juſt ſuch a Lady, as I told him Madam *Harriot* was, came here in a four wheel Chaiſe, and was fetch'd away ſoon after by a fine Lady in a Chariot.

Ruſ. Did ſhe come alone?

Tom. Quite alone, only a Servant-Maid, pleaſe your Honour.

Ruſ. And what Part of the Town did they go to?

Tom. *John* Oſtler ſays as how, they bid the Coachman drive to *Groſvenor* Square.

Sir *H.* Soho! Puſs — Yoics!

Ruſ. She is certainly gone to that young Rogue — He has got his Aunt to fetch her from hence — Or elſe ſhe is with her own Aunt, Lady *Freelove* — They both live in that Part of the Town. I'll go to his Houſe, and in the mean while, Sir *Harry*, You ſhall ſtep to Lady *Freelove's*. We'll find her, I warrant You. I'll teach my young Miſtreſs to be gadding. She ſhall marry you tonight. Come along, Sir

Harry,

Harry, come along! We won't loſe a Minute. Come along!

Sir *H.* Soho! Hark forward! Wind 'em and croſs 'em! Hark forward! Yoics! Yoics! (*Exeunt.*

HISTORY OF THE INVINCIBLE ARMADA. *)

King Philip II. of Spain, though he had not yet declared war, on account of the hoſtilities, which Elizabeth every where committed upon him, had long harboured a ſecret and violent deſire of revenge againſt her. His ambition alſo and the hopes of extending his empire were much encouraged by the preſent proſperous ſituation of his affairs; by the conqueſt of Portugal, the acquiſition of the Eaſt-Indian commerce and ſettlements, and the yearly importation of vaſt treaſures from America. The point, on which he reſted his higheſt glory, the perpetual object of his policy, was to ſupport orthodoxy and exterminate hereſy; and as the power and credit of Elizabeth were the chief bulwark of the proteſtants, he hoped, if he could ſubdue that princeſs, to acquire the eternal renown, of being able to re-unite the whole chriſtian world in the catholic communion. Above all, his indignation againſt his revolted ſubjects in the Netherlands inſtigated him to attack the Engliſh who had encouraged that inſurrection, and who, by their near neighbourhood, were ſo well enabled to ſupport the Hollanders, that he could never hope to reduce theſe rebels, while the power of that kingdom remained entire and unbroken. To ſubdue England ſeemed a neceſſary preparative to the reſtabliſhment of his authority in the Netherlands; and notwithſtanding all appearances, the former was in itſelf, as a more important, ſo a more eaſy, undertaking than the latter. That kingdom lay nearer Spain than the Low Countries, and was more expoſed to invaſions from that quarter; after an enemy had once obtained entrance, it was neither fortified by art nor nature; a long peace had deprived it of all military diſcipline and experience; and the catholics, in which it ſtill abounded, would be ready, it was hoped, to join any invader, who ſhould free them from thoſe grievous perſecutions, at preſent exerciſed againſt them,

 and

*) David Hume's Hiſtory of England. Lond. 8. Vol. 1770. 4.

and ſhould revenge the death of the Queen of Scots, on whom they had fixed all their affections. The fate of England muſt be decided in one battle at ſea, and another at land; and what compariſon between the Engliſh and Spaniards, either in point of naval force, or in the numbers, reputation, and veteran bravery of their armies? Beſides the acquiſition of ſo great a kingdom, ſucceſs againſt England enſured the immediate ſubjection of the Hollanders, who, attacked on every hand, and deprived of all ſupport, muſt yield their ſtubborn necks to that yoke, which they had ſo long reſiſted. Happily this conqueſt, as it was of the utmoſt importance to the grandeur of Spain, would not at preſent be oppoſed by the jealouſy of the neighbouring powers, naturally ſo much intereſted to prevent the ſucceſs of that enterprize. A truce was lately concluded with the Turks; the empire was in the hands of a friend and near ally: and France, the perpetual rival of Spain, was ſo torn with inteſtine commotions, that ſhe had no leiſure to pay attention to her foreign intereſts. This favourable opportunity therefore, which might never again preſent itſelf, muſt be ſeized; and one bold effort made for acquiring that aſcendant in Europe, to which the preſent greatneſs and proſperity of the Spaniards ſeemed ſo fully to intitle them.

Theſe hopes and motives engaged Philip, notwithſtanding his cautious temper, to undertake this hazardous enterprize; and tho' the Prince, now created by the pope, duke of Parma, when conſulted, oppoſed the attempt, at leaſt repreſented the neceſſity of previouſly getting poſſeſſion of ſome ſea-port town in the Netherlands, which might afford a retreat to the Spaniſh navy, it was determined by the catholic monarch to proceed immediately to the execution of his ambitious project. During ſome time he had been ſecretly making preparations; but as ſoon as the reſolution was fully taken, every part of his vaſt empire reſounded with the noiſe of armaments, and all his miniſters, generals, and admirals, were employed in forwarding the deſign. The marquis of Santa Cruz, a ſea officer of great reputation and experience, was deſtined to command the fleet; and by his counſels were the naval equipments conducted. In all the ports of Sicily, Naples, Spain, and Portugal, artizans were employed in building veſſels of uncommon ſize and force; naval ſtores were bought at a great expence; proviſions amaſſed; armies levied and quartered in the maritime towns of Spain; and plans laid for fitting out ſuch a fleet and embarkation as had never before had its equal in Europe. The military preparations

parations in Flanders were no leſs formidable. Troops from all quarters were every moment aſſembling, to reinforce the duke of Parma. Capizuchi and Spinelli, conducted forces from Italy: The marquis of Borgaut, a prince of the houſe of Auſtria, levied troops in Germany: The Walloon and Burgundian regiments were compleated or augmented: The Spaniſh infantry was ſupplied with recruits; and an army of thirty four thouſand men was aſſembled in the Netherlands, and kept in readineſs to be tranſported into England. The duke of Parma employed all the carpenters whom he could procure, either in Flanders or in Lower Germany, and the coaſts of the Baltic; and he built at Dunkirk, and Newport, but eſpecially at Antwerp, a great number of boats and flat bottomed veſſels, for the tranſporting of his infantry and cavalry. The moſt renowned nobility and princes of Italy and Spain were ambitious of ſharing in the honour of this great enterprize. Don Amadæus of Savoy, Don John of Medicis, Veſpaſian Gonzaga, duke of Sabionetta, and the duke of Paſtrana, haſtened to join the army under the duke of Parma. About two thouſand volunteers in Spain, many of them men of family, had inliſted in the ſervice. No doubt was entertained, but ſuch vaſt preparations, conducted by officers of ſuch conſummate ſkill, muſt finally be ſucceſsful. And the Spaniards, oſtentatious of their power, and elevated with vain hopes, had already denominated their navy the *Invincible Armada.*

News of theſe extradordinary preparations ſoon reached the court of London; and notwithſtanding the ſecrecy of the Spaniſh council, and their pretending to employ this force in the Indies, it was eaſily concluded, that they meant to make ſome effort againſt England. The Queen had foreſeen the invaſion; and finding that ſhe muſt now contend for her crown with the whole force of Spain, ſhe made preparations for reſiſtance; nor was ſhe terrified with that power, by which, all Europe apprehended, ſhe muſt of neceſſity be overwhelmed. Her force indeed ſeemed very unequal to reſiſt ſo potent an enemy. All the ſailors in England amounted at that time to about fourteen thouſand men. The ſize of the Engliſh ſhipping was, in general, ſo ſmall, that, except a few of the Queen's ſhips of war, there were not four veſſels belonging to the merchants which exceeded four hundred tons. The royal navy conſiſted only of twenty-eight ſail, many of which were of ſmall ſize; none of them exceeding the bulk of our largeſt frigates, and moſt of them deſerving rather the name of pinnaces than of ſhips. The only advantage

of the English fleet consisted in the dexterity and courage of the seamen, who, being accustomed to sail in tempestuous seas, and expose themselves to all dangers, as much exceeded in this particular the Spanish mariners, as their vessels were inferior in size and force to those of that nation. All the commercial towns of England were required to furnish ships for the re-inforcing this small navy; and they discovered, on the present occasion, great alacrity in defending their liberty and religion against those imminent perils, with which they were menaced. The citizens of London, in order to shew their zeal in the common cause, instead of fifteen vessels, which they were commanded to equip, voluntarily fitted out double the number, The gentry and nobility hired, and armed, and manned, fortythree ships at their own charge; and all the loans of money, which the Queen demanded, were frankly granted by the persons applied to. Lord Howard of Effingham, a man of courage and capacity, was admiral, and took on him the command of the navy: Drake, Hawkins, and Frobisher, the most renowned seamen in Europe, served under him. The principal fleet was stationed at Plymouth. A smaller squadron, consisting of forty vessels, English and Flemish, was commanded by the lord Seymour, second son of protector Somerset; and lay off Dunkirk, in order to intercept the duke of Parma.

The land forces of England, compared to those of Spain, possessed contrary qualities to its naval power: They were more numerous than the enemy, but much inferior in discipline, reputation, and experience. An army of twenty thousand men was disposed in different bodies along the south coast; and orders were given them, if they could not hinder the Spaniards from landing, to retire backwards, to waste the country around, and to wait for reinforcement from the neighbouring counties, before they approached the enemy. A body of twenty-two thousand foot, and a thousand horse, under the command of the earl of Leicester, was stationed at Tilbury, in order to defend the capital. The principal army consisted of thirty-four thousand foot, and two thousand horse, and was commanded by lord Hunsdon. These forces were reserved for guarding the Queen's person; and were appointed to march whithersoever the enemy should appear. The fate of England, if all the Spanish armies should be able to land, seemed to depend on the issue of a single battle; and men of reflection entertained the most dismal apprehensions, when they considered the force of fifty thousand veteran Spaniards, commanded by experienced officers

officers, under the duke of Parma, the moſt conſummate general of the age; and compared this formidable armament with the military power, which England, not enervated by peace, but long diſuſed to war, could muſter up againſt it.

The chief ſupport of the kingdom ſeemed to conſiſt in the vigour and prudence of the Queen's conduct; who, undiſmayed by the preſent dangers, iſſued all her orders with tranquillity, animated her people to a ſteady reſiſtance, and employed every reſource, which either her domeſtic ſituation or her foreign alliances could afford her. She ſent Sir Robert Sydney into Scotland; and exhorted the King to remain attached to her, and to conſider the danger, which at preſent menaced his ſovereignty no leſs than her own, from the ambition of the Spaniſh tyrant! The ambaſſador found James well diſpoſed to cultivate an union with England, and that prince even kept himſelf prepared to march with the force of his whole kingdom to the aſſiſtance of Elizabeth. Her authority with the King of Denmark, and the tye of their common religion, engaged this monarch, upon her application, to ſeize a ſquadron of ſhips, which Philip had bought or hired in the Daniſh harbours: The Hanſe Towns, though not at that time on good terms with Elizabeth, were induced, by the ſame motives, to retard ſo long the equipment of ſome veſſels in their ports, that they became uſeleſs to the purpoſe of invading England. All the proteſtants throughout Europe regarded this enterprize as the critical event, which was to decide for ever the fate of their religion; and though unable, by reaſon of their diſtance, to join their force to that of Eliſabeth, they kept their eyes fixed on her conduct and fortune, and beheld with anxiety, mixed with admiration, the intrepid countenance, with which ſhe encountered that dreadful tempeſt, which was every moment approaching towards her.

The Queen alſo was ſenſible, that, next to the general popularity, which ſhe enjoyed, and the confidence, which her ſubjects repoſed in her prudent government, the firmeſt ſupport of her throne conſiſted in the general zeal of the people for the proteſtant religion, and the ſtrong prejudices which they had imbibed againſt popery. She took care, on the preſent occaſion, to revive in the nation this attachment to their own ſect, and this abhorrence of the oppoſite. The Engliſh were reminded of their former danger from the tyranny of Spain: All the barbarities, exerciſed by Mary againſt the proteſtants, were aſcribed to the counſels of that bigotted and imperious nation: The

bloody maſſacres in the Indies, the unrelenting executions in the Low Countries, the horrid cruelties and iniquities of the inquiſition, were ſet before men's eyes: A liſt and deſcription was publiſhed, and pictures diſperſed, of the ſeveral inſtruments of torture, with which, it was pretended, the Spaniſh Armada was loaded: And every artifice, as well as reaſon, was employed, to animate the people to a vigorous defence of their religion, their laws, and their liberties.

But while the Queen, in this critical emergence, rouzed the animoſity of the nation againſt popery, ſhe treated the partizans of that ſect with moderation, and gave not way to an undiſtinguiſhing fury againſt them. Though ſhe knew, that Sixtus Quintus, the preſent pope, famous for his rapacity and tyranny, had fulminated a new bull of excommunication againſt her, hat depoſed her from the throne, had abſolved her ſubjects from their oaths of allegiance, hat publiſhed a cruſade againſt England, and had granted plenary indulgences to every one engaged in the preſent invaſion; ſhe would not believe, that all her catholic ſubjects could be ſo blinded, as to ſacrifice to bigotry their duty to their ſovereign, and the liberty and independency of their native country. She rejected all violent counſels, by which ſhe was urged to ſeek pretences for diſpatching the leaders of that party: She would not even confine any conſiderable number of them: And the catholics, ſenſible of this good uſage, generally expreſſed great zeal for the public defence. Some gentlemen of that ſect, conſcious that they could not juſtly expect any truſt or authority, entered themſelves as volunteers in the fleet or army: Some equipped ſhips at their own charge, and gave the command of them to proteſtants: Others were active in animating their tenants, and vaſſals, and neighbours, to the defence of their country: And every rank of men, burying for the preſent all party diſtinctions, ſeemed to prepare themſelves, with order as well as vigour, to reſiſt the violence of theſe invaders.

The more to excite the martial ſpirit of the nation, the Queen appeared on horſeback in the camp at Tilbury; and riding through the lines, diſcovered a chearful and animated countenance, exhorted the ſoldiers to remember their duty to their country and their religion, and profeſſed her intention, though a woman, to lead them herſelf into the field againſt the enemy, and rather to periſh in battle than ſurvive the ruin and ſlavery of her people. By this ſpirited behaviour ſhe revived the tenderneſs and admiration of the ſoldiery: An attachment

to

to her perſon became a kind of enthuſiaſm among them: And they aſked one another, whether it were poſſible, that Engliſhmen could abandon this glorious cauſe, could diſplay leſs courage than appeared in the female ſex, or could ever, by any dangers, be induced to relinquiſh the defence of their heroic princeſs.

The Spaniſh Armada was ready in the beginning of May (1588) but the moment it was preparing to ſail, the marquis of Santa Cruz, the admiral, was ſeized with a violent fever, of which he ſoon after died. The vice-admiral, the duke of Paliano, by a ſtrange concurrence of accidents, at the very ſame time, ſuffered the ſame fate; and the King appointed for admiral the duke of Medina Sidona, a nobleman of great family, but unexperienced in action, and entirely unacquainted with ſea affairs. Alcarede was appointed vice-admiral. This misfortune, beſides the loſs of ſo great an officer as Santa Cruz, retarded the ſailing of the Armada, and gave the Engliſh more time for their preparations to oppoſe them. At laſt, the fleet, full of hopes and alacrity, ſet ſail from Liſbon; but next day met with a violent tempeſt, which ſcattered the ſhips, ſunk ſome of the ſmalleſt, and forced the reſt to take ſhelter in the Groyne, where they waited till they could be refitted. When news of this event was carried to England, the Queen concluded, that the deſign of an invaſion was diſappointed for this ſummer; and being always ready to lay hold of every pretence for ſaving money, ſhe made Walſingham write to the admiral, directing him to lay up ſome of the larger ſhips, and to diſcharge the ſeamen: But lord Effingham, who was not ſo ſanguine in his hopes, uſed the freedom to diſobey theſe orders; and he begged leave to retain all the ſhips in ſervice, tho' it ſhould be at his own expence. He took advantage of a north wind, and ſailed towards the coaſt of Spain, with an intention of attacking the enemy in their harbours; but the wind changing to the ſouth, he became apprehenſive, leſs they might have ſet ſail, and by paſſing him at ſea, invade England, now expoſed by the abſence of the fleet. He returned, therefore, with the utmoſt expedition to Plymouth, and lay at anchor in that harbour.

Meanwhile, all the damages of the Armada were repaired; and the Spaniards with freſh hopes ſet out again to ſea, in proſecution of their enterprize. The fleet conſiſted of a hundred and thirty veſſels, of which near a hundred were galleons, and were of greater ſize than any ever before uſed in Europe. It carried on board nineteen thouſand two hundred and ninety-

five

five ſoldiers, eight thouſand four hundred and fifty-ſix mariners, two thouſand and eighty-eight gally ſlaves, and two thouſand ſix hundred and thirty great pieces of braſs ordnance. It was victualled for ſix months; and was attended with twenty leſſer ſhips, called caravals, and ten ſalves with ſix oars apiece.

The plan formed by the King of Spain, was, that the Armada ſhould ſail to the coaſt oppoſite to Dunkirk and Newport; and having chaſed away all Engliſh or Flemiſh veſſels, which might obſtruct the paſſage, (for it was never ſuppoſed they could make oppoſition) ſhould join themſelves with the duke of Parma, ſhould thence make ſail to the Thames, and having landed the whole Spaniſh army, thus complete at one blow the entire conqueſt of England. In proſecution of this ſcheme, Philip gave orders to the duke of Medina, that, in paſſing along the channel, he ſhould ſail as near the coaſt of France as he could with ſafety; that he ſhould by this policy avoid meeting with the Engliſh fleet; and keeping in view the main enterprize, ſhould neglect all ſmaller ſucceſſes, which might prove an obſtacle, or even interpoſe a delay, to the acquiſition of a kingdom. After the Armada was under ſail, they took a fiſherman, who informed them, that the Engliſh admiral had been lately at ſea, had heard of the tempeſt which ſcattered the Armada, had retired back into Plymouth, and no longer expecting an invaſion this ſeaſon, had laid up his ſhips, and diſcharged moſt of the ſeamen. From this falſe intelligence the duke of Medina conceived the great facility of attacking and deſtroying the Engliſh ſhips in harbour; and he was tempted, by the proſpect of ſo deciſive an advantage, to break his orders, and make ſail directly for Plymouth: A reſolution which proved the ſafety of England. The Lizard was the firſt land made by the Armada, about ſun-ſet; and as the Spaniards took it for the Ram-head near Plymouth, they bore out to ſea, with an intention of returning next day, and attacking the Engliſh navy. They were deſcried by Fleming, a Scottiſh pyrate, who was roving in theſe ſeas, and who immediately ſet ſail, to inform the Engliſh admiral of their approach: Another fortunate event, which contributed extremely to the ſafety of the fleet. Effingham had juſt time to get out of port, when he ſaw the Spaniſh Armada coming full ſail towards him, diſpoſed in the form of a creſcent, and ſtretching the diſtance of ſeven miles from the extremity of one diviſion to that of the other.

The writers of that age raiſe their ſtyle by a pompous deſcription of this ſpectacle; the moſt magnificent that had ever

ever appeared upon the ocean, infufing equal terror and admiration into the minds of all beholders. The lofty mafts, the fwelling fails, and the towering prows of the Spanifh galleons, feem impoffible to be juftly painted, otherwife than by affuming the colours of poetry; and an eloquent hiftorian of Italy, in imitation of Camden, has afferted, that the Armada, though the fhips bore every fail, yet advanced with a flow motion; as if the ocean groaned with fupporting, and the winds were tired with impelling, fo enormous a weight. The truth, however, is, the largeft of the Spanifh veffels would fcarcely pafs for third rates in the prefent navy of England; yet were they fo ill framed, or fo ill governed, that they were quite unwieldy, and could not fail upon a wind, nor tack on an occafion, nor be managed in ftormy weather by the feamen. Neither the mechanics of fhip-building, nor the experience of mariners, had attained fo great perfection as could ferve for the fecurity and government of fuch bulky veffels; and the Englifh, who had already had experience how unferviceable they commonly were, beheld without difmay their tremendous appearance.

Effingham gave orders, not to come to clofe fight with the Spaniards; where the fize of the fhips he fufpected, and the numbers of the foldiers, would be a difadvantage to the Englifh; but to cannonade them at a diftance, and to wait the opportunity, which winds, currents, or various accidents muft afford him, of intercepting fome fcattered veffels of the enemy. Nor was it long before the event anfwered expectation. A great fhip of Bifcay, on board of which was a confiderable part of the Spanifh money, was fet on fire by accident; and while all hands were employed in extinguifhing it, fhe fell behind the reft of the Armada: The great galleon of Andaluzia was detained by the fpringing of her maft: And both thefe veffels were taken, after fome refiftance, by Sir Francis Drake. As the Armada advanced up the channel, the Englifh hung upon its rear, and ftill invefted it with fkirmifhes. Each trial abated the confidence of the Spaniards, and added courage to the Englifh; and the latter foon found, that even in clofe fight the fize of the Spanifh fhips was no advantage to them. Their bulk expofed them the more to the fire of the enemy; while their cannon, placed too high, fhot over the heads of the Englifh. The alarm having now reached the coaft of England, the nobility and gentry haftened out with their veffels from every harbour, and reinforced the admiral. The earls of Oxford,

North-

Northumberland, and Cumberland, Sir Thomas Cecil, Sir Robert Cecil, Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Thomas Vavasor, Sir Thomas Gerrard, Sir Charles Blount, with many others, distinguished themselves by this generous and disinterested service of their country. The English fleet, after the conjunction of these ships amounted to an hundred and forty sail.

The Armada had now reached Calais, and cast anchor before that place; in expectation, that the duke of Parma, who had got intelligence of their approach, would put to sea, and join his forces to them. The English admiral practised here a successful stratagem upon the Spaniards. He took eight of his smaller ships, and filling them with all combustible materials, sent them, one after another, into the midst of the enemy. The Spaniards fancied, that they were fireships of the same contrivance with a famous vessel, which had lately done so much execution in the Shelde near Antwerp; and they immediately cut their cables, and took to fight with the greatest disorder and precipitation. The English fell upon them next morning, while in confusion; and besides doing great damage to other ships, they took or destroyed about twelve of the enemy.

By this time, it was become apparent, that the intention, for which those preparations were made by the Spaniards, was entirely frustrated. The vessels, provided by the duke of Parma, were made for transporting soldiers not for fighting; and that general, when urged to leave the harbour, positively refused to expose his flourishing army to such apparent hazard, as it must incur; while the English, not only were able to keep the sea, but seemed even to triumph over their enemy. The Spanish admiral found, in many rencounters, that while, he lost so considerable a part of his own navy, he had destroyed only one small vessel of the English, and he foresaw, that, by continuing so unequal a combat, he must draw inevitable destruction on all the remainder. He prepared therefore to return homewards; but as the winds were contrary to his passage through the channel, he resolved to sail northwards, and making the tour of the island reach the Spanish harbours by the ocean. The English fleet followed him during some time; and had not their ammunition fallen short, by the negligence of the offices in supplying them, they had obliged the whole Armada to surrender at discretion. The duke of Medina had once taken that resolution; but was diverted from it by the advice of his confessor. This conclusion of the enterprize would have been more

more glorious to the Englifh; but the event proved equally fatal to the Spaniards. A violent tempeft overtook the Armada after it paffed the Orkneys: The fhips had already loft their anchors, and were obliged to keep to fea: The mariners, unaccuftomed to fuch hardfhips, and not able to govern fuch unwieldy veffels, yielded to the fury of the ftorm, and allowed their fhips to drive either on the weftern ifles of Scotland, or on the coaft of Ireland, where they were miferably wrecked. Not a half of the navy returned to Spain; and the feamen, as well as foldiers, who remained, were fo overcome with hardfhips and fatigue, and fo difpirited by their difcomfiture, that they filled all Spain with accounts of the defperate valour of the Englifh, and of the tempeftuous violence of that ocean which furrounds them.

Such was the miferable and difhonourable conclufion of an enterprize, which had been preparing for three years, which had exhaufted the revenue and force of Spain, and which had long filled all Europe with anxiety or expectation. Philip, who was a flave to his ambition, but had an entire command over his countenance, no fooner heard of the mortifying event, which blafted all his hopes, than he fell on his knees, and rendering thanks for that gracious difpenfation of providence, expreffed his joy, that the calamity was not greater. The Spanifh priefts, who had fo often bleft this holy crufade, and foretold its infallible fuccefs, were fomewhat at a lofs to account for the victory gained over the catholic monarch by excommunicated heretics and an execrable ufurper: But they at laft difcovered, that all the calamities of the Spaniards had proceeded from their allowing the infidel Moors to live among them.

CAPT. LEMUEL GULLIVER'S VOYAGE TO LILIPUT. *)

We fet fail from *Briftol*, *May* 4th, 1699, and our voyage at firft was very profperous.

It would not be proper, for fome reafons, to trouble the reader with the particulars of our adventures in thofe feas: let it fuffice to inform him, that, in our paffage from thence to the *Eaft-Indies*, we were driven by a violent ftorm to the north-

*) The Works of Dr. Jonathan Swift. Lond. 1765. Vol. 12. 12. Gullivers Voyage to Liliput. Lond. 1787. 1 V. 8.

north-weſt of *Van Diemen's land*. By an obſervation we found ourſelves in the latitude of 30 degrees 2 minutes ſouth. Twelve of our crew were dead by immoderate labour, and ill food; the reſt were in a very weak condition. On the fifth of *November*, which was the beginning of ſummer in thoſe parts, the weather being very hazy, the ſeamen ſpied a rock within half a cable's length of the ſhip; but the wind was ſo ſtrong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately ſplit. Six of the crew, of whom I was one, having let down the boat into the ſea, made a ſhift to get clear of the ſhip and the rock. We rowed by my computation about three leagues, till we were able to work no longer, being already ſpent with labour while we were in the ſhip. We therefore truſted ourſelves to the mercy of the waves, and in about half an hour the boat was overſet by a ſudden flurry from the north. What became of my companions in the boat, as well as of thoſe who eſcaped on the rock, or were left in the veſſel, I cannot tell; but conclude they were all loſt. For my own part, I ſwam as fortune directed me, and was puſhed forward by wind and tide. I often let my legs drop, and could feel no bottom: but when I was almoſt gone, and able to ſtruggle no longer, I found myſelf within my depth; and by this time the ſtorm was much abated. The declivity was ſo ſmall, that I walked near a mile before I got to the ſhore, which I conjectured was about eight o'clock in the evening. I then advanced forward near half a mile, but could not diſcover any ſigns of houſes or inhabitants; at leaſt I was in ſo weak a condition, that I did not obſerve them. I was extremely tired, and with that, and the heat of the weather, and about half a pint of brandy that I drank as I left the ſhip, I found myſelf much inclined to ſleep. I lay down on the graſs, which was very ſhort and ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I remembered to have done in my life, and, as I reckoned, about nine hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt daylight. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: for as I happened to lie on my back, I found my arms and legs were ſtrongly faſtened on each ſide to the ground; and my hair, which was long and thick, tied down in the ſame manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral ſlender ligatures acroſs my body, from my arm-pits to my thighs. I could only look upwards; the ſun began to grow hot, and the light offended my eyes. I heard a confuſed noiſe about me but in the poſture I lay, could ſee nothing except the

ſky. In a little time I felt ſomething alive moving on my left leg, which advancing gently forward over my breaſt came almoſt up to my chin; when bending my eyes downward as much as I could, I perceived it to be a human creature not ſix inches high, with a bow and arrow in his hands, and a quiver at his back. In the mean time, I felt at leaſt forty more of the ſame kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ran back in a fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt with the falls they got by leaping from my ſides upon the ground. However, they ſoon returned, and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full ſight of my face, lifting up his hands and eyes by way of admiration, cried out in a ſhrill but diſtinct voice, *hekinah degul:* the others repeated the ſame words ſeveral times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the reader may believe, in great uneaſineſs; at lenght, ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the fortune to break the ſtrings, and wrench out the pegs that faſtened my left arm to the ground; for, by lifting it up to my face, I diſcovered the methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſame time with a violent pull, which gave me exceſſive pain, I a little looſened the ſtrings that tied down my hair on the left ſide, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my head about two inches. But the creatures ran of a ſecond time, before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great ſhout in a very ſhrill accent, and after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *tolgo phonae;* when in an inſtant I felt above an hundred arrows diſcharged on my left hand, which pricked me like ſo many needles; and beſides, they ſhot another flight into the air, as we do bombs in *Europe*, where of many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my body, (though I felt them not) and ſome on my face, which I immediately covered with my left hand. When this ſhower of arrows was over, I fell a groaning with grief and pain, and then ſtriving again to get looſe, they diſcharged another volley larger than the firſt, and ſome of them attempted with ſpears to ſtick me in the ſides; but by good luck I had on me a buff jerkin, which they could not pierce. I thought it the moſt prudent method to lie ſtill, and my deſign was to continue ſo till night, when, my left hand being already looſe, I could eaſily free myſelf: and as for the inhabitants, I had reaſon to believe I might be a match for the greateſt army they could bring againſt me, if they were all of the ſame ſize with him,

S that

that I ſaw. But fortune diſpoſed otherways of me. When the people obſerved I was quiet, they diſcharged no more arrows: but, by the noiſe I heard, I knew their numbers increaſed; and about four yards from me, over-againſt my right ear, I heard a knocking for above an hour, like that of people at work; when turning my head that way, as well as the pegs and ſtrings would permit me, I ſaw a ſtage erected about a foot and a half from the ground, capable of holding four of the inhabitants, with two or three ladders to mount it: from whence one of them, who ſeemed to be a perſon of quality, made me a long ſpeech, whereof I underſtood not one ſyllabe. But I ſhould have mentioned, that before the principal perſon began his oration, he cried out three times, *langro dehul ſan;* (theſe words and the former where afterwards repeated and explained to me). Whereupon immediately about fifty of the inhabitants came and cut the ſtrings that faſtened the left ſide of my head, which gave me the liberty of turning it to the right, and of obſerving the perſon and geſture of him that was to ſpeak. He appeared to be of a middle age, and taller than any of the other three who attended him, whereof one was a page that held up his train, and ſeemed to be ſomewhat longer than my middle finger; the other two ſtood one on each ſide to ſupport him. He acted every part of an orator, and I could obſerve many periods of threatenings, and others of promiſes, pity, and kindneſs. I anſwered in a few words, but in the moſt ſubmiſſive manner, lifting up my left hand and both my eyes to the ſun, as calling him for a witneſs; and being almoſt famiſhed with hunger, having not eaten a morſel for ſome hours before I left the ſhip, I found the demands of nature ſo ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict rules of decency) by putting my finger frequently to my mouth, to ſignify that I wanted food. The *hurgo* (for ſo they call a great lord, as I afterwards learnt) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the ſtage, and commanded that ſeveral ladders ſhould be applied to my ſides, on which above an hundred of the inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my mouth, laden with baſkets full of meat, which had been provided and ſent thither by the king's orders, upon the firſt intelligence he received of me. I obſerved there was the fleſh of ſeveral animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the taſte. There were ſhoulders, legs, and loins, ſhaped like thoſe of mutton, and very well dreſſed,

but

but ſmaller than the wings of a lark. I eat them by two or three at a mouthful, and took three loaves at a time about the bigneſs of muſket bullets. They ſupplied me as faſt as they could, ſhewing a thouſand marks of wonder and aſtoniſhment at my bulk and appetite. I then made another ſign, that I wanted drink. They found by my eating, that a ſmall quantity would not ſuffice me, and being a moſt ingenious people, they flung up with great dexterity one of their largeſt hogſheads, then rolled it towards my hand, and beat out the top; I drank it off at a draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a pint, and taſted like a ſmall wine of *Burgundy*, but much more delicious. They brought me a ſecond hogſhead, which I drank in the ſame manner, and made ſigns for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe wonders, they ſhouted for joy, and danced upon my breaſt, repeating ſeveral times as they did at firſt, *hekinah degul*. They made me a ſign that I ſhould throw down the two hogſheads, but firſt warning the people below to ſtand out of the way, crying aloud, *borach mevola*, and when they ſaw the veſſels in the air, there was an univerſal ſhout of *hekinah degul*. I confeſs, I was often tempted while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my reach, and daſh them againſt the ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the promiſe of honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive behaviour, ſoon drove out theſe imaginations. Beſides, I now conſidered myſelf as bound by the laws of hoſpitality to a people, who had treated me with ſo much expence and magnificence. However, in my thoughts I could not ſufficiently wonder at the intrepidity of theſe diminutive mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk upon my body, while one of my hands was at liberty, without trembling at the very ſight of ſo prodigious a creature, as I muſt appear to them. After ſome time, when they obſerved that I made no more demands for meat, there appeared before me a perſon of high rank from his imperial majeſty. His excellency, having mounted on the ſmall of my right leg, advanced forwards up to my face, with about a dozen of his retinue. And producing his credentials under the ſignet royal, which he applied cloſe to my eyes, ſpoke about ten minutes without any ſigns of anger, but with a kind of determinate reſolution; often pointing forwards, which,

as I afterwards found, was towards the capital city, about half a mile diſtant, whither it was agreed by his majeſty in council that I muſt be conveyed. I anſwered in few words, but to no purpoſe, and made a ſign with my hand that was looſe, putting it to the other (but over his excellency's head for fear of hurting him or his train) and then to my own head and body, to ſignify that I deſired my liberty. It appeared that he underſtood me well enough, for he ſhook his head by way of diſapprobation and held his hand in a poſture to ſhew, that I muſt be carried as a priſoner. However, he made other ſigns to let me underſtand, that I ſhould have meat and drink enough, and very good treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my bonds, but again, when I felt the ſmart of their arrows upon my face and hands, which were all in bliſters, and many of the darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerving likewiſe that the number of my enemies increaſed, I gave tokens to let them know, that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this the *hurgo* and his train withdrew with much civility and chearful countenances. Soon after I heard a general ſhout, with frequent repetitions of the words, *peplom ſelan*, and I felt great numbers of people on my left ſide relaxing the cords to ſuch a degree, that I was able to turn upon my right, and to eaſe myſelf with making water; which I very plentifully did, to the great aſtoniſhment of the people, who conjecturing, by my motion, what I was going to do, immediately opened to the right and left on that ſide, to avoid the torrent with fell with ſuch noiſe and violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my face and both my hands with a ſort of ointment very pleaſant to the ſmell, which in a few minutes removed all the ſmart of their arrows. Theſe circumſtances, added to the refreſhment I had received by their victuals and drink, which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſed me to ſleep. I ſlept about eight hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no wonder, for the phyſicians, by the emperor's order, had mingled a ſleepy potion in the hogſheads of wine.

It ſeems that, upon the firſt moment I was diſcovered ſleeping on the ground after my landing, the emperor had early notice of it by an expreſs; and determined in council, that I ſhould be tied in the manner I have related, (which was done in the night while I ſlept) that plenty of meat and drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a machine prepared to carry me to the capital city.

This resolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any prince in *Europe* on the like occasion; however, in my opinion, it was extremely prudent, as well as generous: for supposing these people had endeavoured to kill me with their spears and arrows while I was asleep, I should certainly have awaked with the first sense of smart, which might so far have rouzed my rage and strenght, as to have enabled me to break the strings wherewith I was tied; after which, as they were not able to make resistance, so they could expect no mercy.

These people are most excellent mathematicians, and arrived to a great perfection in mechanicks by the countenance and encouragement of the emperor, who is a renowned patron of learning. This prince had several machines fixed on wheels for the carriage of trees and other great weights. He often builds his largest men of war, whereof some are nine feet long, in the woods where the timber grows, and has them carried on these engines three or four hundred yards to the sea. Five hundred carpenters and engineers were immediately set at work to prepare the greatest engine they had. It was a frame of wood raised three inches from the ground, about seven feet long and four wide, moving upon twenty-two wheels. The shout I heard was upon the arrival of this engine, which it seems set out in four hours after my landing. It was brought parallel to me, as I lay. But the principal difficulty was to raise and place me in this vehicle. Eighty, poles each of one foot high, were erected for this purpose, and very strong cords of the bigness of packthread were fastened by hooks to many bandages, which the workmen had girt round my neck, my hands, my body, and my legs. Nine hundred of the strongest men were employed to draw up these cords by many pullies fastened on the poles, and thus, in less than three hours, I was raised and flung into the engine, and there tied fast. All this I was told, for, while the whole operation was performing, I lay in a profound sleep by the force of that soporiferous medicine infused into my liquor. Fifteen hundred of the emperor's largest horses, each about four inches and an half high, were employed to draw me towards the metropolis, which, as I said, was half a mile distant.

About four hours after we began our journey, I awacked by a very ridiculous accident; for the carriage being stopt a while to adjust something that was out of order, two or three

of the young natives had the curiofity to fee how I looked when I was afleep; they climbed up into the engine; and advancing very foftly to my face, one of them, an officer in the guards, put the fharp end of his half-pike a good way up into my left noftril, which tickled my nofe like a ftraw, and made me fneeze violently: whereupon they ftole off unperceived, and it was three weeks before I knew the caufe of my awaking fo fuddenly. We made a long march the remaining part of the day, and refted at night with five hundred guards on each fide of me, half with torches, and half with bows and arrows, ready to fhoot me, if I fhould offer to ftir. The next morning at fun-rife we continued our march, and arrived within two hundred yards of the city-gates about noon. The emperor, and all his court, came out to meet us, but his great officers would by no means fuffer his majefty to endanger his perfon by mounting on my body.

At the place where the carriage ftopt, there ftood an ancient temple, efteemed to be the largeft in the whole kingdom, which, having been polluted fome years before by an unnatural murder, was according to the zeal of thofe people looked upon as prophane, and therefore had been applied to common ufe, and all the ornaments and furniture carried away. In this edifice it was determined I fhould lodge. The great gate fronting to the north was about four feet high, and almoft two feet wide, through which I could eafily creep. On each fide of the gate was a fmall window, not above fix inches from the ground: into that on the left fide the king's fmith conveyed fourfcore and eleven chains, like thofe that hang to a lady's watch in *Europe*, and almoft as large, which were locked to my left leg with fix and thirty padlocks. Overagainft this temple, on the other fide of the great highway, at twenty feet diftance, there was a turret at leaft five feet high. Here the emperor afcended with many principal lords of his court to have an opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not fee them. It was reckoned that above an hundred thoufand inhabitants came out of the town upon the fame errand; and in fpite of my guards, I believe, there could not be fewer than ten thoufand at feveral times, who mounted my body by the help of ladders. But a proclamation was foon iffued to forbid it on pain of death. When the Workmen found it was impoffible for me to break loofe, they cut all the ftrings that bound me; whereupon I rofe up with as melancholy a difpofition as ever I had in my life. But the noife

and

and aſtoniſhment of the people at ſeeing me riſe and walk are not to be expreſſed. The chains, that held my left leg, were about two yards long, and gave me not only the liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a ſemicircle; but, being fixed within four inches of the gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full lenght in the temple.

CAPT. GULLIVERS ADVENTURES AT THE COURT OF THE KING OF BROBDIGNAC. *)

It is the cuſtom, that every *Wedneſday* (which, as I have before obſerved, is their *Sabbath*) the king and queen, with the royal iſſue of both ſexes, dine together in the apartment of his majeſty, to whom I was now become a great favourite; and at theſe times my little chair and table were placed at his left hand before one of the ſalt-cellars. This prince took a pleaſure in converſing with me, enquiring into the manners, religion, laws, government, and learning of *Europe;* wherein I gave him the beſt account I was able. His apprehenſion was ſo clear, and his judgment ſo exact, that he made very wiſe reflections and obſervations upon all I ſaid. But I confeſs, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved country, of our trade, and wars by ſea and land, of our ſchiſms in religion, and parties in the ſtate; the prejudices of his education prevailed ſo far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his right hand, and ſtroaking me gently with the other, after an hearty fit of laughing, aſked me, whether I was a *whig* or *tory?* Then turning to his firſt miniſter, who waited behind him with a white ſtaff near as tall as the mainmaſt of the *royal-ſovereign*, he obſerved how contemptible a thing was human grandeur, which could be mimicked by ſuch diminutive inſects as I: and yet, ſays he, I dare engage, theſe creatures have their titles and diſtinction of honour, they contrive little neſts and burrows, that they call houſes and cities; they make a figure in dreſs and equipage; they love, they fight, they diſpute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my colour came and went ſeveral times with indignation to hear our noble country, the miſtreſs of arts and arms, the

*) Swift's Works Vol. 2.

ſcourge of *France*, the arbitreſs of *Europe*, the ſeat of virtue, piety, honour, and truth, the pride and envy of the world, ſo contemptuouſly treated.

But as I wat not in a condition to reſent injuries, ſo upon mature thoughts I began to doubt whether I was injured or not. For, after having been accuſtomed ſeveral months to the ſight and converſe of people, and obſerved every object upon which I caſt my eyes to be of proportionable magnitude, the horror I had at firſt conceived from their bulk and aſpect, was ſo far worn off, that if I had then beheld a company of *Engliſh* lords and ladies in their finery, and birthday cloaths, acting their ſeveral parts in the moſt courtly manner of ſtrutting, and bowing, and prating; to ſay the truth, I ſhould have been ſtrongly tempted to laugh as much at them, as the king and his grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear ſmiling at myſelf, when the queen uſed to place me upon her hand towards a looking glaſs, by which both our perſons appeared before me in full view together; and there could be nothing more ridiculous than the compariſon: ſo that I really began to imagine myſelf dwindled many degrees below my uſual ſize.

Nothing angered and mortified me ſo much as the queen's dwarf, who being of the loweſt ſtature that was ever in that country (for I verily think he was not full thirty feet high) became ſo inſolent at ſeeing a creature ſo much beneath him, that he would always effect to ſwagger and look big as he paſſed by me in the queen's anti-chamber, while I was ſtanding on ſome table talking with the lords or ladies of the court, and he ſeldom failed of a ſmart word or two upon my littleneſs; againſt which I could only revenge myſelf by calling him brother, challenging him to wreſtle, and ſuch repartees as are uſual in the mouths of *court pages*. One day, at dinner, this malicious little cubb was ſo nettled with ſomething I had ſaid to him, that, raiſing himſelf upon the frame of her majeſty's chair, he took me up by the middle, as I was ſitting down not thinking any harm, and let me drop into a large ſilver bowl of cream, and then ran away as faſt as he could. I fell over head and ears, and, if I had not been a good ſwimmer, it might have gone very hard with me; for *Glumdalclitch* in that inſtant happened to be at the other end of the room, and the queen was in ſuch a fright, that ſhe wanted preſence of mind to aſſiſt me. But my little nurſe ran

to

to my relief, and took me out, after I had ſwallowed above a quart of cream. I was put to bed; however I received no other damage than the loſs of a ſuit of cloaths, which was utterly ſpoiled. The dwarf was ſoundly whipped, and as a farther puniſhment forced to drink up the bowl of cream, into which he had thrown me: neither was he ever reſtored to favour: for ſoon after the queen beſtowed him on a lady of high quality, ſo that I ſaw him no more, to my very great ſatisfaction; for I could not tell to what extremity ſuch a malicious urchin might have carried his reſentment.

He had before ſerved me a ſcurvy trick, which ſet the queen a laughing, although at the ſame time ſhe was heartily vexed, and would have immediately caſhiered him, if I had not been ſo generous as to intercede. Her majeſty had taken a marrow-bone upon her plate, and, after knocking out the marrow, placed the bone again in the diſh erect, as it ſtood before; the dwarf watching his opportunity, while *Glumdalclitch* was gone to the ſide-board, mounted the ſtool that ſhe ſtood on to take care of me at meals, took me up in both hands, and ſqueeſing my legs together, wedged them into the marrow-bone, above my waiſt, where I ſtuck for ſome time, and made a very ridiculous figure. I believe it was near a minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But, as princes ſeldom get their meat hot, my legs were not ſcalded, only my ſtockings and breeches in a ſad condition. The dwarf, at my intreaty, had no other puniſhment than a ſound whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the queen upon account of my fearfulneſs; and ſhe uſed to aſk me, whether the people of my country were as great cowards as myſelf? The occaſion was this: the kingdom is much peſtered with flies in ſummer; and theſe odious inſects, each of them as big as a *Dunſtable* lark, hardly gave me any reſt while I ſat at dinner with their continual humming and buzzing about mine ears. They would ſometimes alight upon my victuals, and leave their loathſome excrement or ſpawn behind, which to me was very viſible, though not to the natives of that country, whoſe large optics were not ſo acute as mine in viewing ſmaller objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my noſe or forehead, where they ſtung me to the quick, ſmelling very offenſively; and I could eaſily trace that viſcous matter, which, our naturaliſts tell us, enables thoſe creatures to walk with

their feet upwards upon a cieling. I had much ado to defend myſelf againſt theſe deteſtable animals, and could not forbear ſtarting when they came on my face. It was the common practice of the dwarf to catch a number of theſe inſects in his hand, as ſchoolboys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my noſe, on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the queen. My remedy was to cut them in pieces with my knife, as they flew in the air, wherein my dexterity was much admired.

I remember, one morning, when *Glumdalclitch* hat ſet me in my box upon a window, as ſhe uſually did in fair days to give me air (for I durſt not venture to let the box be hung on a nail out of the window, as we do with cages in *England*) after I had lifted up one of my ſaſhes, and ſat down at my table to eat a piece of ſweet cake for my breakfaſt, above twenty waſps, allured by the ſmell, came flying into the room, humming louder than the drones of as many bag-pipes. Some of them ſeized my cake, and carried it piece-meal away; others flew about my head and face, confounding me with the noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt terror of their ſtings. However I had the courage to riſe and draw my hanger, and attack them in the air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my window. Theſe inſects were as large as partridges; I took out their ſtings, found them an inch and a half long, and as ſharp as needles.

SOME ACCOUNT OF ENGLAND'S TRADE AND COLONIES. *)

Before *England* had foreign Colonies and Factories, our general Commerce was comparatively inconſiderable. The great bulk of our Exportations conſiſted of our Woollen Drapery, Lead, and Tin; in the Times, more eſpecially, before *France* had ſtruck into the Woollen Manufacture, and *Holland* but very little; and that *Florence* and *Venice* were chiefly confined to the ſupplying the Countries within the *Mediterranean* therewith. So that, in effect, we enjoyed al-

*) A. Anderſon's Hiſtorical and Chronological Deduction of the Origin of Commerce from the earlieſt accounts to the preſent Time. Lond. 1764. 2 Vol. fol. & 1788. 3 V. 4.

almost a Monopoly of that Manufacture for the West and North Parts of *Europe* before the Year 1640; *Spain* and *Portugal* being then almost intirely supplied by *us* with light Draperies, as well for their home Consumtion, as for that of their extensive Colonies; from whence, in Return, we were, in those Days, supplied with the Sugars, Tobacco, Drugs &c. which we now have from our own Plantations. For this Reason, our old commercial Writers are almost wholly taken up with the Importance of our *Wool* and *Woollen Manufactures*, which, with our *Tin*, *Lead*, *Leather*, *Coals*, and some other smaller Articles, were all we pretended to call *our* staple Commodities.

With respect to our Importations, *Venice* first, and *Lisbon* next, supplied us with the Merchandize of *East-India &c.* — The Hanse-Towns with naval Stores, Copper, Iron, Linen, and even with the best of our Shipping. — *Germany* also, with Linen, Tin-plates, and Hardware, even so low as to *Nails* themselves. — *France* supplied us, in great Abundance, with Silks, Linen, Wines, Brandies, Paper, Toys, and Frippery. How happy then is the Change in our National Circumstances, since we have had *American* Plantations, the Demand from whence, of all Kinds of Merchandize, having so greatly excited our People at home to the Improvement and Increase of our old Manufactures, and to the Introduction of new ones? Whereby, and likewise by the vast Increase of the Productions of our *American* Plantations, we have got rid, for the most Part, (though not as yet entirely) of a precarious Dependence on other Nations, for what we now either manufacture much better at home, or else are supplied with from our own Plantations and foreign Settlements, in exchange for our native Commodities, instead of our formerly sending out much of our Treasure for the same? How greatly are our Customs thereby increased, from 36,000 *l.* at Queen *Elizabeth's* Death, to 400,000 *l.* at the Restoration of King *Charles* II.; and to four times this last Sum at the present Time? How vastly is our great Metropolis increased, from little above 200,000 Souls, with all its Suburbs on both Sides the *Thames*, at the said Queen's Death, to about (or very near) four times as many at present?

Our *American* Plantations, therefore, by the vast Increase of their People, and of the Commodities by them raised for our own Use, for our Manufactures and Re-exportations, and more especially by the perpetually increasing Demands from then-

thence of all kinds of our Manufactures, Productions, &c. in immense Quantities; (whereby probably about or near a Million of our People are employed at home, many Hundreds of stout Ships, and many Thousands of Mariners, constantly employed; much Wealth, and considerable Quantities of Bullion of both Gold and Silver, continually brought home to us) do undoubtedly, at present more than ever, demand of *us* the *first* and *highest* Regard, preferably to any other commercial Consideration whatever: More especially, if we do but duly consider, that, by the additional Wealth, Power, Territory, and Influence thereby now thrown into our Scale, we are enabled to preserve out dearest Independency with regard to the other Potentates of *Europe;* some of whom are, in little more than one Century past, so increased in Power and Territory, as to have long since given alarming Apprehensions to all their Neighbours.

The Commerce we now carry on with our said *American* Plantations is so vast, as probably already to equal in Quantity, and to exceed in Profit, all the other Commerce we have with the rest of the World. And it being incessantly increasing, in proportion to the Increase of white People there, they are perpetually increasing their useful Productions, cultivating new Plantations, and successfully attempting new Materials for Commerce; as *Silk*, *Indico*, *Coffee*, *Potash*, *Drugs* for Physic, Dyers, and Painters, &c. more especially in our fine Continents-Colonies of *Carolina* and *Georgia*, which, in the Opinion of very knowing Persons, are capable, with proper Industry, of raising the finest Productions of all the three Divisions of the *old* World, as well as of that of the *new* one. In Colonel *John Purry's* Memorial to the Duke of *Newcastle*, then Secretary of State, in the Reign of King *George I.* and which he afterward printed, *Anno* 1724, upon his Application for his carrying into *Carolina* a Colony of *Protestant Switzers;* he lays it down as a *Postulatum*, "That "there is a certain Latitude on our Globe, so happily tem-"pered between the Extremes of Heat and Cold, as to be "more peculiarly adapted than any other for all the said rich "productions: and he seems, with Judgment, to have fixed "on the Latitude of 33 Degrees, (whether *South* or *North*) "being that of *Carolina*, as the identical one for that peculiar "Character.„ That sensible Man, (a Native of *Switzerland*) whom the Author of this Work once conversed with, had before printed at *London* a Memorial, which he had formerly presented

presented to the Directors of the *Dutch East-India* Company, in the Year 1718, on his Return from their Service in *India;* wherein he endeavoured to persuade them to plant new Colonies on the Coast of *Caffres,* (near their Colony at the *Cape of Good Hope*) and also on the Land of *Nuyts*, on the Southern hitherto unplanted Continent called *New-Holland*, not far South from their Island of *Java*, both lying near the said Latitude of 33 Degrees: "A Latitude," (says he) "most fit "for *Vines*, and other *excellent Fruits and Plants;* whereby "the Company would be enabled to supply their *East-India* "Settlements with Wines, Fruits, Oils, and Corn, which "*now* cost them so great an Expence bought of and from the "*Europeans.*" But in this Memorial, *Purry*, it seems, touched on some Points which the Company judged *improper to be published*, and constrained him to leave *Holland.* His next application was to the *French* Ministry, by adapting his Scheme to some of the foreign Settlements of *France.* But their Reference to the *French Academy of Sciences* produced the following *cold* Answer, *viz. That they could not judge of Conntries which they had never seen!* Last of all, he presented the above-named Memorial, *Anno* 1721; wherein he sets forth, from indisputable Facts, "That the identical Latitude "of *South Carolina*, (which then comprehended the Country "since named *Georgia*) or that of 33 Degrees, either *North* "or *South* of the Equator, will ever be found to be pro- "ductive of the richest *Plants, Fruits, Drugs*, &c. of any "Part whatever on the terraqueous Globe, all other Things "being supposed equal, *i. e.* provided there be no natural "Impediments, such as Rocks, Marshes, sandy Desarts, &c. "A Latitude," (says he) "which, by the Moderation of its "Heat, and Temperature of its Air, sheds Fruitfulness on "the Earth, and Happiness on Mankind in general; who, "the farther they are distant from this Degree, are only so "much the less happy: And that the nearer any Country is "to that Latitude, the more hapvy is their Situation. Thus "*Barbary, Egypt, Syria, Persia, India, China, Japan,* "and, in short, all other Countries, are found to excel, in "proportion, the nearer they approach to this Degree of Lati- "tude. Upon this Principle, *Carolina* and *New-Mexico* on "the North Side of the Equator, as *Chili* and *Rio de la Plata* "on its South Side, must be Countries preferable to any in "all *America;* as being all situated about or near the said 33d "Degree. It is," (continued he) "a Consequence that never

"fails.

"fails. Thus *Andalusia* is the beſt of all the Provinces of "*Spain*, as coming nearer to our 33d Degree: So are, for "the ſame Reaſon, *Languedoc* and *Provence* the beſt in *France*, "and *Naples* and *Sicily* of all the *Italian* Dominions.„ He next ſhews, "That *Carolina* is proper for producing the beſt "*Silk* in the World, as being fitter for the breeding of Silk-"worms, than either *France, Spain*, or *Italy*; as it is alſo for "*Wines, Oils, Cotton, Indico, Wax, Fruits, Cocoa-nuts*, "*Timber, Tar, Flax, Hemp, Rice, Wheat*, &c.„ The Prefacer of the *Engliſh* Tranſlation of the ſaid Memorial alledges, that our great *Sir Iſaac Newton* did, in general, agree to the Principles of this ſame opinion.

What he then foretold concerning *Silk* and *Indico*, has ſince been verified abundantly already in *Carolina*; as have alſo been the excellent Productions of the Wines and Fruits ſince raiſed on the Coaſt of *Caffres*, under the *Dutch* Government of the *Cape of Good Hope*. *Rice* was a little before begun to be raiſed in *Carolina*; and has ſince been ſo far increaſed as to have produced, in ſome Years, from 80,000 to, 104,000 barrels for Exportation; in ſo much, that it grew to be more than could be vended to Advantage; which, it ſeems, was one Occaſion of their falling into *Indico*, now alſo brought to a great Degree of Perfection. The Production of *Rice* at *Carolina* was as accidental as was that of *Sugar* long before at *Barbadoes*, (of which in its Place) and therefore deſerves likewiſe to be commemorated for the Encouragement of ſuch-like future Attempts. It ſeems, the Captain of a Ship from *Madagaſcar*, touching at *Carolina*, in the Reign of the late Queen *Anne*, left, with a Planter there, a ſmall Bag, not exceeding a Peck of Seed-Rice, by way of Experiment: And, ſoon after, Mr. *Du Bois*, then Treaſurer of our *Eaſt-India* Company, ſent thither from hence, for the like Experiment, a Bag of another Sort of Seed-Rice: And, after ſeveral Trials of both thoſe Sorts, the Planters at length found out the true Method of cultivating and dreſſing them to perfection. Their Silk (though more ſlowly) increaſes in Quantity every Year, and is in Quality, on the ſtricteſt Examination, found to be excellent. Their *Pitch* and *Tar* are not hitherto quite ſo good as what is brought from *Sweden*; yet, by a farther Continuance of the Bounties thereon, and on ſome other new Productions, they may probably be brought to Perfection in a reſonable Time.

The

The ſaid Colonel *Purry*, ſome Years after, ſettled, with a Colony of his Country-people, on the River *Savannah*, which parts *Carolina* from *Georgia*; where he has perpetuated his Name, by founding the Town of *Purriſburg*, in which the Poſterity of thoſe *Proteſtant Switzers* remain at this Time.

Our Planters in thoſe and our other Colonies are ſaid to be diligent in procuring and tranſplanting, from *Italy*, *Barbary*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Perſia*, and other Eaſtern Parts, many Kinds of new Seeds, Plants, and Roots: In *Carolina* and *Virginia*, they have found ſeveral excellent originally-native Productions, ſuch as Snake-root, Saſſafras, and, of late Years, alſo the famous Root called *Genſeng*, ſo highly celebrated in *China*.

In *Carolina*, too, they have now got Plenty of *Lemons* and *Oranges*, which are ſaid to ſurpaſs any growing in *Europe*. And the late judicious Mr. *Joſhua Gee*, in his ſmall but excellent Treatiſe, publiſhed *Anno* 1729, (intitled, *The Trade and Navigation of* Great Britain *conſidered*,) aſſures us, that the *Hemp* of *Virginia* has, upon Trial, been found equal, in Goodneſs and Strength, to that of *Ancona* in *Italy*, allowed to exceed any other Hemp in *Europe*.

The fine Provinces of *Virginia* and *Maryland* produce the beſt Tobacco in the World for general Uſe, of which, it is ſaid, above the Value of 600,000 *l. Sterling* is yearly brought to *Europe*, in near 300 Sail of our own Shipping, bringing in a Revenue of about or near 200,000 *l.* by the Cuſtoms on it. About three Fourths of which Tobacco is annually re-exported to other *European* Countries. *Iron*, alſo, is now brought thence in conſiderable Quantities; whereby, in Time, we may ſave above 200,000 *l.* in *ready Money* annually ſent to *Sweden*, for what we may have from our own Fellow-Subjects, *in exchange for* Britiſh *Manufactures*, which *Sweden* neither will nor can take of *us*. For, ſince we have not Cord-wood in *England*, either at a reaſonable Price, or in a ſufficient Quantity, for refining (as it is ſaid) above one third Part of the Iron we uſe, and as *Sweden* may ſome time or other take the like unreaſonable Advantage of us in this Commodity, as they did in the Article of *Tar*, *Anno* 1703, it is therefore ſurely the higheſt Wiſdom, to have all ſuch Commodities intirely from our own Colonies. "It is almoſt impoſ-"ſible," (ſays the ſaid ingenious Mr. *Gee*) "to find out five "ſuch neceſſary Articles as *Hemp*, *Flax*, *Silk*, *Iron* and "*Potaſh*, for carrying on the Manufactures of this Kingdom, "that

"that can be done with ſo little Trouble. — Money ought "to be advanced by the Nation, for the Propagation of ſuch "uſeful Materials. — And, if they come to be raiſed in ſuf- "ficient Quantities in our Plantations, there needs not to be "*one idle Perſon* in *Great Britain* and *Ireland;* though, it is "ſaid, there is *now* near one Million idle, of one Sort or "other. — Not one fourth Part,, (continues he) "of the "Product of our Plantations redounds to the Profit of the "Planters themſelves: For, out of all that comes hither, "they only carry back Cloathing and other Accommodations "for their Families, *all* of the Manufacture or Merchandize "of this Kingdom; and, if they have any Thing to ſpare, it "is laid up here; and their Children are ſent hither for "Education. — There are very few trading or manufacturing "Towns in the Kingdom, but have ſome Dependence on the "Plantation trade.,, — Mr. *Gee* alſo thought, "That *Tea,* "*Coffee,* and *Cochineal* might be produced in *Carolina;* ,, (ſee the Premiums of the truly honourable Society for the encouraging of Arts, Manufactures, and Commerce, *Annis* 1759, 1760, and 1761,) "which with wild Olive-trees, "*Roſin*, *Turpentine*, *Iron-ſtone*, *Boards*, *Lumber*, *Pipe-* "*ſtaves*, *Maſts*, *Yards*, *Hides*, *Tallow*, *Furs*, *Beef*, *Pork*, "*Butter*, *Cheeſe*, *Buck-wheat*, *Oats*, *Barley*, and the "other before-named Productions of our ſeveral Colonies, "is ſuch a Catalogue of moſt excellent and uſeful Merchandize "as cannot eaſily be matched in any *cultivated* Country of "*Chriſtendom. By all which Means together, we might ſave* "*above two Millions annually, which we now pay to foreign* "*Nations, and to our own* (unemployed) *Poor.* ,,

Our *American* Fellow-ſubjects are at length become an immenſe Market for our Woollen, Silk, Linen, and Metallic Manufactures; — for Houſehold-furniture of all Sorts, Apparel, Plate, Pictures, Jewels, Books, Armory, Medicines, ſome Materials for Building, Toys, and other Curioſities.

All which Benefits are greatly enhanced to us, by this moſt important Conſideration, *viz. That the Trade with them is not like* thoſe carried on with *foreign Nations, which undoubtedly may, from various Cauſes, be utterly loſt or quite diverted:* But our ſaid Fellow-ſubjects of *America* do not only look upon *Britain* as their Mother-country, but are moreover abſolutely reſtrained by Law from admitting the Ships of foreign Nations into their Ports, (Streſs of Wheather excepted)

and

and alſo from taking off any foreign Product or Manufactures; ſome few ſtipulated and limited Caſes excepted.

The ſagacious Sir *Joſiah Child*, many Years ſince, obſerved, that every white Man in our ſaid Colonies finds Employment for four times as many at home. Now, ſuppoſing that, ſince his time, there may be 250,000 white Men in all our Colonies, (excluſive of women and Children, and alſo of Negro-Slaves, and including about 12,000 Sailors, employed as well in their own fiſheries as in the coaſting Trade, and in that alſo between the Continent and Iſland-Colonies, in 2000 Veſſels of their own, great and ſmall) then is Employment given to no fewer than *One Million* of our own People at home. And, as all our Commerce with *America*, (including the *Negro-Trade*) may probably employ 1200 Sail more of *our own Britiſh* Shipping, and 20,000 Sailors, it is eaſy to conceive how vaſtly profitable our ſaid Plantations are to *us* in every View; whether by ſetting on Work ſuch immenſe Numbers of our Manufacturers and Artificers of all Kinds, or of Employment of our Sailors, Ship-builders, and all the Trades depending thereon. How tenacious, then, ought we ever to be for the Preſervation of every Foot of Ground of ſuch invaluable poſſeſſions? Yet how ſupine and negligent have we too often formerly been in aſſerting and ſupporting our juſt Claims in that Part of the World? Did not the late Captain *Thomas Coram*, (though a plain Man) in the Year 1735, in a Memorial and Petition to the Privy-Council, clearly (though in his blunt Manner) repreſent the then unſettled and very hazardous Condition of *Nova Scotia*, and its imminent danger from the *French?* which, however, was diſregarded, till after the Peace of *Aix la Chapelle*, when his Plan was purſued; by which Delay, our Enemies had ſo many more Years of Leiſure to make farther Encroachments on a Province, ſince univerſally allowed to be *the important Key of all North America*, not by its Fertility, but Situation; and how much Blood and Treaſure has that fatal Neglect ſince coſt us!

Had not a Number of private Gentlemen, in the Year 1732, (joined by ſome noble Perſons) moſt diſintereſtedly undertaken to aſcertain and ſet out the juſt South Boundaries of *Carolina*, by ſoliciting a Charter for appointing them Truſtees for planting the new Colony of *Georgia*, on the South Extremity of that Province; who can ſay, (or rather who can doubt) whether either *Spain* from *Florida* or *France* from *Miſſiſippi*, might

not, before this Time, have planted and fortified where at present the *British* Ensigns are displayed.

How watchful ought we also to be of our Island of *New-foundland?* For, although, through its natural and incurable Sterility, it is not like ever to be rendered considerable *merely* as a Plantation; yet, for the Sake of its good Ports, and of our great Fishery on its Banks, valued at 300,000 *l. Sterling*, added annually to the national Balance or Stock in our Favour, it is of very great and universally-acknowledged Importance to us.

The same might have been said of the vast Countries within the Streight and Bay of *Hudson*, before we were possessed of *Canada*, where, although (for the like Reason) Plantations may probably never take place, it is nevertheless undoubtedly our solid Interest, notwithstanding our now stipulated Possessions of *Canada*, the best Part of *Louisiana*, and all the Country of *Florida*, to protect our Company's Forts, and their Trade and Boundaries; whither, too, in the Opinion of some intelligent People, a more extensive Commerce with the Savages might be carried on with our coarser Woollen, Metallic, and Linen Manufactures, &c. in exchange for their *Furs*, *Peltry*, *Bed-feathers*, *Whale-bone*, and *Oil;* and that possibly thrice the present Company's capital Stock of little more than 100,000 *l.* might be thereby employed, and perhaps four times the Number of Ships now annually sent thither, (being at most but four Ships *hitherto;*) were another Company to make up a proportionable Capital, with the Sanction of an Act of Parliament, and a Royal Charter, which, doubtless, his Majesty, for the Benefit of Commerce, would be gratiously pleased to grant: For the present *Hudsons-Bay* Company *is not an exclusive one.* Yet as this Company's Forts (such as they are) were erected at their *own* Expence, they have an undoubted Right to exclude all others from taking the Benefit of *their* Protection, without their Leave first obtained: Wherefore, such proposed new Company might erect Forts of their own, in other Parts of the widely-extended Countries round that vast Bay, and might trade with the Savages thereof, without interfering with the present Company: or else might be enabled, for a valuable Consideration, to purchase, and take under its Management, all the present Company's Forts, and also to erect additional ones in other Parts; which by a small Duty on that Commerce, might well be supported, for all his Majesty's Subjects freely to

traffick

traffick in that Bay, and up into the adjoining inland Parts; *private* or *ſeparate* Traders being univerſally known to take more Pains, and to manage more frugally, than Companies can or will ever be able to do!

Such ſeparate Traders, too, in trading far up into the Country Weſtward, might poſſibly be more likely to find the ſo much and ſo long ſought-for *North-weſt* Paſſage to *China* and *Japan*, that the Company is ever like to do. But of that ſuppoſed Paſſage more will be ſaid in its hiſtorical Places. Yet we may here note, that our late kind Neighbours the *French* of *Canada* have formerly encroached on our undoubted Boundaries, by advancing their Frontier-Forts too near to ours on the South Boundaries of the *Hudſon's Bay* Countries, contrary to the Limits ſettled (though too careleſly) in conſequence of the Treaty of *Utrecht;* which Boundaries, it is to be hoped, there will not *now* be any more Occaſion exactly to aſcertain.

The *Bermudas* or *Sommers* Iſles, are ſome of our earlieſt Poſſeſſions in the *Weſtern Seas*, far removed from any Continent or Iſland: They ſcarcely contain above 20,000 Acres of good Land, now almoſt worn out; which maintains about 5000 white People, and ſome Negroes. They have little or nothing of their own Product to export, excepting their fine and ſtrong Cedar-wood, of which they build good Brigantines and light Sloops, to be employed between *North America* and our Sugar-Iſlands; to both which Countries they are certainly uſeful, though in other Reſpects of but ſmall advantage to their Mother-Country, any farther than our ſupplying them with what Manufactures, &c. they want, which ſo far is profitable to *us*, as we take little or nothing from them but what they pick up among our *Sugar* Iſlands. Yet as it would be very dangerous to *Britain* for any other Nation to poſſeſs them, it is therefore doubtleſs our Intereſt to protect them, and to grant them, any reaſonable Encouragement.

Britain claims all the *Bahama* Iſles, ſaid by ſome to be 500 in Number, though many of them are no other than mere Rocks; and although others of them be large and fruitful, yet they are almoſt all uninhabited by us, except the Iſle of *Providence*, where we have two Forts, which our Nation finds their Account in ſupporting, as they prove a Curb to Pyrates in time of Peace, and commodious in time of War, on account of Prizes brought in thither. It has, however,

very little of Product for Exportation, except ſome *Ambergris*, certain fine Timbers, Oranges, and ſome other Fruits, for the Uſe of our Continent-Colonies. And, to ſay the Truth, its greateſt Value to us is its Situation, and that it would be dangerous to be in any other Nation's Hands.

We cannot quite leave the Subject of our Continent-Colonies in *America*, without making ſome farther Obſervations of their Benefits and Importance to the *Britiſh Empire*. The newly-replanted Colony of *Nova Scotia's* great Importance conſiſts, I*ſt*, In its being a Barrier to *New-England*, by its happy Situation; it is now well underſtood to be not only a Bridle againſt *Canada*, (if ever that ſhould again become *French*) but may alſo in effect be ſaid to be a Curb on all other Nations failing in thoſe Seas. II*dly*, It is alſo very happily ſituated for the Fiſhery. III*dly*, it is extremely happy for us, that it is ſo well ſtocked with Timber, Maſts, &c. for the Uſe of the Royal Navy, more eſpecially as it becomes every Year more difficult to be ſupplied therewith from elſewhere.

The four Provinces of *New-England*, more eſpecially thoſe of the *Maſſachuſets-Bay* and *Connecticut*, are of great Benefit to their Mother-Country, by their hitherto ſupplying Maſts, Yards, &c. for the Royal Dock-yards, and Timber for the building of many good Merchant Ships.

New-York, *Penſilvania*, and *New-Jerſey* may be ſaid to be long ſince become indiſpenſably neceſſary to the very Exiſtence of our Sugar-Colonies, by the ſupplying of our ſaid Iſlands with ſalted Fleſh and Fiſh, *Flour*, *Biſcuit*, *Peaſe*, and *Indian Corn*, and Houſe-Timber, and with Horſes for their Sugar-Mills, and alſo Pipe-ſtaves, Lumber, &c. for that End. For all which, the Iſlanders pay them in Sugar, Molaſſes, Rum, and *Spaniſh* Coin; with which, again, thoſe Continent Colonies pay *Great Britain* and *Ireland* for every Thing they want from *us*, and with what they get from the *French*, *Dutch*, and *Spaniſh* Colonies, as alſo with what they get from *Portugal*, *Spain*, *Italy*, (and ſometimes as far as from the *Levant*) whom they ſupply (in their own Shipping) with Fiſh caught in the *American* Seas, and occaſionally likewiſe with their Corn.

The two firſt named Provinces, indeed, are properly *Corn* Colonies, and have already teſtified the great Benefit they may be of, by having ſometimes ſeaſonably ſupplied *Britain* itſelf with Corn in a Scarcity; and, by their future Increaſe, may

may hereafter be much more ſo. Which happy Circumſtance is hitherto *peculiar to us;* there being *as yet* no other *European* Nation whatever that has Colonies in *America* capable of ſupplying their Mother-Country with the Corn, and other excellent Proviſions, which *ours*, in caſe of Neceſſity, can do, as well as with naval Stores; with which laſt-named great Article, it is *now* earneſtly to be hoped, we ſhall, by all poſſible Means, endeavour to ſupply ourſelves *intirely* from them, and our vaſt *new* Acquiſitions on the ſame Continent of *America*, and thereby ſave the immenſe Sums hitherto paid to the *Danes*, *Swedes*, *Poles*, and *Ruſſians*.

What has been already noted of the Product and great Benefits of the Provinces of *Virginia* and *Maryland* is ſufficient to illuſtrate their vaſt importance; and, particularly, the very great Employment they give to our Ships, Mariners, and Manufacturers, and to almoſt all other Branches of Buſineſs.

Since ſeven undivided Eighth Parts of *North and South Carolina* were made *regal* Governments, (*Anno* 1728) they have proſpered exceedingly; more eſpecially *South Carolina;* for whoſe Exports, ſo long ago as the Year 1753, we are indebted to a Treatiſe, in two Octavo Volumes, on our *American* Colonies, publiſhed *Anno* 1757, as follows, *viz.*

Rice	—	—	104,682	Barrels.
Pitch	—	—	5,869	—
Tar	—	—	2,943	—
Turpentine	—	—	759	—
Beef	—	—	416	—
Pork	—	—	1,560	—
Deer-Skins	—	—	460	Hogſheads.
Tanned Leather	—	—	4,196	Hides.
Hides in the Hair		—	1,200	—
Indian Corn	—	—	16,428	Buſhels.
Peaſe	—	—	9,112	—
Shingles	—	—	1,114,000	in Number.
Caſk-Staves		—	206,000	—
Lumber	—	—	395,000	Feet.
Indico (*Anno* 1753)		—	201,924	lb. Weight.
Ditto, (*Anno* 1756) about		—	500,000	—

Beſide a great Number of Live Cattle and Horſes; alſo Cedar-Wood, Cypreſs, Walnut-Plank, Bees-Wax, Myrtle, ſome Raw Silk, and Cotton.

North Carolina exported, *Anno* 1753.

Tar	—	—	61,525	Barrels.
Pitch	—	—	12,055	—
Turpentine	—	—	10,429	—
Indian Corn	—	—	61,580	Bushels.
Pease, about	—	—	10,000	—
Pork, and Beef	—	—	3,300	Barrels.
Tobacco, about	—	—	100	Hogsheads.
Shingles	—	—	2,500,000	in Number.
Lumber	—	—	2,000,647	Feet.
Deer Skins, about		—	30,000	—
Tanned Leather, about		—	1,000	Cwt.

Beside much Wheat, Rice, Bread, Potatoes, Wax, Tallow-Candles, Bacon, Timber, some Cotton, Indico, and Furs.

Lastly, *Georgia*, though still but thinly inhabited, begins to raise some Rice, Indico and Raw Silk, and to export some Corn and Lumber to the *West Indies.* They have also some Trade with the *Indians* for Peltry: All which will naturally increase with the Increase of their Planters. These are very comfortable Accounts for our nation, even at present, and afford a most promising Prospect for future Generations.

With respect to our *West-India*, or *Sugar Isles*, notwithstanding the small Number of their white People, compared to those in our Continent Colonies, we must admit them to be extremely beneficial to *us*, not only as having from *us alone* every Kind of Manufacture, &c. which they and their much more numerous *Negroes* need, but likewise on account of the vast Quantity of the very rich Returns they make *us* in Sugars, Rum, Molasses, Cotton, Ginger, Pimento, Coffee, Drugs of sundry Kinds, and Mahagony-Timber; thereby greatly augmenting his Majesty's Customs, and employing great Numbers of our Ships, Mariners, Manufacturers, &c.

Some have made the annual Value of all the said imported Sugars, &c. from those Isles, to amount to no less than 1,300,000 *l.* Sterling; and that (till the *French* supplanted us in the Re-exportation of our Sugars) we annually re-exported one third Part thereof. But the Exactness of this Computation cannot be absolutely depended on.

Since the Use of *Tea*, *Coffee*, *Chocolate* and *Punch*, and that Made-Wines (or Sweets) have become so general almost all over *Europe*, the Consumption of Sugar has so greatly increased

increaſed, that it is at this Day one of the greateſt mercantile Articles in Commerce. Sugar has been in great Eſtimation in *Europe*, even long before *America* was diſcovered, though in old Times much ſcarcer and dearer than at preſent. As far as appears, none of it was found, or at leaſt known, in *America*, till tranſplanted thither by the *Europeans*. Its Origin was from the inland Continent of *Aſia*, very probably as far eaſt as *China*, where it ſtill greatly abounds. It was from that Continent firſt tranſplanted to *Cyprus*, and thence (according to various Authors) into *Sicily*, where no Footſteps of it now remain; thence it was tranſplanted to the *Madeira* and *Canary* Iſles, and from the latter, by *Portugal*, into *Braſil:* Though others think, that the *Portugueſe*, (before they diſcovered, or at leaſt planted in *Braſil*) being in Poſſeſſion of the Coaſt of *Angola* in *Africa*, where the Sugar-Cane was found ſpontaneouſly to grow, firſt tranſplanted it from *Angola* to *Braſil*. From *Braſil* it was tranſplanted (as we ſhall ſee) firſt to our Iſle of *Barbadoes*, and thence to our other *Weſt-India* Iſles, as from *Braſil* alſo it was carried to the *Spaniſh Weſt-India* Iſles, and alſo to the *Spaniſh* Dominions in *Mexico*, *Peru* and *Chili;* and laſtly, to the *French*, *Dutch* and *Daniſh* Colonies. More of the Hiſtory and Tranſplantations of this moſt univerſal Merchandize will be found in the Progreſs of our Work.

Some think, that all our annual Exports to *America* do amount to above a Million in Value; which may be probable enough, if what Dr. *William Clark* of *Boſton* in *New-England* affirms be true, in his judicious *Obſervations on the Conduct of the* French, *and their Incroachments on our* American *Colonies*, (*Boſton* printed, *London* reprinted, *Anno* 1755) *viz.* "That our annual Exports to *New-England* "alone, amount to 400,000 *l.* Sterling. — And that near "Half the Shipping of *Great Britain* is employed in the "Commerce carried on with her *American* Plantations: "Which Trade alone (he juſtly adds) will, in Time, employ "a much greater Quantity of Shipping than all the preſent "Shipping of *Britain*. Beſide, that this Trade will enable "her with greater Advantage to extend her Commerce with "other Countries.„ Our annual Imports from all our *American* Plantations are conjectured to amount to near thrice the Value of our ſaid Exports, which (contrary to the Nature of our Imports from foreign Nations) conſtitutes a *real Balance* in our Favour at Home, of probably near two Millions *Sterling*

 yearly;

yearly; and our great Re-exportations of our Plantation Goods to foreign Parts, *viz.* of Tobacco, Rice, Sugar, Peltry, &c. is one very great (if not the greateſt) Means of bringing the general annual Balance of Trade to be ſo much in our Favour.

For a conſiderable Time after our firſt planting in *America*, the Undertakers at Home were much diſcouraged, being great Loſers by their yearly Embarkations thither, as appears by the Hiſtories of *Virginia*, *Barbadoes*, *Bermudas*, *&c.* which were indeed, for a long time, mere unprofitable Drains of our People and Subſtance, until, by patience and Perſeverance, they had cleared and planted thoſe Countries, when they gradually became, as above, a real and great Benefit, and the Means of employing, increaſing and enriching their Fellow-ſubjects at home! Inſomuch, that, if for our Sins, any great Calamity ſhould befall us at Home, we may then bleſs God that we have another vaſtly more extenſive Empire to retire to, where our Kindred and Fellow-ſubjects have paved the Way for the comfortable Settlement of many more Millions of People than the whole *Britiſh* Empire now contains. Neither can it be juſtly ſaid to be carrying our Conjectures too far, to obſerve, that a Time may come when *our Continent Colonies* may (by due Encouragement) prove ſo potent and populous, as to be well able to ſuccur their Mother-Country, both with Troops and Shipping, in Caſe of an unequal War with our Enemies, even in *Europe* itſelf; as indeed they very lately and ſucceſsfully have ſuccoured us againſt Encroachments in *America*. A Time too, we hope, is ſtill more likely to come, and leſs remote, when we ſhall no longer depend on the northern Nations of *Europe*, for even any Part of our Naval Stores, on *Italy* and *Turkey* for *Raw Silk*, *Oils*, *&c.* — on *Ruſſia* for *Pot-aſh*, *Hemp*, *Flax*, *&c.* — nor perhaps on any other *European* Country, for Wines, Drugs, or dried Fruits.

In the mean Time, let us ſummarily take a View of the preſent Strength of our Colonies, in Point of the Numbers of their *white* People, as we find them in Dr. *William Douglas's* Account of *New-England*, *Anno* 1751, and in that of the anonymous Author of *an Account of the* European *Settlements in* America, publiſhed for Mr. *Dodſley*, *Anno* 1757, in two Octavo Volumes, *viz.*

New-England's

	White People.
New England's four proper Provinces, contain	354,000
Pensilvania, (the youngest Colony but *Georgia* and *Nova Scotia*) above —	250,000
New York, — —	80,000
Virginia, (the oldest *English* Colony on the Continent) ——— ———	70,000
New Jersey (*much improved since become a Regal Colony*) ——— ———	60,000
Maryland, ——— ———	40,000
And, although those Authors have omitted the Numbers in the now flourishing Provinces of *South* and *North Carolina*, and in *Georgia*, we shall suppose all the three to contain (*viz. North Carolina*, *South Carolina*, and *Georgia*) *at least* *Carolina*, *South Carolina*, and *Georgia*) at least	60,000
Total *white* People on the Continent, —	914,000
Nova Scotia (though not computed) may contain about — —	30,000
And then the Total will be about —	944,000

There is no Colony nor Plantation in *Hudson's Bay*, and only a few Men in their four small ports, remaining there for keeping the Company's Goods, &c. during the Winter Season.

Others, more sanguinely, will needs have all our Continent Colonies to contain about 1,100,000 white Inhabitants, exclusive of our new, and very important Acquisition of *Canada*, which gives us Possession of the entire Trade of the very valuable Furs and Peltry of that vast Continent, which may possibly also contain at least 40,000 white *Canadians*, or *French* Inhabitants; and of *Florida*, and a great Part of *Louisiana*.

In our *West-India*, or Sugar Isles, the *white* People are thus computed, (*viz.* according to the above quoted anonymous Author.

Jamaica, about (though some accounts make them fewer than) — —	20,000
Barbadoes, ——— ———	25,000
St. Christophers, about — —	9,000
Antigua, ——— ———	7,000
Nevis, — — —	5,000
Montserrat, ——— ———	5,000
Total *Whites* in the Sugar Isles,	71,000

 A number

Brought over	71,000
A number (doubtleſs) noway proportioned to the Number of their *Negroes*, the latter being generally *thirteen* or *fourteen* to *one* white Perſon, or, as others, about *ſixteen* to *one* white Man	
Bermudas, ——— ———	5,000
Total white Perſons in all our *American* Iſles,	76,000

Barbuda (though amongſt the Sugar Iſles) has no direct Trade with *Britain*, being purely employed in Huſbandry, and for raiſing of ſome freſh Proviſions for the other Colonies. *Providence* is the only Iſland of all the *Bahamas* which is conſiderably inhabited, upon which, however, (beſide the two ſmall Garriſons) we have but very few white People. And of *Newfoundland* the like may be ſaid. As for our new Acquiſition of the Iſles of *Grenada*, the *Grenadies*, *Tobago*, *St. Vincent*, and *Dominico*, we have good Ground to hope they will all be ſoon planted and cultivated, and will become very uſeful Sugar Iſlands.

It is much wiſhed by ſome, that Means could be found (without endangering our Sovereignty in *America*, and alſo without injuring private Property and Liberty) for uniting all the *Continent Colonies* into one Kind of Government or Conſtitution, ſo as the public Exigencies (in Time of common Danger) might be more effectually ſupplied than hitherto has been the Caſe; they being at preſent extremely various in their internal State. *Firſt*, Some (for Inſtance) are entirely *regal Governments*, as *Georgia*, *South* and *North Carolina*, *Virginia*, *New-York*, *New-Hampſhire*, (being part of what is uſually called *New-England*) and laſtly, *Nova Scotia*; in all which Provinces, both the Government, and alſo the Property of the Lands, or *Dominium directum*, (i. e. of the Quit-rents) are in the Crown, excepting Earl *Granville*'s undivided eighth Part of *Carolina*, and Lord *Fairfax's North-Creek* Diſtrict in *Virginia*. *Secondly*, In others *viz. in Maryland* and *Penſilvania*, both the Government and Property of the Lands are in the original Grantees from the Crown, called *Lords-Proprietors*, who are, the Lord *Baltimore* for the firſt-named Province, and the Deſcendents of *William Penn*, Eſq. for the latter. *Thirdly*, In *Connecticut* and *Rhode Iſland*, (two other of the *New-England* Provinces) both the Government and Property (*i. e.* the Quit-rents) are in the Repreſentatives of the People. *Fourthly*, In the beſt peopled and beſt cultivated

Province

Province of the *Massachusets Bay* more peculiarly called *New England*) the Government is in the Crown, but the Property (*i. e.* the Quit-rents) in the Representatives of the People. *Lastly*, In *New-Jersey*, the Government is *now* also in the Crown, although the Property, (*i. e.* the Quit-rents) remains still in a certain select Body of Proprietors.

Where all these thirteen Provinces uniformly joined under the Crown, (consistently with Safety, and the retaining their absolute Dependence on their Mother Country) they might undoubtedly be rendered much more powerful, and also more beneficial to *us* than they have hitherto been, consisting of no fewer than about a *Million* of *white People*, and perhaps of near half a Million of Negroes and dependent *Indians*; a Number of Subjects superior to that of some entire Kingdoms in *Europe*; possessed too of a Territory extended in Length for at least 1,500 Miles (*Florida* included) along the *Deucaledonian* Ocean, from South-west to North-east, and which, by good Management, might before now have been extended and planted more than perhaps half as many Miles in Breadth, backward towards the *South* or *Indian* Ocean, instead of suffering themselves to be barbarously outraged and ravaged by a Handful of closely-united Enemies. All which is, and must be solely submitted to those in whose Power alone it is to rectify, as far as is possible, whatever has been thus formerly so supinely neglected.

Of all the Follies that any Nation can be guilty of in her Colonies, that of even the least Degree of Restraint (and much more of persecution, for mere religious Differences) is the most destructive to their Prosperity, more especially in such Colonies as ours mostly are, on the Continent, consisting of Persons of all Persuasion of Protestants, who all undoubtedly have an equal and natural Right peaceably to profess what they like best, and freely and openly to enjoy their own Ministry and Modes of Worship: But, with respect to *Roman Catholics*, who have a foreign Head, and often foreign Heards and Inclinations, it were much better they were not at all tolerated there, more especially considering the near Neighbourhood of the *French* and *Spanish* busy Missionaries.

With *Russia*, *Denmark*, *Norway*, *Sweden*, *Prussia*, and most of the *Hanse-Towns* on the *Baltic*, we have undoubtedly a losing Trade; that is to say, the Balance is against us some hundred thousand Pounds yearly; yet from those Parts we must still continue to be supplied with immense Quantities of

Naval

Naval Stores, Ship and Houſe Timber, Pipe-Staves, Copper, Hemp, Flax and their Seeds, Iron, Potaſh, &c. until we become wiſe and happy enough to be ſupplied with every one of theſe Articles from our own *American* Colonies; for although the ſaid northern People cannot take of an equal Value of our *Britiſh* Product and Manufactures, we muſt nevertheleſs ſit down contented with a Trade, which, as we are at preſent circumſtanced, they know we cannot diſpenſe with; moſt of the before-named Articles being abſolutely needful, either for our Navy-Royal, or for our mercantile Shipping, Manufactures, &c.

As for others of the *Hanſeatic* Ports, as *Hamburgh, Bremen, Dantzic, &c.* they, it is true, take of great Quantities of our Woollen Manufactures, Plantation and *Eaſt-India* Goods, (more eſpecially *Hamburgh*) wherewith they ſupply a great Part of *Germany* and *Poland*, yet, on the other Hand, we take off immenſe Quantities of their low-priced Linen of various Sorts, ſuited for our Plantation and *African* Trades, &c. until ſuch Time as our People of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, ſhall be able fully to ſupply us therewith; they alſo ſupply us with Oak-Timber, Pipe-Staves, Battery, &c. It is therefore much to be apprehended, that we are ſtill indebted to them for an annual Balance, though, it is to be hoped, not a very conſiderable one.

But with reſpect to our Trade to the Ports of *Ruſſia*, it is beyond all Queſtion, that the Balance is ſome, hundred thouſand Pounds annually againſt us, for their Naval Stores, Linen, and Linen-Yarn, Flax, Hemp, and their Seeds, Drugs, Bees-wax, Timber, *Ruſſia* Leather, and ſometimes Raw Silk from *Perſia* when in a peaceable State, &c. which we take of them in great Quantities, over and above all the Value of the Woollen Goods, *American* and *Eaſt-India* Merchandize, Whatches, Jewels, wrought Plate, Houſhold Furniture, Hard-ware, and many other Things, which we ſupply them with. Inſtead of our taking off ſuch great Quantities of Linen Yarn, ſpun in *Ruſſia*, *Poland*, and *Germany*, (where Labour is ſaid to be performed ſo cheap at 3 Pence *per* Day) would it not be extremely right in our Legiſlature, as much as poſſible to encourage the ſpinning of it in *Britain* and *Ireland?* As the dreſſing and ſpinning of the Flax gives Foreigners too much of the Manufacture; it is farther to be conſidered, that the *raw* Flax would be imported in our own Shipping; whereas the greateſt Part of their Linen-Yarn is ſaid

to

to be imported in foreign Bottoms; whereby we evidently lye under two very confiderable Difadvantages.

Although the *ten* Provinces, ufually ftiled the *Auftrian Netherlands*, have a much better Country than thofe of *Holland*, yet, they are moft probably never like to recover their ancient Commerce, whilft the *feven* United Provinces can preferve their Independency: The former, therefore, muft be content with what Share they have left of the Woollen and Linen Trade, and in the Lace and Cambrick Manufactures, *Rhenifh* Wines, &c. in moft of which *Britain* deals very confiderably with them; although (in all but the Wines) we hope in Time to be compleatly fupplied from *Scotland* and *Ireland*. At prefent our Trade thither, and efpecially to *French Flanders*, is a lofing one to *us*, though perhaps too much exaggerated by thofe who make the Balance to be *two Millions Sterling* yearly againft us, by their not taking off any proportionable Quantities of our Manufactures, *Eaft-India* and Plantation Goods, with which Merchandize they are moftly fupplied by *France*.

With *Portugal*, *Great Britain* undoubtedly carries on a very advantageous Commerce, by fupplying not only that Kingdom with great Quantities of Woollen-Goods, Hard-ware, Linen, Glafs-ware, Lead, Tin, Corn, and many other Things, for their Home Ufe, but alfo with greater Quantities of flight Woollen and Linen Goods, for their foreign Plantations: Yet, as *France* has of late Years very much encroached on us in the Trade to *Portugal*, with their flight Woollen, Silk, and Linen Stuffs, &c. and as, moreover, we take off fuch vaft Quantities of their Wines and Fruits, more than any other Nation, or indeed than all the other Nations in *Europe* could or would confume, the Balance in our Favour is not (by many knowing Perfons) thought fo confiderable as it has formerly been.

The fame, in a great Meafure, may, we apprehend, be pronounced concerning our Trade to *Spain*, *France* having greatly encroached on us there, and is daily getting Ground of us with her Woollen, Gold and Silver Lace, Silk, Linen, and other Manufactures; although nothing can be clearer, than that it is much more the Intereft of both *Spain* and *Portugal* to encourage us rather than *France*, fince we take off much more of their Wines, Fruits, Drugs, Oils, &c. than *France* has, or can poffibly have Need of; which laft-named Kingdom takes none of their Wines: Infomuch, that probably

France

France, gains a greater Balance from both thoſe Kingdoms than we do; although it muſt, however, be acknowledged, that our Trade with *Spain* is ſtill a gainful one to us.

As none of the States and Cities of *Italy* and *Sicily* have any Plantations or Dominions without the Bounds of the *Mediterranean* Sea, we (as well as *France* and *Holland*) ſupply them with many Articles from the *American* Plantations, and from *Eaſt-India*, as well as with Woollen and Metallic, &c. Manufactures, Tin, Lead, Fiſh, Corn, &c. On the other Hand, we take of them fine Velvets and Brocades, fine *Genoa* Paper, *Florence* and other Wines, Oils, Raw and Thrown Silk, Drugs, Fruits, &c. all or moſt of them inconſiderable Quantities; ſo that perhaps it is not very eaſy to determine on which Side the Balance lies. Yet, as we trade thither almoſt entirely *in ourn own Shipping*, and as many of the moſt conſiderable Articles we have from thence are abſolutely neceſſary for the compleating of our own Manufactures, we muſt therefore allow the Trade to *Italy* and *Sicily* to be, upon the whole, a beneficial one to us.

Although our general and declared Intention in this Work be limited moſtly to the Commercial Affairs of *Chriſtendom alone*, excepting what relates to our *Turkey* or *Levant* Company, we may, however, here briefly and properly remark, that, notwithſtanding the *Grand Seignior's* vaſt Dominions do extend to and comprehend many of the fineſt Countries upon Earth, and which are excellently well adapted to Commerce and Manufactures, *viz.* ancient *Greece*, almoſt all the Countries round the Shores of the *Black Sea*, *Leſſer Aſia*, *Syria*, *Arabia*, *Egypt*, and *Barca*; yet the *Turks* have very little Commerce but what is intirely *paſſive*, brought to their Ports by the Shipping of *Chriſtendom;* which bring back from thence ſundry excellent *raw* Materials for Commerce, *viz. Raw-ſilk, Grogram-Yarn*, Galls, and other Dying-Drugs &c, as alſo Medicinal-Drugs, Coffee; Carpets, &c. in which Trade *we*, the *Dutch*, and the *Venetians*, have ſtill a conſiderable Share; although the *French* from *Marſeilles* have greatly gained Ground on *us*, and all others, of late Years, in that Trade, by the vaſt Quantities of their fine Woollen Cloaths, Stuffs, &c. and their *American* and *Eaſt-India* Goods, carried to *Conſtantinople*, *Smyrna*, *Aleppo*, *Alexandria*, and other Ports. We, however, ſtill carry on a conſiderable Trade thither, both with reſpect to the before-named exported, imported, and other Merchandize: And

although

although, by the immenſe Quantities of Raw-ſilk, &c. which we import from *Turkey*, the Balance may be probably, in a literal Senſe, againſt us, yet the greateſt Part of our ſaid Imports being employed in our own Silk, &c. Manufactures, we can by no Means (upon the whole) call the *Turkey* Trade an unprofitable one to *Great Britain.*

The *Barbary Turks* (or rather *Moors*) are as little addicted to Commerce as the *Levantine Turks:* And as, whilſt we retain our Superiority on the *Mediterranean* Seas, we ſhall generally be able to compel all the *Barbary* piratical States to be at Peace with *us;* it is, therefore, evidently advantageous to *us*, that they remain, as at preſent, at War with other *Chriſtian* Powers, whereby we not only undiſturbedly carry on our own Commerce in thoſe Seas, but are moreover become, in ſome Meaſure, the Carriers of both the Merchandize and Treaſure of other States at Enmity with them. The Product of *Barbary*, *viz. Bees-wax*, Copper, Almonds, Dates, *Marocco* Leather, ſundry Drugs, &c. is now moſtly lodged in Warehouſes at our Port of *Gibraltar*, from whence thoſe Goods are ſaid to be ſent home to *Britain* and *Ireland*, nearly on as eaſy Terms as they were formerly brought directly from the Ports of *Barbary;* yet our Trade thither with our own Manufactures and Product is ſcarcely thought conſiderable enough to bring the Balance in our Favour.

On the Weſt Coaſts of *Africa*, our Commerce is principally for the *Slave* Trade of *Guinea* and *Benin*; where, however, we have neither Colony nor Plantation; but merely a Number of inconſiderable Forts on its Shores, for the Protection of our Trade with its wretched Natives; which indeed would be of little Importance to *us*, were it not for the great and conſtant Supplies we get from thence of *Negro Slaves* for our *American* Plantations, purchaſed intirely with our own *Britiſh*, Product and Manufactures of coarſe Woollen, Linen, Cotton, Iron, Braſs, Copper, Pewter, and Glaſs; alſo Armoury, Tools, Lead, and ſome *Eaſt-India* Articles; with which alſo we purchaſe ſome Gold-duſt, Gums, Ivory, and *Guinea* Pepper; being in effect all the product to be had on that barbarous Coaſt. So far, therefore, this Trade may be ſaid to be beneficial to *us*. The Legiſlature, of late Years, has laid this *African* Trade in ſome Sort open, under certain Regulations; whereby, it is to be hoped, it may in time be brought to flouriſh more than ever before.

With reſpect to the Hiſtory of the general Trade to *Eaſt-India* (more particularly of our own Nation) its former and later Alterations and Fluctuations have taken up more Room in our enſuing Work, than perhaps any other ſingle Branch of our Commerce. We ſhall therefore refer the Reader thither, after juſt remarking, (what many have done before) that, although our own preſent *Eaſt-India* Company enjoys an extenſive Trade, and is ſeemingly in a very proſperous Condition, having many fine Forts and Factories, and a conſiderable territorial Property, in *India;* making alſo at home conſiderable Dividends, and ſuch immenſe Sales too, as were never known in former Times; having alſo, of late Years, adorned even the City of *London* itſelf, not only with a fine Office, but with ſuch ſpacious and numerous Warehouſes as perhaps are ſcarcely equalled in any other Nation: All which are likewiſe their own Property. Yet, with reſpect to *all Europe complexly taken*, it ſeems to be univerſally agreed to be a pernicious Trade; a Trade, daining it of *all* or *moſt* of the Silver which *America* brings to it. If all *Europe*, therefore could be ſuppoſed jointly to agree in dropping the *Eaſt-India* Trade intirely, it would be better for the whole, as well as every particular Nation in it: For, unleſs it be the ſingle, though indeed great, Article of *Saltpetre*, and ſome *Medicinal*, *Dyers*, and *Painters* Drugs, (*all* or *moſt* of which alſo *America* can ſupply) we can hardly recollect any neceſſarily-uſeful Commodity imported from thence, (ſome *Gold* from *China*, *&c.* likewiſe excepted) which does not interfere with the better Manufactures and Product of *Europe*. But as ſuch a general Agreement is not to be expected; and as other *European* Nations would undoubtedly, in our Stead, ſupply all the neighbouring Nations with *Eaſt-India* Merchandize, (ſhould we now at any time drop that Trade) to their own very great Advantage; and as, moreover, by our Laws, all the rich and numerous *Indian* Manufactures, directly interfering with our *Silk*, *Woollen*, and *Linen* ones, muſt neceſſarily be re-exported to foreign Countries; whereby, and by ſundry other Articles ſo exported, it is *now* conjectured, by impartial and very competent Judges, that a conſiderable Balance is anually gained to this Kingdom; which, on Suppoſition of dropping all Commerce to *India* would be loſt to us. Upon this very probable Preſumption, (which is ſubmitted to every Reader's impartial Judgment) and alſo as *Salpetre* is ſo abſolutely neceſſary for our national and private Magazines

for Gun-powder, for which we muſt otherwiſe be at the Mercy of dangerous Rivals; we muſt ever be of Opinion, that our *Eaſt-*India Trade, under its preſent Circumſtances, is really a beneficial one for *Great Britain;* and that, moreover, on the ſame Suppoſition, it is highly for the Nation's as well as for the Company's Intereſt, to ſupport, improve, and increaſe our *Eaſt-India* Commerce as much as is poſſible.

THE ENGLISH MERCHANT. *)

Act. II. Scene VII-XII.

Freeport and Mrs. *Goodman.*

My beſt friend! Welcome to London! When did you arrive from Liſbon?

Free. But laſt night.

Mrs. Good. I hope you have had a pleaſant voyage?

Free. A good trading voyage — I have got money, but I have got the ſpleen too. — Have you any news in town?

Mrs. Good. None at all, Sir.

Free. So much the better. The leſs news, the leſs nonſenſe. — But what ſtrange lady have you had here! I met her as I was coming up: ſhe ruſhed by like a fury, and almoſt ſwept me down ſtairs again with the wind of her hoop-pettticoat.

Mrs. Good. Ah! jealouſy! Jealouſy is a terrible paſſion; eſpecially in a woman's breaſt, Mr. Freeport.

Free. Jealouſy! Why, ſhe is not jealous of you, Mrs. Goodman?

Mrs. Good. No; but of a lodger of mine.

Free. Have you any new lodgers ſince I left you?

Mrs. Good. Two or three, Sir; the laſt arrived but to-day; an elderly gentleman, who will ſee no company.

Free. He's in the right. Three parts in four of mankind are knaves or fools; and the fourth part live by themſelves. — But who are your other lodgers?

Mrs. Good. An author and a lady.

Free. I hate authors. Who is the lady?

Mrs. Good. She calls herſelf Amelia Walton; but I believe that name is not her real one. *Free.*

*) A Comedy, by George Colman. Lond. 1767. 8.

Free. Not her real one! Why, ſure ſhe is a woman of character?

Mrs. Good. A woman of character! She is an angel. She is moſt miſerably poor; and yet haughty to an exceſs.

Free. Pride and poverty! A ſad compoſition, Mrs. Goodman.

Mrs. Good. No, Sir; her pride is one of her greateſt virtues: it conſiſts in depriving herſelf of almoſt all neceſſaries, and concealing it from the world. Tho' every action ſpeaks her to be a woman of birth and education, ſhe lives upon the work of her own hands without murmur or complaint. I make uſe of a thouſand ſtratagems to aſſiſt her againſt her will; I prevail on her to keep the money due for rent for her ſupport, and furniſh her with every thing ſhe wants at half its prime coſt; but if ſhe perceives or ſuſpects theſe little artifices, ſhe takes it almoſt as ill, as if I had attempted to defraud her. In ſhort, Sir, her unſhaken virtue and greatneſs of ſoul under misfortunes, make me conſider her as a prodigy, and often draw tears of pity and admiration from me.

Free. Ah! women's tears lie very near their eyes. I never cried in my life; and yet I can feel too; I can admire, I can eſteem, but what ſignifies whimpering? Hark ye, Mrs. Goodman! This is a very extraordinary account you give of this young woman; you have raiſed my curioſity, and I'll go and ſee this lodger of yours; I am rather out of ſpirits, and it will ſerve to amuſe me.

Mrs. Good. Oh, Sir, you can't ſee her; ſhe neither pays viſits nor receives them, but lives in the moſt retired manner in the world.

Free. So much the better. I love retirement as well as ſhe. Where are her apartments?

Mrs. Good. On this very floor, on the other ſide of the ſtaircaſe.

Free. I'll go and ſee her immediately.

Mrs. Good. Indeed you can't, Sir. It is impoſſible.

Free. Impoſſible! where is the impoſſibility of going into a room? Come along!

Mrs. Good. For heaven's ſake, Mr. Freeport!

Free. P'ſhaw! I have no time to loſe, I have buſineſs half an hour hence.

Mrs. Good. But won't it be rather indelicate, Sir? Let me prepare her firſt!

Free.

Free. Prepare her — With all my heart — But remember that I am a man of buſineſs, Mrs. Goodman, and have no time to waſte in ceremony and compliment. (*Exeunt.*

Amelia's apartment.

Amelia at work, and *Molly.*

Amel. No, Polly! If Lord Falbridge comes again, I am reſolved not to ſee him.

Molly. Indeed, Madam, he loves you above all the world; I am ſure of it; and I verily believe he will run mad, if you don't hear what he has to ſay for himſelf.

Amel. Speak no more of him.

Enter *Mrs. Goodman.*

Mrs. Goodman!

Mrs. Good. Pardon me, Madam! Here is a gentleman of my acquaintance begs you would give him leave to ſpeak with you.

Amel. A gentleman! who is he?

Mrs. Good. His name is Freeport, Madam. He has a few particularities; but he is the beſt-hearted man in the world! Pray let him come in, Madam!

Amel. By no means; you know I receive viſits from nobody.

Enter *Freeport.*

Bleſs me! he's here. This is very extraordinary indeed, Mrs. Goodman.

Free. Don't diſturb yourſelf, young woman; don't diſturb yourſelf!

Molly. Mighty free and eaſy, methinks!

Amel. Excuſe me, Sir; I am not uſed to receive viſits from perſons entirely unknown.

Free. Unknown! There is not a man in all London better known than I am. I am a merchant, my name is Freeport; Freeport of Crutched-Friars; enquire upon 'Change!

Amel. Mrs. Goodman! I never ſaw the gentleman before. I am ſurpriſed at his coming here.

Free. Pooh! Prithee; Mrs. Goodman knows me well enough. (*Mrs.* Goodman *talks apart with* Amelia.) Ay! that's right Mrs. Goodman. Let her know who I am, and tell her to make herſelf eaſy.

Mrs. Good. But the lady does not chuſe we ſhould trouble her, Sir.

Free. Trouble her? I'll give her no trouble; I came to drink a diſh of tea with you; let your maid get it ready, and we will have it here inſtead of your parlour. — In the mean time I will talk with this lady; I have ſomething to ſay to her.

Amel. If you had any buſineſs, Sir —

Free. Buſineſs! I tell you I have very particular buſineſs; ſo ſit down, and let's have the tea.

Mrs. Good. You ſhou'd not have followed me ſo ſoon, Sir.

Free. Pooh, prithee! *Exit Mrs. Goodman.*

Molly. This is the oddeſt man I ever ſaw in my life.

Amel. Well, Sir, as I ſee you are a particular acquaintance of Mrs. Goodman — But pray what are your commands for me, Sir! *(they ſit.*

Free. I'll tell you what, young woman; I am a plain man, and will tell you my mind in an inſtant. I am told that you are one of the beſt women in the world; very virtuous, and vey poor; I like you for that: but they ſay you are exceſſively proud too; now I don't like you for that, Madam.

Molly. Free and eaſy ſtill, I ſee.

Amel. And pray, Sir, who told you ſo?

Free. Mrs. Goodman.

Amel. She has deceived you, Sir; not in regard to my pride, perhaps, for there is a certain right pride which every body, eſpecially women, ought to poſſeſs! and as to virtue, it is no more than my duty; but as to poverty, I diſclaim it; they who want nothing, cannot be ſaid to be poor.

Free. It is no ſuch thing: you don't ſpeak the truth; and that is worſe than being proud. I know very well that you are as poor as Job, that you are in want of common neceſſaries, and don't make a good meal above once in a fortnight.

Molly. My miſtreſs faſt for her health, Sir.

Free. Hold your tongue, huſſy! what, are you proud too?

Molly. Lord, what a ſtrange man!

Free. But however, Madam, proud or not proud, does not ſignify two pence. — Hark ye, young woman! it is a rule with me (as it ought to be with every good Chriſtian) to give a tenth part of my fortune in charity. In the account of my profits there ſtands at preſent the ſum of two thouſand pounds on the credit ſide of my books; ſo that I am

am two hundred pounds in arrear. This I look upon as a debt due from my fortune to your poverty — Yes, your poverty I ſay, ſo never deny it. There's a Bank note for two hundred pounds; and now I am out of your debt. — Where the deuce is this tea, I wonder?

Molly. I never ſaw ſuch a man in my life.

Amel. I don't know that I ever was ſo thoroughly confounded (*apart.*) — Sir! (*to* Freeport.)

Free. Well?

Amel. This noble action has ſurpriſed me ſtill more than your converſation, but you muſt excuſe my refuſal of your kindneſs; for I muſt confeſs, that if I were to accept what you offer, I don't know when I ſhould be able to reſtore it.

Free. Reſtore it! why, who wants you to reſtore it? I never dreamt of reſtitution.

Amel. I feel, I feel your goodneſs to the bottom of my ſoul; but you muſt excuſe me. I have no occaſion for your bounty; take your note, Sir, and beſtow it where it is wanted.

Molly. Lord, Madam! you are ten times ſtranger than the gentleman. — I tell you what, Sir; (*to* Freeport) it does not ſignify talking; we are in the greateſt diſtreſs in the world, and if it had not been for the kindneſs and good-nature of Mrs. Goodman, we might have died by this time. My lady has concealed her diſtreſs from every body that was willing and able to relieve her; you have come to the knowledge of it in ſpite of her teeth; and I hope that you will oblige her, in ſpite of her teeth, to accept of your generous offer.

Amel. No more, my dear Polly; if you would not have me die with ſhame, ſay no more! Return the gentleman his note with my beſt thanks for his kindneſs; tell him, I durſt not accept of it; for when a woman receives preſents from a man, the world will always ſuſpect that ſhe pays for them at the expence of her virtue.

Free. What's that! what does ſhe ſay, child?

Molly. Lord, Sir, I hardly know what ſhe ſays. She ſays, that when a gentleman makes a young lady preſents, he is always ſuppoſed to have a deſign upon her virtue.

Free. Nonſenſe! why ſhou'd ſhe ſuſpect me of an ungenerous deſign, becauſe I do a generous action?

Molly. Do you hear, Madam?

Amel. Yes, I hear; I admire; but I muſt perſiſt in my refuſal: if that ſcandalous fellow Spatter were to hear of this, he would ſtick at ſaying nothing.

Free. Eh! what's that?

Molly. She is afraid you ſhould be taken for her lover, Sir.

Free. I for your lover! not I. I never ſaw you before. I don't love you; ſo make no ſcruples upon that account; I like you well enough, but I don't love you at all; not at all; I tell you. — If you have a mind never to ſee my face any more, good bye t'ye! — You ſhall never ſee me any more. If you like I ſhould come back again, I'll come back again; but I loſe time, I have buſineſs; your ſervant! (*going.*

Amel. Stay, Sir! do not leave me without receiving the ſincereſt acknowledgments of my gratitude and eſteem; but, above all, receive your note again, and do not put me any longer to the bluſh!

Free. The woman is a fool.

Enter *Mrs. Goodman.*

Amel. Come hither, I beſeech you, Mrs. Goodman.

Mrs. Good. Your pleaſure, Madam!

Amel. Here! take this note which that gentleman has given me by miſtake; return it to him, I charge you; aſſure him of my eſteem and admiration; but let him know I need no aſſiſtance, and cannot accept it. (*Exit.*

Manent *Freeport*, &c.

Mrs. Good. Ah! Mr. Freeport! you have been at your old trade. You are always endeavouring to do good actions in ſecret; but the world always finds you out, you ſee.

Molly. Well; I don't believe there are two ſtranger people in England than my miſtreſs, and that gentleman; one ſo ready to part with money; and the other ſo unwilling to receive it; — but don't believe her, Sir, for between friends, ſhe is in very great need of aſſiſtance I aſſure you.

Mrs. Good. Indeed I believe ſo.

Free. Oh, I have no doubt on't, ſo I'll tell you what, Mrs. Goodman; keep the note, and ſupply her wants out of it without her knowledge; and now I think of it, that way is better than t'other.

Molly. I never ſaw ſuch a ſtrange man in my life. (*Exit.*

Mrs. Good. I ſhall obey your kind commands, Sir; poor ſoul! my heart bleeds for her; her virtue and misfortunes touch me to the ſoul.

Free.

Free. I have ſome little feeling for her too; but ſhe is too proud. A fine face, fine figure; well behaved; well bred; and I dare ſay an excellent heart! — But ſhe is too proud; tell her ſo, d'ye hear? tell her ſhe is too proud. I ſhall be too late for my buſineſs — I'll ſee her again ſoon — It is a pity ſhe is ſo proud. (*Exeunt.*

Act. III. Scene VII-X.

Sir William Douglas. Amelia.

Enter *Owen* haſtily.

Ha! Owen! thou art come at a happy moment. I have found my daughter. This is your young miſtreſs, the paragon of her ſex, my dear, my amiable Amelia.

Owen. Oh, Sir, this is no time for congratulation. You are in the moſt imminent danger.

Sir W. What is the matter?

Owen. The officers of government are at this inſtant in the houſe. I ſaw them enter; I heard them ſay they had authority to apprehend ſome ſuſpected perſon, and I ran immediately to inform you of your danger.

Amel. Oh, heaven! My father, what will you do?

Owen. Do not be alarmed, Sir; we are two; we are armed; and we may perhaps be able to make our way through them; I will ſtand by you to the laſt drop of my blood.

Sir W. Thou faithful creature! Stay, Owen; our fears may betray us; till we are ſure we are attacked, let us ſhew no ſigns of oppoſition!

Enter *Molly*, haſtily.

Molly. My dear Miſtreſs! we are ruined; we are undone for ever.

Amel. There are officers of juſtice in the houſe; I have heard it; tell me, tell me this inſtant whom do they ſeek for?

Molly. For you, Madam; for you; they have a warrant to apprehend you, they ſay.

Amel. But they have no warrant to apprehend any body elſe?

Molly. No, Madam; nobody elſe; but I will follow you to the end of the world.

Amel. My dear Polly, I did not mean *you*. Retire, Sir! (*to* Sir William.) For heavens ſake leave me to their mercy; they can have no facts againſt me; my life has been as innocent as unfortunate, and I muſt ſoon be releaſed.

Sir W. No, my child; I will not leave thee.

Molly. My child? This is Sir William Douglas then, at ſure as I am alive!

Sir W. Beſides, retiring at ſuch a time might create ſuſpicion, and incur the danger we would wiſh to avoid.

Molly. They will be in the room in a moment; I think I hear them upon the ſtairs; they would have been here before me, if Mr. Freeport had not come in and ſtopt them.

Sir W. Courage, my dear Amelia!

Amel. Alas, Sir! I have no terrors but for you.

Owen. They are here, Sir.

Molly. Oh, lord! here they are indeed; I am frighted out of my wits.

Enter *Mrs. Goodman*, *Freeport*, and *Officer.*

Free. A warrant to ſeize her? a harmleſs young woman? it is impoſſible.

Officer. Pardon me, Sir; if the young lady goes by the name of Amelia Walton, I have a warrant to apprehend her.

Free. On what account!

Officer. As a dangerous perſon.

Free. Dangerous!

Officer. Yes, Sir; ſuſpected of diſaffection and treaſonable practices.

Amel. I am the unhappy object of your ſearch, Sir; give me leave to know the ſubſtance of the accuſation.

Officier. I cannot tell you particulars, Madam; but information upon oath has been made againſt you, and I am ordered to apprehend you.

Mrs. Good. But you will accept of bail, Sir; I will be bound for all I am worth in the world.

Officer. In theſe caſes, Madam, bail is not uſual; and if ever accepted at all, it is exceſſively high, and given by perſons of very large property, and known character.

Free. Well; my property is large enough, and my character very well known. My name is Freeport.

Officer. I know you very well, Sir.

Free. I'll anſwer for her appearance; I'll be bound in a penalty of five hundred pounds, a thouſand, two thouſand, or what ſum you pleaſe.

Officer.

Officer. And will you enter into the recognifance immediately?

Free. With all my heart, come along! *(going.*

Officer. And are you in earneft, Sir?

Free. Ay, to be fure. Why not?

Officer. Becaufe, Sir, I'll venture to fay there are but few people that place their money on fuch fecurities.

Free. So much the worfe; he who can employ it in doing good, places it on the beft fecurity, and puts it out at the higheft intereft in the world. *(Exit with the* Officer.

Manent *Sir William Douglas,* &c.

Sir W. I can hardly truft my eyes and ears; who is this benevolent gentleman?

Mrs. Good. I don't wonder you are furprifed at Mr. Freeport's manner of proceeding, Sir; but it is his way. He is not a man of compliment; but he does the moft effential fervice in lefs time, than others take in making proteftations.

Molly. Here he is again; heaven reward him!

Re-enter *Freeport.*

Free. So! that matter is difpatched; now to our other affairs! this is a bufy day with me — Look-ye, Sir William; we muft be brief; there is no time to be loft.

Sir W. How! am I betrayed then!

Free. Betrayed! no; but you are difcovered.

Owen. What! my mafter difcovered! *(offers to draw.*

Free. *(to* Owen) Nay, never clap thy hand to thy fword, old trufty! your mafter is in danger, it is true; but not from me, I promife you. Go, and get him a poft-chaife; and let him pack off this inftant; that is the beft way of fhewing your attachment to him at prefent. — Twenty years, Sir William, have not made fo great an alteration in you, but I knew you the moment I faw you.

Mrs. Good. Harbour no diftruft of Mr. Freeport, Sir, he is one of the worthieft men living.

Amel. I know his worthinefs. His behaviour to the officer but this moment, uncommonly generous as it appeared, is not the firft teftimony he has given me to day, of his noble difpofition.

Free. Noble! p'fhaw! nonfenfe!

Sir W. *(to* Freeport) Sir; the kind manner in which you have been pleafed to intereft yourfelf in my affairs, has almoft as much overpowered me, as if you had furprifed me with

hoſtile proceedings. Which way ſhall I thank you for your goodneſs to me and my Amelia?

Free. Don't thank me at all; when you are out of danger, perhaps I may make a propoſal to you, that will not be diſagreeable; at preſent think of nothing but your eſcape; for I ſhould not be ſurpriſed, if they were very ſhortly to make you the ſame compliment, they have paid to Amelia: and in your caſe, which is really a ſerious one, they might not be in the humour to accept of my recogniſance.

Mrs. Good. Mr. Freeport is in the right, Sir; every moment of delay is hazardous; let us prevail upon you to depart immediately! Amelia being wholly innocent, cannot be long detained in cuſtody, and as ſoon as ſhe is releaſed, I will bring her to you, wherever you ſhall appoint.

Free. Ay, ay, you muſt be gone directly, Sir! and as you may want ready money upon the road, take my purſe! (*offering his purſe.*

Sir W. No, thou trueſt friend, I have no need of it. With what wonderful goodneſs have you acted towards me and my unhappy family!

Free. Wonderful! why wonderful? Would not you have done the ſame, if you had been in my place?

Sir W. I hope I ſhould.

Free. Well then, where is the wonder of it? Come, come, let us ſee you make ready for your departure!

Sir W. Thou beſt of men!

Free. Beſt of men? Heaven forbid! I have done no more than my duty by you. I am a man myſelf; and am bound to be a friend to all mankind, you know. (*Exeunt.*

Act. V.

A Hall.

Lord *Falbridge* and *Molly* meeting.

Molly. Oh, my Lord! I am glad to ſee you returned.

L. Fal. Where is your miſtreſs? (*eagerly.*

Molly. In her own chamber.

L. Fal. And where is Sir William Douglas?

Molly. With my miſtreſs.

L. Fal.

L. Fal. And have there been no officers here to apprehend them?

Molly. Officers! No, my Lord. Officers! you frighten me. I was in hopes, by ſeeing your Lordſhip ſo ſoon again, that there were ſome good news for us.

L. Fal. Never was any thing ſo unfortunate. The noble perſons, to whom I meant to make application, were out of town; nor could by any means be ſeen or ſpoken with, till to morrow morning: and to add to my diſtraction, I learnt that a new information had been made, and a new warrant iſſued to apprehend Sir William Douglas and Amelia.

Molly. Oh dear! What can we do then?

L. Fal. Do! I ſhall run mad. Go, my dear Polly, go to your Miſtreſs, and Sir William, and inform them of their danger. Every moment is precious, but perhaps they may yet have time to eſcape.

Molly. I will, my Lord! (*going.*

L. Fal. Stay! (Molly *returns.*) My chariot is at the door; tell them, not to wait for any other carriage, but to get into that? and drive away immediately.

Molly. I will, my Lord. Oh dear! I never was ſo terrified in all my life. (*Exit.*

Lord *Falbridge* alone.

If I can but ſave them now, we may gain time for mediation. Ha! what noiſe? Are the officers coming! Who's here?

Enter *La France,*

La. Fr. Milor, Monſ. le Duc de — —

L. Fal. Sirrah! Villain! You have been the occaſion of all this miſchief. By your careleſſneſs, or treachery, Lady Alton has intercepted my letter to Amelia.

La Fr. Ledy Alton?

L. Fal. Yes, dog; did not I ſend you here this morning with a letter?

La Fr. Oui, Milor.

L. Fal. And did you bring it here, raſcal!

La Fr. Oui, Milor.

L. Fal. No, ſirrah. You did not bring it; the lady never received any letter from me; ſhe told me ſo herſelf; whom did you give it to? (La France *heſitates.*) Speak, ſirrah; or I'll ſhake your ſoul out of your body (*ſhaking him.*

La Fr. I giv it to — —

L. Fal. Who, raſcal?

La Fr. Monſieur Spatter.

L. Fal.

L. Fal. Mr. Spatter?

La Fr. Oui, Milor; he promis to giv it to Mademoiſelle Amelie, vid his own and.

L. Fal. I ſhall ſoon know the truth of that, Sir, for yonder is Mr. Spatter himſelf: run, and tell him I deſire to ſpeak with him!

La Fr. Oui, milor; *ma foi*, I vas very near keſh; I never was in more *vilain embarras* in all my life. (*Exit.*

Lord *Falbridge* alone.

My letter's falling into the hands of that fellow, accounts for every thing. The contents inſtructed him concerning Amelia. What a wretch I am! Deſtined every way to be of prejudice to that virtue, which I am bound to adore.

Re-enter *La France* with *Spatter.*

Spat. Monſieur la France tells me, that your Lordſhip deſires to ſpeak with me; what are your commands, my Lord? (*pertly.*

L. Fal. The eaſy impudence of the raſcal puts me out of all patience. (*to himſelf.*

Spat. My Lord!

L. Fal. The laſt time I ſaw you, Sir, you were rewarded for the good you had done; you muſt expect now to be chaſtiſed for your miſchief.

Spat. Miſchief, my Lord?

L. Fal. Yes, Sir; where is that letter of mine, which La France tells me, he gave you to deliver to a young lady of this houſe?

Spat. Oh the devil! (apart,) Letter, my Lord? (*heſitates.*

L. Fal. Yes, letter, Sir; did not you give it him, La France?

La Fr. Oui, Milor!

Spat. Y—e—e—s, yes, my Lord; I had the letter of Monſieur La France, to be ſure, my Lord; but — but —

L. Fal. But what, ſirrah? give me the letter immediately; and if I find that the ſeal has been broken, I will break every bone in your ſkin.

Spat. For heaven's ſake, my Lord! (*feeling in his pockets.*) I — I — I have not got the letter about me at preſent, my Lord; but if you will give me leave to ſtep to my apartment, I'll bring it you immediately. (*offering to go.*

L. Fal. (*ſtopping him.*) No, no; that will not do, Sir; you ſhall not ſtir, I promiſe you. — Look ye, raſcal! tell

me,

me, what is become of my letter, or I will be the death of you this inſtant. (*drawing.*

Spat. (*kneeling.*) Put up your ſword, my Lord; put up your ſword; and I will tell you every thing in the world. Indeed, I will.

L. Fal. Well, Sir; be quick then! *putting up his ſword.*

Spat. Lady Alton —

L. Fal. Lady Alton! I thought ſo; go on, Sir.

Spat. Lady Alton, my Lord, deſired me to procure her all the intelligence in my power, concerning every thing that paſt between your Lordſhip and Amelia.

L. Fall. Well, Sir; what then?

Spat. A little patience, I entreat your Lordſhip. Accordingly, to oblige her Ladyſhip — one muſt oblige the ladies, you know, my Lord — I did keep a pretty ſharp look-out, I muſt confeſs: and this morning, meeting Monſieur La France, with a letter from your Lordſhip in his charge, I very readily gave him five guineas of her Ladyſhip's bounty-money, to put it into my hands.

La Fr. Oh Diable! me voila perdu! (*aſide.*

L. Fal. How! A bribe, raſcal? (*to La France.*

La Fr. Ah, Milor! (*on his knees.*

Spat. At the ſame price for every letter, he would have ſold a whole mail, my Lord.

La Fr. Ayez pitié de moi! (*holding up his hands.*

L. Fal. Betray the confidence I repoſed in you?

Spat, He offered me the letter of his own accord, my Lord.

La Fr. No ſuch ting, *en verité, Milor!*

Spat. Very true, I can aſſure your Lordſhip.

L. Fal. Well, well; I ſhall chaſtiſe him at my leiſure. At preſent, Sir, do you return me my letter.

Spat. I — I have it not about me, my Lord.

L. Fal. Where is it, raſcal? tell me this inſtant, or —

La Fr. Lédy Altón —

L. Fal. (*to Spatter.*) What! has *ſhe* got it? ſpeak, Sirrah!

Spat. She has indeed, my Lord.

L. Fal. Are not you a couple of villains?

La Fr. Oui, Milor. } *both ſpeak at once.*
Spat. Yes, my Lord! }

L. Fal. (*to Spat.*) But hold, Sir? a word more with you! As you ſeem to be Lady Alton's chief agent, I muſt deſire ſome further information from you.

Spat.

Spat. Any thing in my power, my Lord.

L. Fal. I can account for her knowledge of Amelia by means of my letter: but how did ſhe diſcover Sir William Douglas?

Spat. I told her, my Lord.

L. Fal. But how did you diſcover him yourſelf?

Spat. By liſtening, my Lord.

L. Fal. By liſtening?

Spat. Yes, by liſtening, my Lord! let me but once be about a houſe, and I'll engage to clear it, like a ventilator, my Lord. There is not a door to a ſingle apartment in this houſe, but I have planted my ear at the keyhole.

L. Fal. And where theſe the means, by which you procured your intelligence?

Spat. Yes, my Lord.

L. Fal. Impoſſible.

Spat. Oh dear! nothing ſo eaſy; this is nothing at all, my Lord! I have given an account of the plays in our Journal, for three months together, without being nearer the ſtage than the pit-paſſage; and I have collected the debates of a whole ſeſſion, for the Magazine, only by attending in the lobby.

L. Fal. Precious raſcal! — Ha! who comes here? Lady Alton herſelf again, as I live!

Spat. (*apart.*) The devil ſhe is! I wiſh I was out of the houſe.

Enter Lady *Alton.*

L. Alt. What! ſtill here, my Lord? ſtill witneſſing to your own ſhame, and the juſtice of my reſentment?

L. Fal. Yes, I am ſtill here, Madam; and ſorry to be made a witneſs of your cruelty and meanneſs; of your deſcending to arts, ſo much beneath your rank; and practices, ſo unworthy of your ſex.

L. Alt. You talk in riddles, my Lord!

L. Fal. This gentleman ſhall explain them. Here, Madam! here is the engine of your malice, the inſtrument of your vengeance, your prime miniſter, Mr. Spatter.

L. Alt. What have I to do with Mr. Spatter?

L. Alt. To do miſchief; to intercept letters, and break them open; to overhear private converſations, and betray them; to —

L. Alt. Have you laid any thing of this kind to my charge, Sir? (*to Spatter.*

Spat. I have been obliged to ſpeak the truth, though much againſt my will, indeed, Madam.

L.

L. Alt. The truth! thou father of lies, did ever any truth proceed from thee? What! is his Lordſhip your new patron! A fit Mæcenas for thee, thou ſcandal to the *belles lettres!*

L. Fal. Your rage at this detection is but a freſh conviction of your guilt.

L. Alt. Do not triumph, monſter! you ſhall ſtill feel the ſuperiority I have over you. The object of your wiſhes is no longer under your protection; the officers of the government entered the houſe at the ſame time with myſelf, with a warrant to ſeize both Amelia and her father.

L. Fal. Confuſion! Are not they gone then? La France! villain! run, and bring me word!

La Fr. I go, Milor! (*Exit.*

L. Alt. Do not flatter yourſelf with any hopes; they have not eſcaped; here they are, ſecured in proper hands.

L. Fal. Death and diſtraction! now I am completely miſerable.

Enter Sir *William Douglas*, *Amelia*, *Owen*, and *Officers*.

L. Alt. Yes, your miſery is complete indeed; and ſo ſhall be my revenge. Oh! your ſervant, Madam! (*turning to* Amelia) You now ſee to what a condition your pride and obſtinacy have reduced you. Did not I bid you tremble at the conſequences?

Amel. It was here alone that I was vulnerable (*holding her father's hand.*) Oh, Madam! (*turning to Lady* Alton) by the virtues that ſhould adorn your rank, by the tenderneſs of your ſex, I conjure you, pity my diſtreſs! do but releaſe my father; and there are no conceſſions, however humiliating, which you may not exact from me.

L. Alt. Thoſe conceſſions now come too late, Madam. If I were even inclined to relieve you, at preſent it is not in my power. (*haughtily.*) Lord Falbridge perhaps may have more intereſt. (*with a ſneer.*

L. Fal. Cruel, inſulting woman! (*to Lady* Alton.) Do not alarm yourſelf, my Amelia! — Do not be concerned, Sir! (*to Sir* William.) Your enemies ſhall ſtill be diſappointed. Altho' ignorant of your arrival, I have for ſome time paſt exerted all my intereſt in your favour, and by the mediation of thoſe ſtill more powerful, I do not deſpair of ſucceſs. Your caſe is truly a compaſſionate one; and in that breaſt, from which alone mercy can proceed, thank heaven; there is the greateſt reaſon to expect it.

Sir W. I am obliged to you for your concern, Sir.

L. Fal.

L. Fal. Oh, I owe you all this, and much more--But this is no time to ſpeak of my offences, or repentance.

L. Alt. This is mere trifling. I thought you knew on what occaſion you came hither, Sir. (*to the Officer.*

Officer. Your reproof is too juſt, Madam. I attend you, Sir. (*to Sir* William.

L. Fal. Hold! Let me prevail on you, Sir, (*to the Officer.*) to ſuffer them to remain here till tomorrow morning. I will anſwer for the conſequences.

Officer. Pardon me, my Lord! we ſhould be happy to oblige you; but we muſt diſcharge the duty of our office.

L. Fal. Diſtraction!

Sir W. Come then! we follow you, Sir! Be comforted, my Amelia! for my ſake, be comforted! Wretched as I am, your anxiety ſhocks me more than my own misfortunes.

(*As they are going out, Enter* Freeport.

Free. Heyday! what now! the officers here again! I thought we had ſatisfied you this morning. What is the meaning of all this?

Officer. This will inform you, Sir. (*giving the warrant.*

Free. How's this? Let me ſee! (*reading.*) *This it'to require you---* um um *the bodies of* William Ford *and* Amelia Walton---um---um---*ſuſpected perſons*---um---um---Well, well! I ſee wh[illegible] this is: but you will accept of bail, Sir.

Officer. No, Sir; this caſe is not bailable, and we have already been reprimanded for taking your recogniſance this morning.

Sir W. Thou good man! I ſhall ever retain the moſt lively ſenſe of your behaviour: but your kind endeavours to preſerve the poor remainder of my proſcribed life are in vain. We muſt ſubmit to our deſtiny. (*all going.*

Free. Hold, hold! one word, I beſeech you, Sir! (*to the Officer*) a minute or two will make no difference — Bail then, it ſeems, will not do Sir?

Officer. No, Sir.

Free. Well, well; then I have ſomething here that will perhaps. *feeling in his pocket.*

L. Fal. How!

L. Alt. What does he mean?

Free. No, it is not there. It is in t'other pocket, I believe. Here, Sir William! (*producing a parchment.*) Aſk the gentleman, if *that* will not do. — But firſt of all, read it yourſelf, and let us hear how you like the contents.

Sir

Sir W. What do I ſee! (*opening and peruſing it.*) My pardon! the full and free pardon of my offences! Oh heaven! and is it to you then, to yo", Sir, that I owe all this?—Thus, thus let me ſhew my gratitude to my benefactor!

falling at his feet.

Free. Get up, get up, Sir William! Thank heaven, and the moſt gracious of monarchs. You have very little obligation to me, I promiſe you.

Amel. My father reſtored! Then I am the happieſt of women.

L. Fal. A pardon! I am tranſported.

L. Alt. How's this? a pardon!

Free. Under the great ſeal, Madam.

L. Alt. Confuſion! what! am I baffled at laſt then? Am I diſappointed even of my revenge? — Thou officious fool! (*to Freeport.*) May theſe wretches prove as great a torment to you, as they have been to me! As for thee, (*to Lord* Falbridge) thou perfidious monſter, may thy guilt prove thy puniſhment! May you obtain the unworthy union you deſire! May your wife prove as falſe to you, as you have been to me! May you be followed, like Oreſtes, with the furies of a guilty conſcience; find your error when it is too late; and die in all the horrors of deſpair! (*Exit.*

Free. There goes a woman of quality for you! what little actions! and what a great ſoul!—Ha! Maſter Spatter! where are you going? (*to* Spatter, *who is ſneaking off.*

Spat. Following the Muſe, Sir! (*pointing after Lady* Alton.) But if you have any further commands, or his Lordſhip ſhould have occaſion for me to write his Epithalamium —

L. Fal. Peace, wretch! ſleep in a whole ſkin, and be thankful! I would ſollicit mercy myſelf, and have not leiſure to puniſh you. Be gone, Sir!

Spat. I am obliged to your Lordſhip — This affair will make a good article for the Evening-Poſt to night, however.

(*Aſide, and Exit.*

Sir W. How happy has this reverſe of fortune made me! — But my ſurpriſe is almoſt equal to my joy. May we beg you, Sir, (*to* Freeport) to inform us how your benevolence has effected what ſeems almoſt a miracle in my favour?

Free. In two words then, Sir William, this happy event is chiefly owing to your old friend, the late Lord Brumpton.

Sir W. Lord Brumpton!

Free. Yes; honeſt Owen there told me, that his Lordſhip had been employed in ſolliciting your pardon. Did not you, Owen?

Owen. I did, Sir.

Free. Upon hearing that, and perceiving the danger you were in, I went immediately to the prefent Lord Brumpton; who is a very honeft fellow, and one of the oldeft acquaintance I have in the world. He, at my inftance, immediately made the neceffary application; and guefs how agreeably we were furprifed to hear that the Lord had already been fuccefsful, and that the pardon had been made out, on the very morning of the day his Lordfhip died. Away went I, as faft as a pair of horfes could carry me, to fetch it; and fhould certainly have prevented this laft arreft, if the warrant to apprehend you, as dangerous perfons, had not iffued under your affumed names of William Ford and Amelia Walton, againft whom the information had been laid. But, however, it has only ferved to prevent your running away, when the danger was over, for at prefent, Sir William, thank heaven and his majefty, you are a whole man again; and you have nothing to do but to make a legal appearance, and to plead the pardon I have brought you, to abfolve you from all informations.

L. Fal. Thou honeft excellent man! How happily have you fupplied, what I failed to accomplifh!

Free. Ay, I heard that your Lordfhip had been bufy. — You had more friends at Court than one, Sir William, I promife you.

Sir W. I am overwhelmed with my fudden good fortune, and am poor even in thanks. Teach me, Mr. Freeport, teach me how to make fome acknowledgement for your extraordinary generofity.

Free. I'll tell you what, Sir William. Notwithftanding your daughter's pride, I took a liking to her, the moment I faw her.

L. Fal. Ha! What's this!

Free. What's the matter, my Lord?

L. Fal. Nothing. Go on, Sir!

Free. Why then, to confefs the truth, I am afraid that my benevolence, which you have all been pleafed to praife fo highly, had fome little leaven of felf-intereft in it; and I was defirous to promote Amelia's happinefs more ways than one.

L. Fal. Then I am the verieft wretch that ever exifted. — But take her, Sir! for I muft confefs that you have deferved her by your proceedings; and that I, fool and villain that I was, have forfeited her by mine. (*going.*

Free.

Free. Hold, hold! one word before you go, if you pleaſe, my Lord! You may kill yourſelf for aught I know, but you ſhan't lay your death at my door, I promiſe you, I had a kindneſs for Amelia, I muſt confeſs; but in the courſe of my late negotiation for Sir William, hearing of your Lordſhip's pretenſions, I dropt all thoughts of her. It is a maxim with me, to do good wherever I can, but always to abſtain from doing miſchief.—Now as I can't make the lady happy myſelf, I would fain put her into the hands of thoſe that can. — So, if you would oblige me, Sir William, let me join theſe two young folks together, (*joining their hands*) and do you ſay Amen to it.

Sir W. With all my heart! — You can have no objection, Amelia. (*Amelia burſts into tears.*

L. Fal. How bitterly do thoſe tears reproach me! It ſhall be the whole buſineſs of my future life to atone for them.

Amel. Your actions this day, and your ſolicitude for my father, have redeemed you in my good opinion; and the conſent of Sir William, ſeconded by ſo powerful and advocate as Mr. Freeport, cannot be contended with. Take my hand, my Lord! a virtuous paſſion may inhabit the pureſt breaſt; and I am not aſhamed to confeſs, that I had conceived a partiality for you, till your own conduct turned my heart againſt you; and if my reſentment has given you any pain, when I conſider the occaſion, I muſt own that I cannot repent it.

L. Fal. Mention it no more, my love, I beſeech you! You may juſtly blame your lover, I confeſs; but I will never give you cauſe to complain of your huſband.

Free. I don't believe you will. I give you joy, my Lord! I give you all joy. As for you, Madam, (*to Amelia*) do but ſhew the world that you can bear proſperity, as well as you have ſuſtained the ſhocks of adverſity, and there are few women, who may not wiſh to be an Amelia.

Verzeichniſs
einiger
in dieſem Buche vorkommenden
Wörter und Redensarten,
die
in manchen Wörterbüchern fehlen.

A.

Aborigines, Eingebohrne, erſte Einwohner eines Landes.

Abſentees, wird bloſs von reichen Irländern gebraucht, die ſich lange auſſer ihrem Vaterlande, beſonders in England, aufhalten, und da ihre Einkünfte verzehren.

Ace, I was, within an ace of doing it: Ich war auf dem Punkte, es zu thun.

Alligator, Art Krokodile, Caymán. (vom Spaniſchen El Lagarto, eine Eidexe.)

Animula vagula, S. 201. *Flüchtiges Seelchen*, der Anfang eines lateiniſchen Liedes des Kaiſers Hadrian an ſeine Seele.

An't (ſtatt *and* if *it*) *pleaſe Your Honour.* Mit Ihrer Gnaden Wohlnehmen: — Ein Ausdruck gemeiner Leute gegen ihre Obern, Richter u. dergl.

Architrave, Unterbalken, unterſte Theil eines Hauptgeſimses.

Area, Vorhof, Hofplatz.

Arthur's, die berühmteſte Hoftaverne in London, wo ſtark geſpielt wird.

Aver-eas. S. 138. Ein türkiſches Wort: Konfiſkationen der Güter und Erpreſſungen, die durch ungerechte Prozeſſe über einen Unſchuldigen verhängt werden.

Authoritative injunction. Machtſpruch, entſcheidender Befehl.

A-wel-o' day. Ein Ausruf — Gütiger Himmel! u. dergl. wie *Alack o' day.*

B.

Barrow-Bunter. Ein altes Weib, das Früchte auf einem Schiebkarren feil hat.

Bart, d. i. Baronet.

Battery. Keſſel, und dergleichen Waaren, welche in Meſſings- und Kupferhämmern verfertigt werden.

Beetel S. 240. Ein Kraut, womit in Oſtindien ſtarker Handel getrieben wird. Man vermiſcht es mit *Beetlenut*, oder richtiger *Arek*, (einer Art Nüſſe, die auf einem

Palmbaum wächſt) wie auch mit Muſchelkalk &c. (*Tſchunám*) und käuet es, wie die Matroſen Toback käuen.

Beſide. I was beſide myſelf; Ich war auſſer mir, ſinnlos.

Bills of mortality, Todtenliſten. *Within the Bills of mortality:* Innerhalb der Stadt London, ſo weit die Todten in die Liſten eingetragen werden; denn die Todtenliſten erſtrecken ſich nicht auf alle Häuſer, die man wohl zu den drei Städten von London rechnen mögte.

Bon-ton, (iſt ein franzöſiſches Modewort) Ton der guten Geſellſchaft.

Bounty-money, S. 317. Prämie.

Bucaniers, Amerikaniſche Freibeuter.

Bullion, ungemünzt und unverarbeitet Gold oder Silber.

Bulley-tree. S. 251. Ein jamaikaniſcher Baum; *Sloane* nennt ihn Anona, *Brown* Chryſophyllum. Die Frucht heiſt Starapple, *Sternapfel*, und wird dort ſehr geſchäzt.

Burgh, ſchottiſch; auf engliſch *Borough.*

C.

Cabbage-tree, Kohl-Palmbaum. (franz. Choux palmier.)

Callicoes, Oſtindiſche u. a. baumwollene Zeuge, welche wir *Kattune* nennen, ſowohl ungedruckte weiſſe, als gedruckte. *Cottons*, die verſchiedenen übrigen baumwollenen Zeuge, überhaupt. *Chints*, Zitze, oder die feinſten gemalten Kattune.

Canvas, S. 115. ein Bret, oder Tuch, vor den Gläſern an einer Kutſche, welches, wie dieſe, kann aufgezogen und niedergelaſſen werden.

Capitoul. Eine Obrigkeit in Toulouſe u. ſ. w. wie die Echevins zu Paris. Polizeidirektor.

Caſſava, oder *Manioc.* S. 185. Eine mehligte Wurzel, wovon die Amerikaner Brodt machen: Brodtwurzel.

Caſk-ſtaves, Piepenſtäbe.

to Catch hold of — ſich woran halten.

Charity-ſchools, Freiſchulen.

Chints, Zitze. S. oben.

Chip-hats, Baſthüte fürs Frauenzimmer.

Cit, ein Städter, abgekürzt aus Citizen, wird im Scherz oder auch verächtlich gebraucht.

to clear. S. 172. Reinen Ueberſchuſs geben.

Clerk, 1) Schreiber, 2) Handelsdiener, 3) Küſter.

Coalition, Vereinigung zu einer Maſſe, einem Ganzen.

Coaſting-trade, Küſtenhandel.

Cod-fiſh, Stockfiſch.

Colipever, S. 250. oder *Callipever.* Eine jamaicaniſche Fiſchart, wofür wir keinen Namen haben. Es iſt eine Art Meeräſchen.

Colonization, Anlegung einer Kolonie.

Communibus annis, (iſt lateiniſch)

nisch) Ein Jahr ins andere gerechnet.

Competition, Gleichsetzung, Gemeinmachen.

Consequence. He will give himself consequence with me: Er will sich ein Verdienst um mich erwerben, sich wichtig bei mir machen.

Contractor, Lieferant.

Contiguity. The great contiguity of London: Der grosse Bezirk von London.

Continuous, angränzend.

Coridor, ein schmaler Gang, oder Gallerie, welche zu mehrern Zimmern führet.

Coroners Inquest. Die Untersuchung eines Gerichtsbedienten, dessen Amt ist, wenn todte Körper gefunden werden, zu bestimmen, ob sie natürlich gestorben, oder ermordet sind.

Coroners Jury, zwölf geschworne Männer, welche über die Wahrheit eines angeschuldigten Mordes entscheiden.

Corporation of Bath, Rath und Bürgerschaft von Bath.

Crockery merchant, einer der mit Töpferwaare und Steingut handelt.

Curricombs Pferdestriegel.

to cut out. S. 122. Ausstechen, verdrängen.

Cupola, oder *Dome*, Kuppel. Ein Dach, in Gestalt einer Halbkugel.

Cylinders, Feldschlangen; Art Canonen.

Cymiter, Säbel.

D.

Deucaledonian Ocean, der Theil des Weltmeers zwischen Europa und Nordamerica.

Dissenting meeting-houses, Kapellen der Dissenters, d. i. die sich nicht zur englischen hohen Kirche bekennen.

Dockyards Schifswerfte.

Dome. s. Cupola.

Drum. S. 184. Eine Spielgesellschaft, Assemblee.

Drum mayor. Eben dasselbe, nur grösser und vornehmer.

E.

Edda. S. 194. Eine guineische Pflanze; wird izt auch viel in Amerika gebaut, wo sonderlich die Negern ihre Wurzeln gekocht essen. Heist auch sonst *Eddoes*, (im Plural.)

to Espouse the popular prejudice, das allgemeine Vorurtheil annehmen, eifrig vertheidigen.

Esq. d. i. *Esquire.* So schreiben sich in England eigentlich alle nachgebohrne Kinder des hohen Adels, und jeder, der 500 Pfund jährliche Renten von Landgütern hat. Jezt überhaupt jeder bemittelte feine Mann.

Exit. Exeunt, (ist lateinisch und bei den Engländern nur in Schauspielen üblich.) Er geht ab. Sie gehn ab.

F.

to fare to the full. S. 180. Sich satt essen.

Fleet parſon, ein Prediger, der Schulden wegen in einem Londner Gefängniſſe, *the Fleet*, geſeſſen hat. Dergleichen lieſſen ſich ſonſt zu heimlichenKopulazionen gebrauchen, bis das Parlament es verbot und für ungültig erklärte.

Focus of obſervation. S. 171. Geſichtspunkt der Bemerkung; Ort, wo man geſehen wird.

Fuſtic, Gelbholz.

G.

Gamekeeper, ein Jäger, der das Wild bewacht.

Gauls oder *Galls*, Galläpfel.

the Genii, ein ehemals ſtarck beſuchtes pantomimiſches Schauſpiel, das Garrick auf dem Coventgarden-Theater gab.

Gentilhombre de Camera, (iſt ſpaniſch) Ein Kammerherr.

Gentoos, Eingebohrne, heidniſche Indianer in Hindoſtan.

Genſeng, *Ginſeng*, (lies *Dſjinſeng*,) eine Pflanze, welche in Sſina und der dazu gehörigen Tartarei, (wie auch im engliſchen Nordamerika) wächſt, und dort in hohem Werthe iſt. Man macht Thee von den Blättern, und braucht in Sſina die Wurzel, der man lügenhafte Kräfte zuſchreibt, alsMedizin, zur Stärkung &c.

to go together by the ears, ſich bei die Ohren kriegen.

Good bye t'ye, (d. i. good be with you) gehabt euch wohl.

Groyne, ſo nennen die engliſchen und holländiſchen Schiffer den Hafen *Coruña* in Galicien.

Guaiacum. S. 251. Franzoſenholz, Pockenholz, *Lignum vitæ;* wächſt in Mexico und einigen Antillen. Wird in der Medizin, nebſt dem Gummi davon, gebraucht; das Holz auch von Tiſchlern verarbeitet.

Guinea-grains, Guineiſcher Pfeffer, Paradieskörner (Malagueta) Sind die Körner der Groſskardamomen.

H.

Hatchet; to take up the Hatchet, (eine Redensart der nordamerikaniſchen Wilden) die Streitaxt aufnehmen; den Krieg erklären, zu Felde ziehen.

Heels; to ſet up a good pair of heels, lange Beine machen.

Higledy pigledy, verwirrt durch einander. So wie wir in einem andern Sinne ſagen: holter de polter.

Highdays of health, Goldne Tage der Geſundheit.

Hoyle, hat ein Buch vom Whiſtſpiele geſchrieben.

Hurricanes. S. 181. Eine Art Aſſembleen.

Hygrometer, ein Inſtrument, die Feuchtigkeit oder Trockenheit der Luft zu meſſen.

I.

Incle, 1) Grobes ungebleichtes leinen Garn, 2) Zwirnband davon.

K.

Kaides. S. 138. Türken, die über einige algierische Dorfschaften als Schatzeinnehner gesezt sind.

Keys, S. 125. Die Kaien in London; Strasse an der Themse, wo Schiffe ausgeladen werden.

Kesh. S. 316. verderbt englisch, für *catched*, *caught*, gefangen, ertappt.

L.

Landholder. S. 126. Der ein eignes Landgut besitzt.

Lentiscus. S. 207. Mastixbaum.

Lizard, Vorgebirge in Cornwall, die südlichste Spitze von England.

M.

Madder, Krapp, Färberröthe.

to Make; to make away with ones self, sich selbst umbringen.

Make Land, Land sehen. (ein Schifferwort.)

Manchineal. S. 251. Spanisch *Mancenilla.* Der Manschinellbaum in Amerika, der noch keinen deutschen Namen hat, wächst an der See. Die Frucht, welche einem Apfel gleicht, ist schädlich, aber kein tödtliches Gift.

Manent. S. 310. (ist lateinisch) Es bleiben, (auf dem Theater nehmlich.)

Mangroves. S. 251. Mangelbäume; wachsen in nassen Gegenden in Amerika.

Manicoles and *Troolies.* S. 193. Manicole- und Trulibäume. In Surinam wachsende Bäume, die *Bancroft* so nennt; beim *Fermin* heissen sie *Beyl* und *Boltri.*

Marble-head or *Cape-Ann men.* S. 131. Schiffer, die von diesen zweien, in Neu-England nordlich über Boston liegenden, Vorgebirgen auf den Stockfischfang ausgehen.

Mayordomo de Semana. S. 54. (spanisch) Hofmarschall, der die Woche hat.

Mayordomo Mayor, Oberhofmarschall.

Meetinghouse, gottesdienstliches Versamlungshaus, Kapelle.

Melasses, oder *Molasses*, der braune Sirup oder Saft, welcher von dem rohen oder Puderzucker beim Gerinnen übrig bleibt.

Meleager, ein griechischer Prinz, der in der Mythologie als ein grosser Jäger berühmt ist.

Mess-mate, Tischgesellschafter.

Milliner, eine Modehändlerin, Putzmacherin.

Millwright, Mühlenbau.

Mince-pies, Art Pasteten, mit gehacktem Fleisch, Korinten &c. welche man in Eng-

England gewöhnlich um Weihnachten iſst.
Misconſtruction, Verdrehung, böſe Auslegung.
Mortification, 1) Tödtung, Kreuzigung, 2) Kalter Brand. S. 212.
Muid- oder *Mud-fiſh*. S. 132. Hat keinen deutſchen Namen, falls man ihn nicht, wie einige thun, *Moderfiſch* nennen will.
Musketos, (ſpaniſch Mosquitos) Art ſehr ſchädlicher Mücken, die in den moraſtigen und waldigteu Gegenden von Amerika ſehr häufig ſind.
Myrtle-tree, 1) Mirtenbaum, 2) der Wachsbaum.

N.

Nabobs, Königliche Guvernöre der Provinzen in Hindoſtan, die ſich aber oftmals von dem Groſs-Mogul unabhängig gemacht haben.
Nolens volens. S. 178. (lateiniſch) Er mag wollen oder nicht.
Nantucket. S. 132. Eine kleine unter Maſſachuſetsbai gelegene Inſel. Ihre fleiſſigen Einwohner treiben ſtarken Walfiſchfang und trocknen Stockfiſche.

O.

Ocro. S. 194. Frucht in Geſtalt einer Erbſe, aber von einer andern Art Pflanze, nehmlich dem *eſsbaren Eibiſch*. (Hibiscus eſculentus beim Linné.)
Optics, 1) die mathematiſchen Lehren vom Lichte, 2) Sehröhre und andre Inſtrumente zum ſehen, 3) S. 281. Geſichtswerkzeuge, d. i. Augen.
Orders. S. 169. Säulenordnung.

P.

Paderero, Baſſen, Drehbaſſen. Kleine Schiffkanonen, die auf einem Pfahle beveſtigt ſind, und die man herumdrehen kann. Sie ſtehen insgemein auf dem Hinterverdecke.
Perpetuanos, Perpetuane oder Sempiterne, eine Art dauerhafter Sarſche.
Pier, eine *Mole*, Steindamm, der in die See geht, und einen künſtlichen Hafen macht.
Plantin. S. 194. auch *Muſa*, *Piſang*, *Bananas*. Eine indianiſche Pflanze, welche wie ein Palmbaum aufwächſt, und eine ſehr ſchmackhafte Frucht trägt.
Play. S. 37. *he put me out of my play:* Er machte mich verwirrt, brachte mich aus meiner Faſſung.
Polyagars, kleine Fürſten in Hindoſtan, die den Naboben Tribut geben.
Pope Joan. S. 183. Ein elendes engliſches Kartenſpiel, wie *beſten Bauren*.
to powder upon. (Eine veralte-

altete Redensart.) Herabschieſſen, herabfliegen.

Prime coſt, Einkaufspreis.

Propriety, 1) Eigenthum, Eigenſchaft; 2) S. 172. Schicklichkeit, Anſtand.

Pulpit - thumper, Kanzelpaucker.

Q.

Qualifier. S. 85. Grosthuer.

Quit-rent, oder *White-rent*, Grundzins.

R.

Rajahs, einheimiſche indianiſche Fürſten, die den Moguln, welche Hindoſtan erobert haben, zinsbar ſind.

Redwood. S. 251. Jamaikaniſches rothes Färbeholz. Breſillet.

Regal. S. 293. Der Krone gehörig.

Routs. S. 181. Groſſe hochadliche Aſſemblee.

S.

Salve feſta Dies, (lateiniſch) Sei willkommen feſtlicher Tag!

to Scalp, Das Fell vom Kopfe ſchinden, wie einige nordamerikaniſche Wilden ihren Feinden thun.

Scent oder *Sent*, 1) Geruch, 2) Spur. *to put a wrong Scent* S. 124. Einen irre machen.

Seaſon, a full ſeaſon. S. 51. Eine Brunnenzeit voller Gäſte, volkreiche Brunnenzeit.

Sedan. Sänfte.

Service, Gottesdienſt. *Solemn ſervice*, S. 65. feierliche Seelmeſſe.

Sommelier de Corps, (franz.) Hofkellermeiſter.

Soubah, ſ. *Subah*.

Sportsmanſhip, Waidmannſchaft, Jägerei.

to ſtake. *He ſtakes his Honour*. S. 83. Er ſetzt ſeine Ehre zu Pfande.

Stamina, S. 250. Staubfäden der Blumen.

Sting, ſtechen. *Stung to the quick*, S. 282. Sehr aufgebracht.

Stocking-frame Trade. Handel mit gewebten wollenen Strümpfen.

Stock Jobbing, Grundloſer Handel mit *Stocks*, oder Aktienreuterei.

Subah oder *Soubah*. S. 240. (Eigentlich *Subadâr*) Iſt in Hindoſtan der Name eines Vizekönigs des Groſsmoguls über eine Subah oder Provinz, z. E. Decan, Bengâl &c. Unter ihm ſtehen die Nabobe u. ſ. w.

Swing, ſchwingen. S. 94. *We may ſwing for this:* wir mögten dafür hängen müſſen.

T.

Tape. Weiſſer Zwirnband.

Tide-Harbour, Fluthhafen, d. i. ein Hafen, der nur bei der Fluth genug Waſſer hat.

Topics of Scandal. Stadtkläťſchereien.

To wit, nehmlich. ſ. Viz.

Troolie. S. 193. *Trulibaum*. S. Manicoles.

U.

Vauxhall und *Ranelagh*, zwei öffentliche Luſtgärten bei London.

Victualling Office. Ein Kollegium, welches die Flotte mit Lebensmitteln verſieht. Proviantamt.

Vivite, ait, fugio, (lateiniſch) Genieſst des Lebens, ſagt er, ich fliehe.

Viz (aus dem lateiniſchen *videlicet* verkürzt,) wird geleſen *to wit*, und heiſst: *nämlich folgendes*.

Unpalatable, unſchmackhaft, ungenieſsbar.

Unprecedented Action, unerhörte Handlung.

Upſtart of Fortune, Glückspilz.

Ventre à terre, S. 55. Franzöſiſch, ſo viel als *im ſtärkſten Galop*.

W.

War - Whoop, Kriegsgeſang der Wilden in Nordamerika.

Whole. *You are a whole Man again*. S. 322. Sie ſind wieder ein behaltener Mann.

Wind'em and croſs'em. Ein Jägerwort, die Hunde aufzumuntern.

Wind; to take Wind, laut, ruchtbar werden.

Woodward. Ein berühmter Schauſpieler in London. *Woodwards night*, der Abend, da für ihn Komödie geſpielt wird.

to write. S. 21. I *writ* ſtatt I *wrote;* iſt nicht mehr gebräuchlich.

Y.

Yams, S. 194. oder *Ignames*, *Yeies*, eine guineiſche und amerikaniſche Pflanze, deren Wurzel, ſonderlich von den Negern, geröſtet und gekocht gegeſſen wird.

EIGENTHUM DER STADT AUGSBURG

H. Ebeling

BSB Bayerische StaatsBibliothek
MDZ Münchener DigitalisierungsZentrum Digitale Bibliothek

Ebeling, Christoph Daniel,

Vermischte Aufsätze in englischer Prose hauptsächlich zum Besten derer, welche diese Sprache in Rücksicht auf bürgerliche Geschäfte lernen wollen

Hamburg 1789

Augsburg, Staats- und Stadtbibliothek -- H 615
urn:nbn:de:bvb:12-bsb11251330-4
VD18 12410098-001